BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

BRIT IN T

> Fr Tu

Military Corn

LO1

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

1914—1918

From the Outbreak of War with Turkey to the Taking of Jerusalem

WITH 19 MAPS AND PLANS

RV

EDMUND DANE

Military Carrespondent of the "Westminster Gazette"; Author of "Hacking Through Belgium," "The Battle of the Rivers," "The Battles in Flanders," &c.

HODDER AND STOUGHTON LONDON NEW YORK TORONTO

MCMXVII

Thoug gigantic fronts in during tl Novembe what wo operation campaign value. S darken tl illumined the story steady va serve sav records. advanced expressed but the I himself. Since t

importan a rapid s German both as

PREFACE

Though on a minor scale as compared with the gigantic conflicts on the Western and Eastern main fronts in Europe, the campaigns in the Nearer East during the period covered by the following pages— November, 1914, to January, 1918—not only represent what would in any other war have been considered, operations of the first moment, but afford lessons in campaigning of the greatest interest and the highests value. Some severe reverses sustained by British arms darken this record. On the other hand, it is not less illumined by brilliant military triumphs. Chequered as the story is, its background is consistent devotion and steady valour. In telling it I have had no purpose to serve save truth. The narration is based upon official records. No fact has been glossed, and no statement advanced as fact which is doubtful. Some opinions expressed may be open to debate, as most opinions are, but the proofs are there and the reader may judge for himself. My claim is to have written without bias.

Since the events recorded are of far-reaching political importance, I have thought it advisable to begin with a rapid sketch of the origin, progress and influence of German policy in Turkey. This appeared necessary both as assisting to understand the part played by the

PREFACE

Turkish Empire in the War, and how and why that Empire was dragged into the struggle.

The narrative covers the British campaigns in Gallipoli, the Balkans, Egypt and Mesopotamia. The Expedition to Gallipoli is here dealt with largely from the aspect of its strategy.

E. D.

LONDON, 1918.

GERMAN "

Origin of Gertroubles
the Rus
German
dency—I
railway
sacres a
the Turl
Germany
Egypt—
of Bosni
Balkan
pendence

THE INTRI

Political impution of I—Its ustantine Serbo-G Enver I on Rusthe Wediversing Turks—Empire this ex

y that

The from

. D.

CONTENTS

CHAPTER I

GERMAN "PENETRATION" IN TURKEY

PAGE 1

Origin of Germany's Eastern policy—The Crisis of 1875 and the troubles in the Balkans—Alliance with Austria a sequel of the Russo-Turkish War—The Real Eastern Question—German "Reforms" in Turkey—Their undermining tendency—Financial dependence on Berlin—The Bagdad railway scheme—Its military character—Armenian massacres a disguise of German projects—The remodelling of the Turkish Army—Formation of the Balkan League—Germany and the Young Turk movement—The lure of Egypt—Dethronement of Abdul Hamid and the annexation of Bosnia and Herzegovina by Austria—Outbreak of the Balkan War—Failure of German military changes—Independence of the Turkish Empire sapped.

CHAPTER II

THE INTRIGUES OF AUGUST-NOVEMBER, 1914.

13

Political importance of the Serbo-Greek alliance—The assassination of King George of Greece and the policy of Constantine
—Its unconstitutional character—Relations between Constantine and the German Emperor—Repudiation of the Serbo-Greek treaty—The Goeben and Breslan episode—Enver Pasha and the Germans force the situation—Attacks on Russian Black Sea ports—Effect of German reverses on the West and of Austrian reverses in Russia—Need of a diversion in the Near East—German inducements to the Turks—War declared—Military resources of the Turkish Empire—Advantages and disadvantages to Germany of this extension of the conflict.

CHAPTER III

THE GERMAN-TURKISH OFFENSIVE

Military purpose of German intrigues in India—Their failure—A threefold plan of operations; winter campaign in the Caucasus; advance to Basra; expedition against Egypt—Scheme of Turkish mobilisation—Weak points of Turks' Asiatic Empire—Disasters of the Turkish Caucasus Campaign—Advance on Basra forestalled by the British—Opening of the campaign in Mesopotamia—Its conditions—Turkish reverses—British take Mazera and Kurna—The occupation of Lower Mesopotamia—First attack against Egypt—Effects of British administration—Declaration of a Protectorate—The Turkish concentration at Damascus—Character and strength of the German-Turkish Expedition—Difficulties of the Sinai advance—Battle of Ismailia.

CHAPTER IV

GALLIPOLI: THE NAVAL OPERATIONS

The Entente Powers and Greece—Political mistakes—Reasons advanced for the Gallipoli project—Their strategical unsoundness—Theories concerning naval attack upon land defences—Preliminary bombardment of Dardanelles forts—Turkish counter-preparations—The Allied Fleet—Attack of February 19, 1915—Its results—Arrival of Naval reinforcements—The attack of February 25—Attack of March 5—Renewed on March 7 and 10—Change in the Naval Command—The attack of March 18—Its failure—Causes of the reverse.

CHAPTER V

GALLIPOLI: THE LANDING .

Effects of the Naval failure—Arrival of General Sir Ian Hamilton—His decision endorsed—His plans—Incomplete reconnaissance—The project primarily naval—General Hamilton's difficulties—Hasty dispatch of the British troops—The dispositions for landing round the "Southern toe"—Their defects—Casson's landing at Eski Hissarlik Point—Koe's success at Y Beach—Its tactical importance—Loss of the Y Beach position—An opportunity missed—The landings at X, V and W Beaches—Faults of the operations—Attack of the Royal Fusiliers on Tekke Burnu—The "Lancashire Landing"—Tekke Burnu taken—The struggle at V Beach—A costly scheme—Landing of the Anzacs at Kaba Tepe—Its success.

PAGE 26

46

60

GALLIPOL

Turkish att
Strateg
judgme
the cas
landing
—Disac
May 5divided
reduced
May 6-

MESOPOTA

Indecision as upon—cavalry Its negl Amara—Expedit medical hend or the Tu Caution Nixon—Townsh rash—A for retre

THE SIEGE

Skill of To repulse a Townshe siege—F to take Preparathe first Effects on the successair attac Causes of

CHAPTER VI

PAGE

					b .				
GALLIPOLI	:	THE	BATTLE	FOR	KRITHIA		• '	٠.	84
Theolish atta	-1	2	- 4b- A		and Man	71	A 6		,

Turkish attacks upon the Australian and New Zealand force—Strategical importance of the Kaba Tepe position—Misjudgments in the British dispositions—Adverse effects on the campaign—First move forward from the southern landing places—Errors in tactics—Turkish counter-attacks—Disadvantages of the British position—The battle of May 5—Costliness of frontal assaults—The Anzac force divided—Partial British success before Krithia—Anzacs reduced to the defensive—Review of the campaign to May 6—Its mistakes.

PAGE

KS'

mns

he

ıst

of

on

al

ts k

1-5

al es

18

B

е

60

26

CHAPTER VII

MESOPOTAMIA: THE ADVANCE TO KUT . . . 108

Indecision as to policy in Mesopotamia—Advance inland decided upon—Appointment of Sir John Nixon—His demand for cavalry refused—Nixon's plans—The transport problem—Its neglect by the British Government—The expedition to Amara—"Townshend's Regatta"—Capture of Amara—Expedition to and capture of Nazariyeh—Deficiencies of medical equipment and hardships of the troops—Townshend ordered from Home to move upon Kut—Defeat of the Turks at Kut—Inception of the Bagdad project—Cautions of military authorities disregarded—Pressure upon Nixon—Information of enemy movements withheld—Townshend's inadequate force—His protest—The project rash—Advance to and Battle of Ctesiphon—Necessity for retreat.

CHAPTER VIII

THE SIEGE AND FALL OF KUT 125

Skill of Townshend's retirement from Ctesiphon—Turkish repulse at Umm al Tubal—Opening of the siege of Kut—Townshend's dispositions for defence—Episodes of the siege—Reasons for the stand at Kut—Enemy's first attempt to take Kut by storm—The second, and final, attempt—Preparations for relief—The transport tangle—Haste of the first Relief Expedition—The Turkish blockade works—Effects of transport delays on British operations—Attack on the Turkish positions at Hanna—Causes of its non-success—Townshend's measures for holding out—Enemy air attacks—Second effort at relief; the battle of Es Sinn—Causes of the British reverse—Townshend's Army Order

to the Kut garrison—Supplies begin to fail—The third effort of relief—British victory at Hanna and check at Sanna-i-yat—Indecisive attack at Beit Aiessa—Attempts to reprovision Kut by aeroplane—The episode of Julnar—Townshend receives instructions to surrender—Preparations for capitulation—Fall after 147 days.

PAGE

CHAPTER IX

GALLIPOLI: THE SUMMER CAMPAIGN, 1915

152

Anzacs assigned a secondary rôle—Why a strategical error—Turkish efforts to destroy the Anzacs—Their failure—Enemy scheme for containing the force—Episodes of the fighting—The great Turkish attack of May 18-19—Its crushing defeat—Operations before Achi Baba—Cox's enterprise at Gurkha bluffs—General Hamilton decides upon siege tactics—Their disadvantages—Resumption of British attacks—Battle of June 4—Frontal assault disastrous—General Hunter-Weston suggests new tactics—The battle of June 28—British victory—Success not followed up—Final enemy attempt to crush the Anzacs—Battle of June 29, another heavy Turkish reverse—General Hamilton's demand for reinforcements—Battle of July 12.

GALLIPOLI

THE TRA

Causes of the —The action-

venes-Tekke already

(Augus

retires-

50,000

of the Ismail for the Anzac i

General Mu military hardshij in' thre schemesuspicio withdra 1916—T —No loo

CHAPTER X

175

Final effort in Gallipoli decided upon—British reinforcements—
Change of plan belated—Enemy's increased strength and confidence—Problems of supplies and water—New British dispositions—The weak point of the scheme—Battle before Achi Baba, August 7-9—Birdwood's scheme for the capture of Sari Bair—Its merits—The Anzac "break out"—Capture of the Lone Pine defences—Operations of the Right and Left assaulting columns and advance guards—Brilliant night attacks—Advance up the Sari Bair ravines—The line advanced to below Chanak Bair—Delay in pushing up supports—The landing of the 10th and 11th Divisions at Suvla—Success of the disbarkation—Crisis of the Sari Bair action—A question of reserves—Fatal hesitation—The enemy's bold counter-stroke—Renewed British assault repulsed—Further advance ordered, and the summit gained—and lost—Third attack supported by Baldwin's column—Its late arrival—Advance checked—Enemy's supreme effort of August 10—Baldwin's right turned—His force cut up—Failure of the British plan.

THE SALO

Strategical r
Belated
German
the Ser
Salonica
the begi
Enforcer
Greek I
islands—
offensive
—Politic
Sollum—
tions on

PAGE

152

175

hird

ions

-Its

ved

ail-

nd

ish

eft

ht

ne

air

ılt

1's

s to

CHAPTER XI

PAGE

200

THE	TRAG	EDY	of s	UVLA					•	
	es of the									
	—The vaction—									
	venes-	Oppor	tunitie	s lost-	-Briti	sh at	tack o	of Aug	gust 9	on
	Tekke already									
. (August	10)—	Rapid	increa	se of	enem	y's st	rength	-Att	ack
	of Auguretires—									
	50,000 f	urther	reinfo	rcemer	nts-T	hey a	re ref	used-	-Tran	sfer
	of the									
	or the									

Anzac front-The last fight of the campaign.

CHAPTER XII

General Munro's report on the Gallipoli situation—Glaring military disadvantages—Evacuation resolved upon—Winter hardships of the troops—Birdwood's plan for abandonment in three stages—Suvla first evacuated—Success of the scheme—The withdrawal from the Anzac lines—Turkish suspicions at Achi Baba—French Corps Expéditionnaire withdrawn—Final abandonment on night of January 8, 1916—The enemy outwitted—Episodes of the embarkation—No losses—The Gallipoli enterprise and its results.

CHAPTER XIII

THE SALONICA AND EGYPTIAN CAMPAIGNS OF 1916 234

Strategical reasons for the Allied occupation of Salonica—
Belated attempt to aid Serbia—The rôle of Bulgaria—
German influences at Athens—Proposed Allied junction with the Serbian army impracticable—Organisation of the Salonica position—Repulse of the Bulgarians—Situation at the beginning of 1916—Surrender of the Struma pass—
Enforcement of Greek demobilisation—Formation of a Greek Provisional Government in Macedonia and the islands—Abdication of Constantine—The Allied autumn offensive of 1916—Capture of Kamakchalan and Monastir—Political and strategical consequences—The Senussi of Sollum—His hostility—War declared against him—Operations on the Western Egyptian frontier—Action at Beit

Hussein—Battle of Gebel Medwa—Defeat of the Senussi's forces at Halazin—British advance upon Sollum and reoccupation of that place—The exploit of the Armoured Car Detachment—Close of the Western Egyptian campaign—Renewal of enemy attacks in Sinai—The second German-Turkish Expedition—Battle at Mahemdia.

CHAPTER XIV

THE RECAPTURE OF KUT AND THE TAKING OF

Sir Stanley Maude appointed to the Mesopotamia Command—
Decides upon an offensive—Reasons for it—The preparations—British Staff and Administrative work—Improvement of the River Transport and other Services—Movement of Reinforcements up the Tigris—Enemy's counter-measures—Strength of the defences round Kut—Maude's strategy—British cross the Shatt-el-Hai—Threat to the Turkish right-rear—Bombardment at Sanna-i-yat—Enemy defences east of the Hai captured—Defences astride of the Hai stormed—Assault on the Dahri bend defences—British attacks at Sanna-i-yat—Enemy's dilemma—Capture of the Shumran bend, the key of Kut—Turks evacuate the town—The British pursuit—Destruction of the enemy's river flotilla—British advance to Zana—Advance to Ctesiphon—The Diala reached, March 7, 1917—Change in British tactics—The defence outmanœuvred—Bagdad railway terminus occupied—Crossing of the Diala—Turkish retreat—British

CHAPTER XV

entry into Bagdad (March 11)-Turkish defensive crippled.

Effects of the Turkish reverses—Arab rising in the Yemen—General Maude's energetic measures—Advance up the Tigris—Cobbe's victory at Mushadiya—Advance along the Diala—Bakuba occupied—Marshall's operations on the Euphrates and capture of Feludja—Action on the Jebel Hamrin ridge—Turkish reaction—Combined movement against Deltawa—Maude's successful stratagem—Turks defeated—British victory at Istabulat—Capture of Samarra—The health and efficiency of the army—First operations against Ramadie—Why indecisive—Second Expedition—Battle of Ramadie—Capture of the Turkish force—Cavalry

MESOPOTAMIA CAMPAIGN AFTER THE CAPTURE OF

BAGDAD

vii

dash to Mendali-Results of British administration in

Mesopotamia—Maude's death at Bagdad.

PAGE

256

280

THE CAMPA

Offensive in s Arish—B southern British p Reasons daring-1 -Enemy A success upon Ga Enemy de of the T Turks eve vance to the Nebi S -Turkish city-A b

INDEX

OTT	A WARRING WA	*****
CH	APTER	XVI
CIL	TI TITL	77 1 1

PAGE

300

PAGE

256

si's

and

red

ign an-

OF

veent res / htast

at he he

ish ed.

he he he he ks

ns ry in 280

THE	CAN	PAIGN	IN	SYRIA		•				
	Arish- south Britis Reaso daring —Ene A suc upon Enem of th Turks vance the Ne —Tur	Britis ern Syri h prepa ns for g—Nava emy's cacessful Gaza— y defende to Jaf ebi Sam rkish ga	h adva-Tuaration its de al co-counter surpri-Seizu ces at a safa—Tuwal ricarrison	Mesoporance to rkish de as—Firs feat—Poperation-moves-se—Rapre of the Ruweike from the result of the	o Ra fence t Bri lans of Brit bid de he Tu a and ont— stile f everse rning	fa—Ps in Ps	hysicalestinattack neral conths tack of ments Abu di carretion divide Kubnent t	al fea upon Allenb of pron Bee —Fein Jerwa ied—T at Ku ab—C hroug	atures aste of Gaz y—Tl eparatersheb at assal ridg 'urnin uweilf ritish apturch Heb	of the a—neir cion a—ault e—ad-e of ron

WINTER CA BRITISH OF CAPTUR Novemi NODAL POIN FROM T MAP ILLUSTI "South LANDING O1 GALLIPO THE ANZAC BRITISH LIN SKETCH MAI THE BATTLE OPERATIONS BATTLE BEFO AT THE PLAN OF TI THE BATTLE 1915. THE BATTLI 9-10, 1 BRITISH OPE THE BATTLE PLAN OF GI MAP TO ILI POTAMIA

GENERAL A

MAPS AND PLANS

W C 1014	To face page
WINTER CAMPAIGN IN THE CAUCASUS, 1914	
BRITISH OPERATIONS IN MESOPOTAMIA UP TO THE	
CAPTURE OF MEZERA. INSET: ACTION AT SAHAIN,	
November 17, 1914	
NODAL POINTS IN GALLIPOLI OPEN TO NAVAL ATTACK	
FROM THE ÆGEAN SEA	54
MAP ILLUSTRATING THE NATURAL FEATURES OF THE	
"SOUTHERN TOE" OF GALLIPOLI	66
LANDING OPERATIONS AT THE "SOUTHERN TOE" OF	
GALLIPOLI	72
THE ANZAC LINES AT KABA TEPE	80
BRITISH LINES BEFORE KRITHIA UP TO MAY 7, 1915 .	90
SKETCH MAP OF MESOPOTAMIA	104
THE BATTLE OF CTESIPHON, NOVEMBER 22, 1915 .	120
OPERATIONS FOR THE RELIEF OF KUT	138
BATTLE BEFORE KRITHIA, JUNE 4-6, 1915. Position	
AT THE CLOSE OF THE ACTION	166
PLAN OF TURKISH ATTACKS ON ANZAC LINES .	170
THE BATTLE OF SARI BATE: FIRST PHASE, AUGUST 6-8.	
1915. THE BRITISH ATTACK	
THE BATTLE OF SARI BAIR: SECOND PHASE, AUGUST	
9-10, 1915. THE TURKISH COUNTER-ATTACK .	190
BRITISH OPERATIONS AT SUVLA	202
THE BATTLE OF ISMAIL OGLU, AUGUST 21, 1915	216
PLAN OF GENERAL MAUDE'S OPERATIONS AT KUT .	270
MAP TO ILLUSTRATE BRITISH OPERATIONS IN MESO-	
POTAMIA AFTER THE CAPTURE OF BAGDAD	284
GENERAL ALLENBY'S CAMPAIGN IN PALESTINE	306

Origin of Ge
in the
Turkish
in Turl
on Berl
Armeni
ling of
German
Dethron
Herzego
of Germ
sapped.

EARLY is burg was leave. To Berlin Her Foreign C Bismarck. of any bus inferred the channel of covered as Herr vo. Petershops

Petersburg a Russo-Ge were on the Europe; o Nearer and basis mutual

CHAPTER I

GERMAN "PENETRATION" IN TURKEY

Origin of Germany's Eastern policy—The Crisis of 1875 and the troubles in the Balkans—Alliance with Austria a sequel of the Russo-Turkish War—The Real Eastern Question—German "Reforms" in Turkey—Their undermining tendency—Financial dependence on Berlin—The Bagdad railway scheme—Its military character—Armenian massacres a disguise of German projects—The remodelling of the Turkish Army—Formation of the Balkan League—Germany and the Young Turk movement—The lure of Egypt—Dethronement of Abdul Hamid and the annexation of Bosnia and Herzegovina by Austria—Outbreak of the Balkan War—Failure of German military changes—Independence of the Turkish Empire sapped.

EARLY in 1875 the German Ambassador at St. Petersburg was granted by his Government an absence on leave. To fill his place for the time there was sent from Berlin Herr von Radowitz, a high official of the German Foreign Office, believed to be in the confidence of Bismarck. Intended outwardly to signify the suspension of any business of moment, since it would naturally be inferred that the accredited Ambassador would be the channel of important communications, these changes covered a special and secret mission.

Herr von Radowitz, it is now known, went to St. Petersburg in order to suggest to the Tsar, Alexander II, a Russo-German pact. The main conditions proposed were on the one side a free hand for Germany in Western Europe; on the other a free hand for Russia in the Nearer and Farther East. Each Power was on this basis mutually to support the policy of the other.

Their

from ac

The inte

of Fran

man En

ander r

was fina

could be

be riske

non-succ

was mad

French

By appa

intended

arming f

course of

asserted

Christian

France ha

This incic

ment, wa

bassador

disclosure

Derby, the

Though g

of the de

would not

papers ou

strasse. 1

Crisis of 1

"penetrat

templated

necessary

became ne

principle o

type, found

That c

doubt.

Sweet

It ren

Every precaution was taken to veil this démarche because at that date, in accordance with a plan drawn up by the German General Staff, Bismarck had in contemplation a renewal of the war with France.

The reasons for the intention can be briefly stated. Bismarck had favoured the establishment of the French Republic. He believed that form of government would keep France politically feeble. But following the rapid liquidation of the War Indemnity of 5,000 millions of francs imposed upon France by Prussia under the Treaty of Frankfort in 1871—the indemnity had been paid off in a few months—France had in 1875 recovered so signally from the disasters of the War of 1870-71, that there then came before the Chambers at Paris the project of forming the cadres for a reconstitution of the French Army on a footing of universal conscription.

For Germany the project was of grave omen. On the one hand the plans for a renewed attack upon France had already been drawn out. On the other the French scheme, perfectly within the rights of the Republic as a sovereign State, and necessary in view of the armaments of Germany, infringed no clause of the

Frankfort compact.

As usual, the pretext for the contemplated fresh outbreak of hostilities was remote from the true motive. More important to Germany, however, than a pretext, true or false, was the disposition of Russia and of Great Britain. Neither of those Powers, it was evident, could, without misgiving, view the rise of the German Empire, recently reconstituted under the headship of Prussia, to a situation of unchallengeable military supremacy in Europe, and the less so because of the now known principles of Prussian polity. Towards that result the ruin and depression of France would be a long step.

Germany, as yet without allies, was not prepared for a war which might involve Great Britain and Russia. German diplomacy, therefore, was at this date exerted to foment mutual distrust between Great Britain and Russia in regard alike to affairs in Turkey, Persia and

India.

EAST

émarche 1 drawn had in

French t would ne rapid lions of Treaty paid off ered so '1, that project French

n. On France French epublic of the of the

sh outmotive.
retext,
f Great
could,
impire,
russia,
nacy in
known
ult the
p.
red for

Russia.

exerted

in and

ia and

GERMAN "PENETRATION" IN TURKEY

Their mutual distrust was relied upon to keep them from acting together even in matters of common interest. The interest of each, however, in the strength and security of France as a counterpoise to the ambitions of the German Empire was too palpable to be ignored.

Sweeping aside other considerations, the Tsar Alexander rejected the Radowitz proposal. His rejection was final.

It remained to test British opinion. If Great Britain could be counted upon to stand aside, war might still be risked, though the attitude of Russia remained in doubt. Accordingly, when he had returned after the non-success of his St. Petersburg mission, Radowitz was made the channel of a calculated indiscretion to the French Ambassador at Berlin, M. de Gontaut-Biron. By apparent inadvertence he blurted out the plan of intended aggression. Assuming that France was rearming for the purpose of revenge, Radowitz, in the course of a seemingly informal and private conversation, asserted that neither on political, philosophical, nor Christian grounds could Germany wait to re-attack until France had formed alliances which would aid her scheme. This incident, reported forthwith to the French Government, was without delay disclosed by the French Ambassador in London to the British Government and the disclosure led to a public declaration by the Earl of Derby, then Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs. Though guarded in its terms, the tenour and meaning of the declaration were unmistakable. Great Britain would not stand aside. There were in German newspapers outbursts of anger inspired from the Wilhelmstrasse. None the less, what is now known as "the Crisis of 1875" was averted.

That crisis marks the starting point of German "penetration" in Turkey. Since along the road contemplated Germany dared not then venture, it became necessary to find another avenue of expansion, and it became necessary because such expansion is the vital principle of a militarist empire. In an empire of that type, founded upon the supremacy of force, the prestige

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

of the governing class rests upon success in arms, and upon material prosperity attributed to success in arms.

Intrigue is one form of preparation for war.

Hardly had the commotion caused by the Radowitz incident died down when-in August, 1875-a revolt broke out in the then Turkish provinces of Bosnia and Herzegovina. The outrages which marked the Turkish measures of repression of course brought Russia to the forefront. At Constantinople, Ignatieff; the Russian Ambassador, presented protests, and, these being without avail, passed to threats. Then, on the initiative of Austria, it was proposed, and to all appearance agreed, that the Great Powers in concert should instruct their Ambassadors at Constantinople to draw up a scheme for the reform and government of the revolted provinces, and press its acceptance upon the Divan. Despite protracted discussions at Constantinople and an International Consular Inquiry on the spot, the scheme came to nothing. Whenever an agreement seemed on the point of being reached the German Ambassador announced his dissent.

The cause of this procrastination lay partly in the fact that meanwhile there had taken place in the Turkish capital two of those palace revolutions which have been a feature of the later history and decline of the House of Osman. In the first, Abdul Aziz had been dethroned and Murad V set up. In the second, Murad, after a troubled reign of three months, was in turn deposed in favour of Abdul Hamid. These agitations had been accompanied by a blowing up of the fires of Mussulman fanaticism. In 1876, the Balkan trouble had spread in

an aggravated form to Bulgaria.

The inner meaning of these events, little apprehended at the time, is now beyond doubt. Abdul Hamid ascended the throne as the *protégé* of Germany. It was the policy of Germany, by embroiling Turkey with Russia, to accentuate by that means antagonism between Russia and Great Britain. But while that of itself was an important point, having regard to the designs against France, postponed but not surrendered, another aim

was to Porte. have th German would h Russia would le

At the

influence

awakeni Russo-T for that many ai Bismarc moves. length ai between that time affairs ce The gi

ponded v

In for theocracy the Faith review o College of of seeing medan Sa facto void rule had a Jewish po distinction religious b ment of a rule. On to be the Dealing w a different was sappe the law c

GERMAN "PENETRATION" IN TURKEY

was to gain stronger influence in the counsels of the Porte. Weakened by war, the Turkish Empire would have the more call for aid, diplomatic and financial. Germany was to be the friend in need. That Turkey would be beaten in the now unavoidable conflict with Russia was probable. More than ever Abdul Hamid

would look for support towards Berlin.

At the same time, since no active assertion of Russian influence in the Balkans could take place without awakening the fears and jealousies of Austria, this Russo-Turkish conflict could not fail to pave the way for that offensive and defensive alliance between Germany and Austria which was the true corner-stone of Bismarckian policy. The sequel justified Bismarck's moves. In 1879, when the troops of the Tsar had at length arrived within sight of Constantinople, the alliance between Germany and Austria was concluded. From that time the real independence of Austria in foreign affairs ceased.

The growth of German influence in Turkey corres-

ponded with these beginnings.

In form the Turkish sovereignty constituted a theocracy in which, as Padishah and Commander of the Faithful, the Sultan was all-powerful, subject to the review of his Irades by the Sheik-ul-Islam, and the College of Ulemas. With the College lay the function of seeing that no enactment ran counter to the Mohammedan Sacred Law. Any enactment so doing was ipso facto void. To Mohammedans this check upon arbitrary rule had a practical value. /But it left the Christian and Jewish populations of the Empire without security. A distinction in legal rights based upon difference in religious belief is, however, a cardinal vice in the government of any State. Turkey offered no exception to the rule. On the contrary, this vicious principle had proved to be the parent of a brood of administrative ills. Dealing with Mohammedans and non-Mohammedans on a different footing, the integrity of the Turkish official was sapped by the practice of buying protection which the law denied. By degrees, indeed, the levying of

v with etween

elf was against er aim

EAST

ns, and

n arms.

adowitz

revolt

nia and

Turkish

to the

Russian

without

tive of

agreed,

et their

scheme

ovinces,

Despite

Inter-

scheme

med on

assador

in the

Furkish

re been

House

hroned

after a

osed in

d been

sulman

read in

hended

Hamid

It was

irregular exactions from non-Mohammedans had been recognised by the Government, which, pressed by debt, and by the lack of a steady revenue, left its subordinates to look to such exactions as more reliable than their pay. Under these influences the administration had degenerated into a machinery of extortion, varying in shades of badness from place to place and from time to time, but rooted in a principle fatal to public prosperity.

The existence of this political miasma was the real

Eastern Question.

In what respects did German influence tend to modify this system? In none. German influence tended to aggravate it. For the leverage worked upon was a professed defence of the Turkish point of view against outside protest and interference. It was no purpose of German policy to strengthen the Turkish Empire as such, and cure its ills. The surest means of hastening Turkish decline, and of reducing the Empire first to covert dependence and then to open vassalage was to confirm for the time being the fatal and paralysing political and administrative vice, and, by appealing to fanaticism, to arrest even the possibility of reform. One of the now best known expedients of German "penetration" was thus to seize upon some movement likely to weaken or disintegrate a State it was designed to absorb, and aid that movement by secret subventions, for of the fanatics and adventurers to whom chiefly such eddies of political activity appeal the first are careless and the second unscripulous as to the origin of proffered support. This policy now applied to Turkey had preceded the partition of Poland.

German reforms, so called, there were. They took, however, a different direction. To begin with, there was introduced a spy system and secret police on lines already familiar in Central Europe. This, besides harmonising with the Sultan's temperament, opened the way for the employment of agents provocateurs, so that fanaticism might always be revived by alleged conspiracies to revolt. In the absence of jealousy of Christian or

A sec
Turkish
of finding

of finding and indi the embs being m Bondhole

The t Before the regular a with 540 raised, all second recavalry a men. O and other grand total full military and the second recavalry a men.

The A hammeda distinctio should fu wise, the not have inhabitan faith, the ness.

After deficient long time Turkish f

The so duced on intervals. Hamid sh to feel s dependen assured t

d been debt, dinates

n their in had ring in in time

ne real

pros-

nodify led to was a gainst ose of ire as tening rst to vas to politifanati-One of ation" reaken o, and of the

> took, re was lready nising or the ticism ies to an or

lies of

id the

pport.

ed the

Jewish prosperity and the motive of gain, the common and unofficial Turkish disposition is towards toleration.

A second so-called reform touched finance. The Turkish Government was entertained with the prospect of finding in the German Reichsbank an accommodating and indulgent creditor, and of feeling itself freed from the embarrassments caused by its most reliable revenues being mortgaged to the International Committee of Bondholders.

The third so-called reform concerned the Army. Before the war of 1876–78 with Russia, the Turkish regular army had consisted, on paper, of 170,800 men with 540 guns. In the event of war this force could be raised, also on paper, by the calling out of the first and second redifs (reserves) and by the addition of irregular cavalry and reserve artillery to a total of some 420,000 men. Over and above there were the Bashi-Bazouks, and other irregulars, estimated at 250,000 men. The grand total of 670,000 men, more or less, represented the full military strength of the State.

The Army was recruited exclusively from the Mohammedan population. It was in accord with the general distinction already alluded to that the Faithful alone should fulfil the duty of bearing arms. Indeed, otherwise, the distinction in the civil administration could not have been upheld. Since, however, only part of the inhabitants of the Empire professed the predominant faith, the exclusion was a great source of military weakness.

After the war with Russia the Turkish Army was deficient in numbers and badly equipped, and for a long time it suited the policy of Germany to leave the Turkish forces in that condition.

The so-called reforms here touched upon were introduced one after another at considerable yet calculated intervals. It was advisable at the outset that Abdul Hamid should be made, thanks to the support of Berlin, to feel secure upon his throne. Next the financial dependence of the Turkish Government had so far to be assured that the yoke could not readily be shaken off.

Only then was the question of army reform brought forward.

As preliminary to army reform the scheme was promoted of a railway from Constantinople to Bagdad. The commerce of Asia Minor was chiefly carried on by coastwise traffic. Such overland trade as was still transacted between Asia Minor and the Farther East followed the same routes and was carried on by the same means as had been employed for two thousand years. The Turk had been content to levy tolls upon traffic whether by sea or by land. But increasingly, and more especially since the opening of the Suez Canal, commerce with the Farther East had followed the Red Sea route, alike cheaper and more secure. Once it was pointed out, however, in face of this diversion, the Turk was shrewd enough to perceive that the vast distances and primitive transport of his Asiatic Empire constituted a political and military handicap of the gravest kind, and seeing his dominions in Europe now reduced to narrow bounds, he readily lent an ear to suggestions which, by apparently strengthening his power in Asia, promised further to secure what was left of it in Europe by rendering the Empire as a whole more capable of defence.

For such an undertaking as a trans-continental railway the resources of the Turkish treasury were, of course, hopelessly inadequate, but a German company came forward with an offer to provide the capital. All that was asked of the Turkish Government was a guarantee of the interest on the outlay as the railroad was laid down. In the autumn of 1898 the German Kaiser paid a State visit to Constantinople, sailing up the Dardanelles his yacht Hohenzollern. After that visit the preliminaries were settled without much ado. The concession, embodied in an Imperial firman, provided that for every completed kilometre of line the Porte should pay or make up in interest 14,000 marks per annum. Connected with the line from Pera, the railroad was to run to Bagdad by way of Aleppo, Nisibin, and Mosul. In due course the line was to be carried down from

Bagdad terminus phrates steamers

Comm military purposes ancient t link up bordering and fina needs.

It ver

company backed I was, for projected About the pub advocation North Sedrew att

a tract (

needing a

once mor

soil.
To suc offered.
settlemen different
East of t a standir camp.

The as dependen Balkan I means ne Moltke, i Bismarck the Turk

prought

as pro-Bagdad. l on by as still er East ie same years.

traffic d more nmerce route, pointed rk was es and tuted a kind,

ced to estions n Asia, Europe able of

ailway course. came ll that rantee as laid er paid anelles it the e cond that should nnum. was to

Mosul.

from

Bagdad to Basra. From that place, the proposed terminus on the Persian Gulf, the estuary of the Euphrates is navigable by moderate sized ocean-going steamers.

Commercially the line had few prospects, and the military character of the scheme for all immediate purposes was evident from its trace. Ignoring the ancient trade routes, it was at one and the same time to link up Constantinople with Syria, with the districts bordering upon the Caucasus, with the Persian frontier, and finally with Mesopotamia. These were military needs.

It very speedily became known that the German company which had fathered the undertaking was backed by the Deutsche Bank. The Deutsche Bank was, for all practical purposes, the German Government

projected into the field of finance.

About this time, too, there began to appear in Germany the publications, afterwards numerous and popular, advocating a Greater Germany extending from the North Sea to the Persian Gulf. Writers and speakers drew attention to the potential wealth of Mesopotamia, a tract once as fertile as any on the globe, and only needing a reconstruction of the ancient irrigation works once more to convert its swamps and wastes into fruitful soil.

To such a project in itself no objection could be offered. But a scheme which, as a plan of peaceable settlement, could have aroused no opposition wore a different aspect as a probable extension into the Nearer East of the polity which had made the German people a standing army, and the German Empire an armed

The aspiration of a German Empire comprising as dependent States Austria-Hungary, the Kingdoms of the Balkan Peninsula, and the Turkish Empire was by no means new. That it was believed in by the elder von Moltke, and entertained as ultimately practicable by Bismarck is not in doubt. Exact information regarding the Turkish Empire had long been collected for the

GERM

archives at Berlin. Military possibilities had been gone into in detail. It was in association with them that the project of a main line strategical railway had been mapped out. The surveys, when the project had taken shape, were made by German military engineers. Ostensibly they were employees of the new company, or in the Turkish service; actually they were the pioneers of the German Army.

Diplomatic difficulties were foreseen, for the essentially military character of this railroad could escape no attentive eye. How were the difficulties forestalled? The first of the massacres of Christians in Armenia took place in 1896. Marking at once a defiance of Russia and of the Western Powers, these atrocities stirred up Mussulman fanaticism afresh, and diverted the attention of the world from the real impending

The atrocities, however, had another purpose, and one more important. The railroad project having been launched, the way was cleared for the proposed reorganisation of the Turkish Army on the German model. With many Turks that professed reform remained a subject of some delicacy, certain to arouse suspicions and strong jealousies. But the bad odour into which, by the Armenian massacres, Abdul Hamid had been brought, not alone in Russia and Western Europe, but in the United States, furnished a plausible pretext for urging the apparently best of all means of self-protection —a Turkish army that could defy attack. That the child unborn should be cut out of its mother's womb in Armenia, and hapless and unoffending peasants done to death with every circumstance of ferocity in order to promote a policy and advance an ambition may at the time have appeared incredible, but history has to lay the infamy at the doors of its authors.

In these circumstances the plan of army reform was accepted, and under the cloak of Pan-Islamism the most decisive step so far was taken to destroy Turkish independence. At the same time, the Armenian troubles helped to keep the army reform proposal as much as

possible in nople of (Commission tion.

Hithert based on Russia th ments. I fifteen, for and more some were The first the Europe certain st were Condivisions, division, employed,

After t step by st acteristic inspection was equall was set to him, it w as a fight As time w to the 1 branch of into their Turkish G had seen was an a tactics.

Seeming There were The Balka of the Tu armaments had misg

GERMAN "PENETRATION" IN TURKEY

EAST

gone

that

been

taken

neers.

pany,

neers

tially

e no lled?

nenia

ce of cities

erted

iding

done

been

gani-

odel.

cions hich,

been

but

t for

the

ib in ie to

er to

t the

lay

was

most kish

ibles

h as

possible in the background. The arrival at Constantinople of General Liman von Sandars at the head of a Commission of German officers attracted little attention.

Hitherto the Turkish Army had consisted of corps based on the various vilayets. Before the war with Russia there were twenty of these provincial governments. They had been reduced owing to that war to fifteen, for the Empire had lost a fourth of its territory, and more than a fourth of its population. Of the corps some were fit for service in the field; most were not. The first procedure therefore was to create divisions on the European plan, and to group these bodies round certain strategical bases of supply. The chief bases were Constantinople (four divisions), Damascus (four divisions), Erzingnan (three divisions), Mosul (one division), Bagdad (one division), plus the two divisions employed, one in Arabia and the other at Adrianople.

After this initiation the army administration was step by step mapped out on German lines. That characteristic feature of the German system, periodical inspections, was introduced. The syllabus of training was equally German, and although the Turkish conscript was set to learn a number of things entirely foreign to him, it was apparently never doubted that he would as a fighting man be raised in the scale of efficiency. As time went on the number of German officers attached to the Turkish Army increased. The engineering branch of the service indeed passed almost entirely into their hands. In these matters the adviser of the Turkish Government was General von der Goltz. He had seen service in the war of 1870-71, and he was an accepted German authority on strategy and tactics.

Seemingly the policy of penetration was prospering. There were, nevertheless, two disturbing symptoms. The Balkan States, concluding that this reorganisation of the Turkish Army boded ill, both increased their armaments and formed a League. Next, many Turks had misgivings. Among them was Abdul Hamid

GERM.
Turk and

ment the

himself. He had begun to find German control irksome. On their part the German Government equally distrusted the Sultan, for it is the mark of a policy without scruple to discard its instruments when they have served its turn. "Abdul the Damned" had assisted the policy of penetration; he was not to be allowed to stand in the way of it. The "Young Turk" movement, therefore, began to be heard of, and Abdul and the "Old Turks" became the objects of an alleged revolutionary agitation. Two then obscure officials in the Turkish service at Salonica, Enver and Talaat, adventurers with a talent for intrigue, set on foot the Committee of Union and Progress. The Committee successfully defied Abdul and his secret police, because his secret police were in this matter not trustworthy. German policy played

the one party off against the other.

The chief grievance held up by the Young Turks was the British occupation of Egypt, which, since 1882, had reached a prosperity in glaring contrast with any other part of the nominal Turkish Empire. This, it was asserted, lowered the prestige of Islam. The cause of the contrast unquestionably was that under British administration the fatal vice of Turkish rule had given place to legal equality. The fellah in Egypt now tilled his fields in the assurance that he would reap the fruits of his labours. But, instead of ascribing the prosperity of Egypt to its true cause, the Young Turks looked only to the millions sterling a year which they saw might. for a time, be wrung out of the country, and considered themselves robbed by the British occupation. party's watchword, "national efficiency," derived point from this example of infidel aggression. Not only was it worked upon as a grievance against the Sultan and the Old Turks; it very usefully withdrew attention from other examples of infidel aggression much more grave.

In Egypt meanwhile intrigue was at work promoting a so-called National Party, whose professed aim was independence. Thus at Constantinople the plot was to hand Egypt back to the Turks; at Cairo to expel the sympathis Constantin their respe An ever was the co

was the co. Among of from misc interest of of taxatio public wo barrage. setback.

It was a so-called I movement ments the nople a r from the t in defiance Herzegovi

Enver, cre of bey. they were

So far developmed 1910, being was confided of the new would be a failure. The rule in Europe decisively of the Transimilate because so without programmed to the confidence of the transimilate because so without programmed to the confidence of the transimilate because so without programmed to the confidence of the con

EAST

some.

usted

cruple

ed its

policy

nd in

there-

" Old

onary

rkish

with

Jnion

bdul

ere in

layed

s was

had

was

other

se of

ritish

given

tilled

ruits

erity

only

ight,

lered

The

point

was

and

ition

nore

ting

was

is to

the

Turk and every other intruder. With the Cairo movement the Khedive, Abbas Hilmi, was an undisguised sympathiser. He at Cairo and the Young Turks at Constantinople looked equally to Berlin for support of their respective though conflicting aims.

An event which disconcerted this web of deception was the conclusion, in 1904, of the Anglo-French Entente. Among other effects it freed the Egyptian treasury from mischievous restrictions imposed in the supposed interest of the bondholders, and both allowed of relief of taxation and of the application of larger funds to public works, including the completion of the Nile barrage. For German designs the event was a sharp setback.

It was utilised, however, in Turkey to popularise the so-called Party of Union and Progress, and in 1908 that movement was at last judged to be ripe. Two developments then occurred in rapid succession. At Constantinople a rising of Young Turks drove Abdul Hamid from the throne. At Vienna the Austrian Government, in defiance of the Treaty of Berlin, annexed Bosnia and Herzegovina.

From this time the nominal rulers of Turkey were Enver, created a pasha, and Talaat, raised to the dignity of bey. Owing their elevation to German influence,

they were from that very fact its tools.

So far as the Balkan League was concerned these developments changed suspicion into certainty, and in 1910, being then ready, the League attacked. There was confidence at Constantinople among the adherents of the new regime that the Germanised Turkish army would be readily victorious. That army turned out a failure. Not in all the five hundred years of Turkish rule in Europe had the forces of the Empire been more decisively beaten. The good native fighting qualities of the Turk were hampered by methods he had not assimilated. Germany could not avert this defeat because she could not openly appear in the struggle without precipitating a European conflict. For that her Government were not yet ready.

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

The effects of the policy of penetration were now seen. So thoroughly had the strength of the Turkish Empire been sapped that after this disastrous Balkan War it could no longer stand alone. Germany controlled its finance, its railroads, its army, and its Government. The Great War was not opened until the foundations, at any rate, of a Greater Germany, were believed to have been laid.

THE

Political important King German Goeben at the situs German — Need to the T Empire— extension

GERMAN already ou Turkey w conflict, as on the one on the oth

The first was concer

Constant Greece aft Salonica at murdered only of thalliance. Ferdinand, title of Ts Turkey an the Wester sought by EAST

war led its ment. ations, red to

CHAPTER II

THE INTRIGUES OF AUGUST-NOVEMBER, 1914

Political importance of the Serbo-Greek alliance—The assassination of King George of Greece and the policy of Constantine—Its unconstitutional character—Relations between Constantine and the German Emperor—Repudiation of the Serbo-Greek treaty—The Goeben and Breslau episode—Enver Pasha and the Germans force the situation—Attacks on Russian Black Sea ports—Effect of German reverses on the West and of Austrian reverses in Russia—Need of a diversion in the Near East—German inducements to the Turks—War declared—Military resources of the Turkish Empire—Advantages and disadvantages to Germany of this extension of the conflict.

GERMAN influence in Turkey having taken the course already outlined, what were the circumstances in which Turkey was, in November, 1914, dragged into the conflict, as it then was, between Germany and Austria on the one side, and France, Great Britain and Russia on the other?

The first step on the part of the German Government was concerned with the attitude of Greece.

Constantine succeeded his father on the throne of Greece after King George had been assassinated at Salonica at the close of the second Balkan War. The murdered King had been one of the promoters, not only of the Balkan League, but of the Serbo-Greek alliance. Having little confidence in the policy of Ferdinand, King of Bulgaria, who had assumed the title of Tsar, and distrusting alike the new régime in Turkey and the designs of Austria, the two States of the Western Balkans at the end of the first Balkan War sought by an alliance mutually to assure themselves.

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

But, though in the second Balkan War they had successfully upheld their territorial claims against those of Bulgaria, it was clear that their alliance directly traversed both the aspirations of Austria to control the whole eastern coast of the Adriatic and the still larger ambitions of the German Government. The second Balkan War had proved, too, that Greece, Serbia and Montenegro, acting in concert, formed a formidable Power, and it was evident that if the Serbo-Greek alliance was by effluxion of time allowed to solidify, a heavy bar would be placed, not merely in the way of the expansion of the Central Empires to the south-east, but in the way of that maritime control of the Levant to which they aspired. On the other hand, since if Greece could be detached from this combination the balance would be entirely altered, it was of manifest importance that the Hellenic kingdom should become subservient to German-Austrian aims.

That the assassination of King George was a political crime, and the first blow aimed at the Serbo-Greek compact, hardly admits of doubt, for if the origin of a crime is to be sought for in its motive, an established principle of investigation in matters criminal, the interest of the Central Powers, and especially that of the Government of Germany, in the speedy "removal" of King George is beyond debate. No other interest was or could be promoted by it. The motive of the blow was the more manifest because Constantine, professionally educated in the German Army, was both an out-and-out admirer of the Prussian military system. and had had bestowed upon him, a distinction of which he was vain, the honorary rank of a German Field-Marshal. Not least, he had married the Princess Sophia, sister of the German Kaiser. To the Kaiser and the German Government his personal views were known to run directly counter to his father's policy.

Since, too, he was a man of at best but ordinary endowments, the influence of the Court at Athens after his accession was, under the outward mask of pacific isolation, consistently exerted towards the furtherance INTRI

of German Queen Sop tial advise of German

In the ci ance that military fo with as of the way. dynasty ha express co violated, a under the Turkish ru dence and Constanting accept the the nation. and the un and person deposition.

Now the 1914, by M Greece shou That, givin in any eve isolated, co assured the advice tend the Turkish systematic population thus obtaine millions of f of Turkish 1 Greek popu coasts of As issue was on a quarter of the wealthie d suc-

ose of

trav-

whole

ambi-

Balkan

negro,

and it

as by

would

of the

av of

thev

ald be

uld be

at the

rman-

litical

Greek

1 of a

lished the

nat of

oval "

terest

of the

ntine.

both

stem.

which

Field-

incess

Caiser

were

inary

after

acific

rance

of German interests. Independently of the influence of Queen Sophia, Constantine's closest and most confidential adviser was Dr. Streit, born at Athens, but the son

of German parents.

In the circumstances there appeared to be every assurance that when the time came to give effect to it on a military footing, the Serbo-Greek treaty would be dealt with as of no account. One difficulty alone stood in the way. Constantine was a constitutional ruler. His dynasty had been placed on the Greek throne on the express condition that the Constitution would not be violated, and Great Britain, France and Russia were, under the Treaty which had liberated Greece from Turkish rule, the guardians at once of Greek independence and of Greek popular rights. Not only then was Constantine, as a Constitutional Sovereign, bound to accept the advice of his responsible Ministers chosen by the nation, but to the obstinate rejection of that advice. and the unconstitutional course of following a contrary and personal policy, there was attached the penalty of deposition.

Now the advice tendered to Constantine in August, 1914, by M. Venizeros, then Prime Minister, was that Greece should throw in her lot with the Entente Powers. That, giving effect to the alliance, would have made it in any event most improbable that Serbia, not being isolated, could be overpowered. It would, too, have assured the neutrality of Bulgaria. The ground for the advice tendered by the Greek Prime Minister was that the Turkish Government had already entered upon a systematic persecution and despoilment of the Greek population along the Asia Minor littoral. The plunder thus obtained, then estimated at a total of five hundred millions of francs, was to be used for defraying the costs of Turkish mobilisation in the event of war. Since the Greek population of the towns and districts along the coasts of Asia Minor numbered some three millions, the issue was one of urgency as well as of importance. About a quarter of a million of these Asiatic Greeks, including the wealthiest among them, had been stripped of their

17

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

possessions, and driven forth as exiles to beg their bread.

But while in name the head of the Greek nation and the representative of Greek interests, and content in that capacity to enjoy the state and status of royalty, Constantine had so imperfect a sense of the duties of his position that he rejected the counsel of his Ministers without qualification. Venizelos resigned. The new Cabinet had not the confidence of the Greek Parliament. Yet almost their first act was to repudiate the Serbo-Greek treaty.

On August 4, 1914, the day on which Great Britain declared war, M. Theotokis, the Greek Minister at Berlin, received from the German Emperor a summons to a personal audience. When M. Theotokis entered the Cabinet of the Emperor he found the latter holding in his hand a telegram which he told the Minister had just been sent by Constantine. The purport of the telegram was not disclosed but the Kaiser William dictated to Theotokis a reply in these terms:—

"The Emperor informs me that an Alliance has to-day been concluded between Germany and Turkey. Bulgaria and Rumania are also taking their stand alongside of Germany. The German warships in the Mediterranean are to join the Turkish Fleet and act together. By this action the King of the Hellenes will see that all the Balkan States have joined Germany in the struggle against Slavism."

To this reply the Greek Minister added his own report of a conversation which had followed the dictation.

"In bringing these considerations to the knowledge of your Majesty" (he wrote), "the Kaiser asks you—appealing to you as a comrade, as a German Field-Marshal of whom the German Army is proud, and reminding his brother-in-law that Greece kept Kavala thanks to the Kaiser's support —to mobilise your Army, to place yourself at his INTRIC

side, a Slavis not si breach Emperion o cussed

As throw the conclude Constantin neutrality following with the (his account

"Habsolubetweethe dexposethink Theotappea as to guaranthat leterrito

From the neutrality with the K Serbo-Gree The destructionards in

Meanwh comedy was the outbre called togo proposed t

INTRIGUES OF AUGUST-NOVEMBER, 1914

side, and to march with him hand-in-hand against Slavism and the common enemy. If Greece does not side with Germany there will be a complete breach between Greece and the Empire. The Emperor added: 'What I ask to-day is the execution of what the two Sovereigns have often discussed.'"

As throwing light on the relations of the two rulers, the concluding passage of this note is of some significance. Constantine replied urging that his attitude of ostensible neutrality was the more desirable course. On the following day, August 5, Theotokis had an interview with the German Minister for Foreign Affairs, and in his account of it he stated:—

"Herr von Jagow confirmed, under the seal of absolute secrecy, the conclusion of an Alliance between Turkey and Germany. When I pointed out the dangers to which our geographical situation exposed us, Herr von Jagow replied that he did not think England would act against Greece. M. Theotokis added: 'If we accept the Emperor's appeal, we should, I think, ask for clear definitions as to what he wants us to do, and what he would guarantee us in case of success. My impression is that he would not object to see us extend our territory at the cost of Serbia.'"

From these transactions it is clear that the ostensible neutrality of Constantine, covered by a refusal to fall in with the Kaiser's demands, was intended to destroy the Serbo-Greek alliance, the western bulwark of the Balkans. The destruction of that bulwark was the initial step towards involving Turkey in the war.

Meanwhile, at Constantinople another phase of the comedy was being enacted. On receipt of the news of the outbreak of hostilities the Council of Ministers was called together. As Secretary for War, Enver Pasha proposed that Turkey should declare forthwith on the

19

c 2

EAST their.

n and ent in yalty, ies of nisters new

Serbo-Britain Berlin, to a d'the

ment.

ing in d just egram ted to

e has and taking erman n the Balkan gainst

report

know-Kaiser as a Army that apport at his

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

side of Germany and Austria. He found himself in a minority. Next he urged the necessity of a partial mobilisation of the reserves. That was agreed to. The Sultan personally was opposed to hostilities and the majority of the Divan shared his opinion. Negotiations were accordingly set on foot for concluding with the Ambassadors of the Entente Powers a formal agreement of neutrality. While these negotiations went on the tidings came of sweeping German successes in France. As the bulletins arrived—from Berlin—Enver at every successive meeting of the Council showed himself more urgent and aggressive. The shrewder Ministers had their misgivings. The Council, however, was already divided when Goeben and Breslau steamed up the Dardanelles and dropped anchor before Constantinople. Escaping from the port of Messina in Sicily, these ships had eluded the Allied squadron in the Eastern Mediterranean, how; was never during the War explained. It has been asserted that the Allied squadron was misled by false wireless instructions into believing Goeben and Breslau would make for Pola. In any event, it did not appear a good beginning for the Allied naval operations in those waters.

The spectacle of two German warships lying off the Golden Horn, one of them, Goeben, one of the most powerful units of the German fleet, at once stimulated the Turkish war party and depressed the opposition, for the main point on which the peace advocates had relied was the supremacy of the Entente at sea. With the support of the Sultan they had so far held to their opinions that the neutrality compact was drawn up

and awaiting ratification.

In the circumstances Enver Pasha and the German Government realised that they must force the pace. The cruisers of the Turkish fleet had been entrusted to the command of German officers. Either on secret instructions or on their own initiative they attacked Odessa and the Russian Black Sea port of Theodosia. On learning this the Turkish Government was profuse in its apologies. A deputation of Ministers waited on

INTRIGU

the French

to Russia, ar The reply all German n service must met by evas counter-prop the mediation considered a demand insi difficulty. 1 Austria; to prolonged an Enver and Four of the advocate of Effendi, and Ambassadors passports, an

The date. into the Wa Odessa had For the mean to events in put whether 1914, forthw answer must in the West Berlin it wou and Russia. speedily crus trality" of G necessity for torious Germ greater advar by war. The have been av in Egypt and Turkey woul

from enhanc

INTRIGUES OF AUGUST-NOVEMBER, 1914

AST

in a

urtial

The

the

tions

the

ment

the

ance.

very

more

eady

ople.

ships

liter-

isled

and

1 not

tions

f the

most

lated

ition,

had

With

their

n up

rman

pace.

ed to

ecret

icked

losia.

ofuse

ed on

It

had

the

the French Ambassador with the offer of an apology to Russia, and of an indemnity to defray damages.

The reply of the Entente Powers was to demand that all German naval and military instructors in the Turkish service must leave Constantinople. The demand was met by evasion. Time was sought to be gained by a counter-proposal that the matter should be referred to the mediation of Italy and the United States. This, considered a subterfuge, was rejected and the original demand insisted upon. The Divan was now in a difficulty. To accede meant war with Germany and Austria; to refuse, war with the Entente. After a prolonged and stormy meeting, the Council, swayed by Enver and Talaat, decided by a majority for refusal. Four of the Ministers, Djavid Bey, the most influential advocate of a peace policy, Mahmud Pasha, Oskam Effendi, and Boustam Effendi, forthwith resigned. The Ambassadors of the Entente Powers applied for their passports, and on November 1 they left Constantinople.

The date, November 1, on which Turkey was brought into the War has a certain import: the attack upon Odessa had only taken place some days previously. For the meaning of this hurry it is necessary to allude to events in other parts of Europe. If the question be put whether it was intended at the beginning of August, 1914, forthwith to drag Turkey into the conflict, the answer must be in the negative. Had the campaign in the West gone as at the outset it was believed in Berlin it would go; had France been speedily crushed, and Russia, held in the meanwhile by Austria, been speedily crushed in turn, then, the "friendly neutrality" of Greece assured, there would have been no necessity for Turkish assistance. A presumably victorious Germany would indeed have derived all the greater advantage from a Turkish Empire unexhausted by war. The still untapped resources of Turkey would have been available for assault upon the British position in Egypt and India, while the scheme of penetration in Turkey would have derived impetus, and completion from enhanced German prestige. In short, all the

considerations were against involving Turkey prematurely, and none, in August, 1914, in favour of that course.

By the end of October, however, the prospects had materially changed. The German expedition into France had suffered disaster on the Marne, and the Austrian first line armies had met with defeat. The remains of one Austrian army had already laid down its arms at Lemberg; the wreck of the other was cooped up in Przemysl. The first battle of Ypres had also been entered upon, and though not yet concluded had already been lost. In view also of the great German-Austrian reverse on the Vistula it had become urgent to divert as much as possible of the Russian strength from the main Eastern front, to stir up trouble for the British in the East, and not least to cut the connection between Great Britain and India through Egypt, and prevent that country from being used as a base for the transport of troops or supplies from Australia. To involve Turkey in the War meant a menace at once to the Anglo-Persian oil-fields at the head of the Persian Gulf, and to the oil-fields of the Caucasus. It meant, of course, also the closing of the Dardanelles, and the cutting of the shortest route to Russia to and from the West, seeing that the Baltic route was now barred. As an inducement, Germany could offer two apparently rich prizes—Egypt and the oil-fields of the Caucasus, once also in Turkish hands and now lost, and the source, like Egypt, of tempting wealth. Since, further, notwithstanding the Balkan War, there was a conviction among many Turks that, with the aid of German military science, these dazzling prospects would infallibly be realised, it is hardly surprising that, stimulated by cupidity, dreams of a great revival of Turkish power swept away considerations of prudence.

Essentially the bringing of Turkey into the conflict in November, 1914, was on the part of the German Government a diversion dictated by necessity. For one thing, the railway to Bagdad had not been completed. The sections were not yet linked up. For another, Turkey was and of the I What mil

this diversio A commo is that of ho often been characteristi has been me language. known. It policy of ext it marked t the non-Tu Greeks, Jew majority. 1 part in Anat peasantry of dering on th Turkish arn Those provir menians, Gre to Turkish grounds. Tl Syrian becau of the Kurdis shadowy, and region of the the Persian (the Turk wa farther than t of the eightee

The most operative for administratio diversity of common inter of the ruling result is the g Turkish admi

INTRIGUES OF AUGUST-NOVEMBER, 1914

AST

ma-

that

had

ance

rian

s of

s at

o in

peen

ady

rian

t as

nain

the "

reat

hat

t of

key

sian

the

the

test

the

ent,

ypt

ish

of

the

rks

ese

18

ms

on-

ict

an

or

ed.

er,

Turkey was still feeling the effects alike of the Balkan and of the Italian wars.

What military advantages did Germany derive from this diversion?

A common impression regarding the Turkish Empire is that of homogeneity. All the subjects of Turkey have often been roughly classed as Turks. But of the characteristics of the dominions under Turkish rule none has been more marked than the diversity of race and language. That this was the case in Europe was well known. It furnished indeed a main reason for the policy of expelling the Turk from Europe. Not less was it marked throughout Turkey-in-Asia. In Asia Minor the non-Turkish population of Armenians, Kurds, Greeks, Jews, Syrians and Arabs formed the great majority. The followers of Osman, settled for the most part in Anatolia, became the progenitors of the hardy peasantry of that region, and from the provinces bordering on the southern shores of the Black Sea the Turkish armies had always been chiefly recruited. Those provinces formed the heart of the Empire. Armenians, Greeks, and Jews continued to be unreconciled to Turkish rule on religious as well as on political grounds. The Arab opposed it on grounds of race; the Syrian because of its exactions. Over the wild tribes of the Kurdish highlands Turkish dominion had remained shadowy, and on the farther confines of the Empire, the region of the Lower Euphrates, the western shores of the Persian Gulf, and southern Arabia the imperium of the Turk was of relatively recent date, going back no farther than the end of the seventeenth and the beginning of the eighteenth century.

The most powerful because the most constantly operative force making for homogeneity is a sound administration and equal laws. Where there is a diversity of peoples it promotes intercourse, creates common interests, and leads in time to the assimilation of the ruling race with the subject populations. The result is the gradual evolution of stability and strength. Turkish administration, however, instead of favouring

Bank. O ment und of eight h of war it k Turkish A the supply

presented tria combi war mater from the c The sec

INTRI

this a very in scale to longed, and and estima drag, not increasingly

A third in men fe Anatolia a between the the final ru source of it

Fourthly. an inevitab and severe margin to more partic again mean

the fusion of nationalities, opposed the process as the easier means of maintaining supremacy. From the subject populations the Turk remained distinct—an official and military caste. As a peasant cultivator he was simple and frugal; as an official he had proved himself venal and greedy. His dominion was steadily

ruinous.

Looking at these facts, the advantages immediately derived by Germany from the diversion were first the closing of the Black Sea route; secondly, the obligation thrown upon Russia of dispatching a strong force into the Caucasus, and thirdly the necessity imposed upon Great Britain of taking steps for the effectual defence of Egypt. To that extent Germany added to the embarrassments of her antagonists. And she obtained the command of a force of first-class fighting men which might be raised to a strength of 750,000. In the fifteen divisions of the Turkish regular army filled up to establishment strength there were 300,000 of all arms. Steps were taken at once to embody a further ten divisions. Later the number of divisions was raised to fifty, but on a reduced footing, giving a nominal total of threequarters of a million men. At no time, however, in the course of the War was a force of that strength simultaneously in the field. Allowing for the supply of losses as they were incurred, it is doubtful if the figure at any time exceeded half a million.

But if these were the advantages there were also

disadvantages.

The first was equipment. Much towards the equipment of the Turkish regular army had already been done, especially in the matter of engineering supplies and artillery. After the Balkan War the Turkish Army had practically to be entirely refitted with guns, and according to the ideas then favoured in Germany a considerable proportion were heavy pieces. With the matériel turned out at Essen and Skoda, came German officers, instructors, and artificers of various sorts. The outfit was paid for in Turkish bonds accepted as sufficient security, but on advantageous terms, by the Deutsche

INTRIGUES OF AUGUST-NOVEMBER, 1914

Bank. Obligations incurred by the Turkish Government under that head had apparently reached a total of eight hundred millions of marks. On the outbreak of war it became necessary over and above to equip the Turkish Army on a maximum footing, and to continue the supply. In the earlier part of the struggle that presented no particular difficulty. Germany and Austria combined had then a superiority in the output of war material. But as time went on the drag arising from the campaigns in Turkey became serious.

The second disadvantage was cost. Not only was this a very expensive war in Turkey, but it was equal in scale to that of 1870-71, and times over more prolonged, and it had not been provided for in the plans and estimates before August, 1914. Once more the drag, not greatly felt at first, became towards the end

increasingly grave.

EAST

is the

1 the

t-an

or he

him-

eadily

t the

ation

upon

ice of

abar-

l the vhich

fteen

stab-

steps ions.

but hree-

1 the

ane-

osses

any

also

one, and had ordable ériel cers, utfit ient sche A third disadvantage was that the burden of losses in men fell chiefly upon the peasant population of Anatolia and, sweeping away the able-bodied males between the ages of sixteen and fifty, contributed towards the final ruin of the Turkish Empire by drying up the

source of its power.

Fourthly, the economic margin in Turkey was narrow, an inevitable effect of Turkish administration. Repeated and severe requisitions for war purposes soon caused the margin to vanish altogether, and left the population, more particularly in Syria, exposed to famine. This again meant a crippling of the Empire's resources.

the preachi reasons for it is repugn his kindred infidels, the

CHAPTER III

THE GERMAN-TURKISH OFFENSIVE

Military purpose of German intrigues in India—Their failure—A threefold plan of operations; winter campaign in the Caucasus; advance to Basra; expedition against Egypt—Scheme of Turkish mobilisation—weak points of Turks' Asiatic Empire—Disasters of the Turkish Caucasus Campaign—Advance on Basra forestalled by the British—Opening of the campaign in Mesopotamia—Its conditions—Turkish reverses—British take Mazera and Kurna—The occupation of Lower Mesopotamia—First attack against Egypt—Effects of British administration—Declaration of a Protectorate—The Turkish concentration at Damascus—Character and strength of the German-Turkish Expedition—Difficulties of the Sinai advance—Battle of Ismailia.

In September, 1914, the British Government in India knew that agitators, agents of the Turkish Government. were among the tribes of the North-west frontier preaching a Jehad, or Holy War. Occupied by affairs in Turkey, the German Government had, to begin with, given but a secondary attention to the stirring up of discontent with British rule in the Indian peninsula. While the motive of revenge for the setback experienced in 1875 was always present, the influence of German agents, though exerted where and when opportunity offered, was covert and limited. Not until the conclusion of the Anglo-French Entente in 1904 did intrigue begin to take a more active form. It led to the Swadashi movement in Bengal. That died away; nevertheless, the hope of causing Great Britain serious preoccupation through native unrest had not been given up.

Some local troubles were caused on the north-west frontier by the appeal to Mussulman fanaticism, but

basis. The this instant palpably a both practic consistent excreated continuerest in kind, once man is not. The chie been to me the continuer to me the continueres to me the co

been to pu

In the n
Constantin
Sandars as
Turkish As
field. It v
scheme for
man meth
against the
would cut
simultaneo
dispatch as
a force w
works and
deprive th
liquid fuel

In pursu had been consisting by reserve reinforced war was of All these Hassin Izz

THE GERMAN-TURKISH OFFENSIVE

the preaching of a Jehad signally failed. Nor are the reasons for the failure far to seek. Though generally it is repugnant to the mind of a Mussulman that he and his kindred in the faith should be under the rule of infidels, the call to a Holy War must have a genuine basis. The faith must be manifestly in danger. In this instance that was not only not apparent, it was palpably at variance with the facts. The toleration, both practised and enforced, by the British raj and its consistent equality towards nationalities and creeds had created common political interests, and above all the interest in peace and public security. A rule of that kind, once rooted, is not easy to disturb, and a Mussulman is not of necessity a fool.

The chief effect, therefore, of these proceedings had been to put the British Government in India on the

alert.

-A

asus :

rkish

ers of

-Its

ainst of a

acter

es of

ndia

ent.

itier

fairs

vith,

p of

ula.

aced

man

nity

sion

egin

ashi

less.

tion

west

but

ma-

In the meantime, the military measures initiated at Constantinople by Enver Pasha, backed by Liman von Sandars and a Germanised Staff, found the regular Turkish Army, when war broke out, ready to take the field. It was decided to utilise this preparedness. The scheme for the Turkish offensive, characteristic of German methods, provided for a bold and swift stroke against the Russians in the Caucasus, a stroke which would cut off access to the oil-fields; for an expedition simultaneously against Egypt, and, finally, for the dispatch as speedily as possible south from Bagdad of a force which was to occupy Basra and, seizing the works and pipe line of the Anglo-Persian Oil Company, deprive the British Navy of this important source of liquid fuel.

In pursuance of this scheme the Turkish regular army had been mobilised into two main bodies. The first, consisting of the 9th, 10th and 11th Corps, strengthened by reserves, was massed at Erzerum. It was further reinforced by the 1st Corps, transported by sea, before war was declared, from Constantinople to Trebizond. All these troops were entrusted to the command of Hassin Izzet Pasha. The second main body massed at

1

27

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

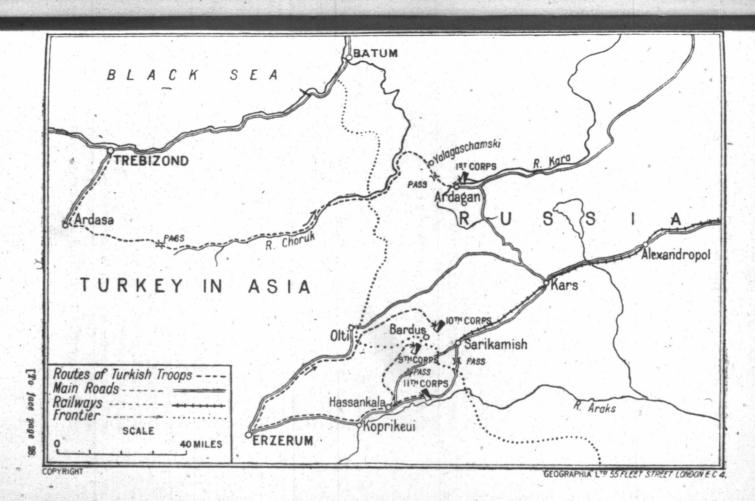
Damascus under the command of Djemal Pasha, consisted in addition to troops based on that "inspection," of the 4th Corps, sent from Adrianople; of the 12th Corps, transferred from Mosul, and of a division of reserves from Anatolia. In all there were at Damascus some 140,000 men. The total forces destined for operations in the Caucasus amounted to about 200,000. Other corps were retained at Constantinople as a provision against emergencies. Of the troops at Bagdad one division appears to have been deemed presently sufficient for the Basra enterprise. No immediate and serious opposition in that quarter was looked for.

The main difficulty which beset this plan of an offensive was the distances to be covered. In the case of the Caucasus the season of the year was against it, but in the cases of Mesopotamia and Egypt, favourable.

The distances, with the relative paucity of railway and the indifferent roads, revealed the true weakness of Turkey's Asiatic dominions. On the other hand, it was all important from the German point of view to exploit the effect of surprise.

So far, for example, as the Caucasus was concerned, it did not appear unreasonable to suppose that the Russians would not contemplate activities on a large scale until the spring of 1915. Quite possibly, therefore, they might be taken unawares. There is probably not an area in the world where campaigning in mid-winter is more hazardous or involves worse hardships than on the vast and rugged tableland between the Black and the Caspian Seas. Varying in height from 1,500 to 5,000 feet above sea-level, its backbone a chain of lofty peaks, this great upland is in winter swept by violent gales mostly accompanied by heavy falls of snow, which, freezing as it falls, lies many feet thick everywhere, and in the defiles and hollows forms drifts of great depth. The cold is so severe that the natives live during the winter underground, in spacious excavations accommodating both themselves, their cattle and their stores. Outside the towns the country then presents the appearance of a limitless snow-bound solitude. Nowhere is

S



from Erze

the Russia

German n

mined to

confirmed

10th, wer

him in fla

strong pla

Erzerum 1

Olti, then

Bardus pa

from the

degree to

questional

while on t

pass, the

Kala over

Araks wi

Sarikamisl

Corps brain hand. Re

farthest a

on the Ru

directed in

Headquar represente

zond. Th

Ardasa, to

valley alor 100 kilom

Batum, tl

across the

ally to des

From ther in the defi

debouch u

rear of th

But the

These t

Possibly

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

there a sign of life, save at rare intervals the smoke

from the fires of some underground village.

North of the upland mass the level falls into a mighty hollow extending from the Caspian Sea to the Black Sea, the towering peaks of the main range of the Caucasus rising on the farther side of it, a wall of eternal snows. According to geologists, the Caspian Sea and the Black Sea once formed a united sheet of water. In this trough lies Tiflis, the capital of the Russian Caucasus, and along it runs the railway with Baku on the Caspian at one end and Batum on the Black Sea at the other. South of Tiflis there is in the Caucasus plateau a deep rift from north-east to south-west, narrowing as it thrusts into the highlands. Up this rift had been carried a branch of the failway, and on that line are first Alexandropol, next the famous rock fortress of Kars, and finally, close to the Russo-Turkish frontier and near the summit of the pass, Sarikamish, another but more modern fortress and a Russian military base. The natural and easiest way across the highlands into the Tiflis trough, or vice versa, is through the rift. For ages, therefore, the defile has been the site of military works. The road across it is the main and ancient trade route between Tiflis and Erzerum, but the railway ends at Sarikamish. The sixty miles between that place and Erzerum have to be covered on horseback or on foot.

It was into this wintry wilderness with no railways at their disposal that the Turks, inspired and guided by

their German advisers, resolved to plunge.

The Russians had in the Caucasus under the command of General Wozonoff an army three corps strong. Within a fortnight after the declaration of war part of this Russian force began a forward movement. An advance was made from Sarikamish along the Erzerum road. Occupying the summit of the pass the Russians on November 20 crossed the frontier. It was they who after all had taken the Turks by surprise, for they met with no serious opposition until the vanguard had reached and taken Koprikeui. Further progress was then checked by the 11th Turkish Corps, pushed forward

30

THE GERMAN-TURKISH OFFENSIVE

from Erzerum to arrest them. It was necessary for the Russians to wait until the main body came up.

Possibly the Russian General suspected that, after the German manner, some stroke was afoot, and had determined to anticipate it. If so his inference was speedily confirmed. He learned that a Turkish army corps, the 10th, were executing a movement designed to attack him in flank. Frontally to force the defile, with its strong places, was to all intents impossible, but from Erzerum northwards a road runs through the hills to Olti, then, by a roundabout route leading over the Bardus pass, it is possible to descend upon Sarikamish from the north-west. It was hazardous to the last degree to attempt this remote pass in winter, but unquestionably the Turks were bent upon doing it. Meanwhile on the right of the troops moving over the Bardus pass, the 9th Turkish Corps pushed on from Hassan Kala over the mountains into the upper valley of the Araks with the manifest intention of approaching Sarikamish simultaneously from the south-west.

These three movements of the 10th, 9th and 11th Corps branched out from Erzerum like the fingers of a hand. Reaching the frontier, where they would be farthest apart, they would then converge, and close in

on the Russian forces.

AST

moke

ighty

Sea,

casus

lows.

3lack

ough

along

end

th of

from

into

anch

opol,

close

it of

tress

siest

vice

road

ween

nish.

have

vays

d by

land

thin

this

ance

oad.

who

met

hen

vard

But the supreme Turkish adventure of this campaign, directed in fact and in person by Enver Pasha and a Headquarters Staff mainly of German officers, was represented by the march of the 1st Corps from Trebizond. The plan was for this Corps, moving south to Ardasa, to strike the valley of the Choruk, to follow that valley along the greater part of its length, more than 100 kilometres, to reach at its upper end the road from Batum, then to follow the lofty pass which zigzags across the shoulder of Mount Yalagaschamski, and finally to descend by the valley of the Kara to Ardagan. From there, assuming the Russian forces to be engaged in the defile round Sarikamish, it should be feasible to debouch upon the road and railway from Kars in the rear of that stronghold. In short, if not the whole

BRITISH CAMPAINS IN THE NEARER EAST

Russian army, at any rate a great part of it ought to be caught cooped up in the "rift," and possibly compelled to surrender.

The plan was on paper attractive. Plainly, however, those who drew it up had only a very imperfect idea of the Caucasus in winter, or of what was involved in negotiating in winter the high passes of such a region.

The long march of the 1st Corps from Trebizond was assuredly a remarkable feat of endurance. As the road along the Choruk valley is rugged, and they would have to cut their way through snowdrifts, they were compelled to discard all artillery save mountain guns. The advantage of the move was that until they approached Ardagan they would be lost to view, and should descend upon that place as a surprise. The toils of the march may be judged from the fact that it occupied the greater part of two months.

This delay proved fatal to the scheme.

Withdrawing his advanced troops, Wozonoff concentrated in the first instance against the 10th Turkish Corps, and after an obstinate battle defeated it. The action followed by an energetic pursuit, uncovered the flank of the 9th Corps, which, caught in the Upper Valley of the Araks, and its retreat cut off, was destroyed. Its commander, Ikan Pasha, and his staff surrendered.

After this the attack was directed against the 1st Corps. Those troops had reached Ardagan on January 1, but reduced in strength and severely fatigued. When assailed they fought well, for their situation was desperate, but the lack of sufficient artillery was decisive. Driven back over the mountains into the Choruk valley, they were compelled to face the weary return march broken, dispirited, and short of supplies. January is the worst part of the winter and the month of severest storms. High up in the Choruk valley one such storm overtook them. Few survived.

It now remained only to deal with the 11th Corps. Meanwhile, reinforced, its resistance during a three days' battle at Kari Arga—January 17 to 19—proved

determine heavy loss Strictly the scope in the Cau

on the wl East that in their to stroyed a l

With poland a main had much plies into the accommunithreatened, Unable ser Batum, the the advant moment General situation. In prudence, enthe aspect of

These, ne of the War quarter when putting the mans had a British author to the head probabilities. dispatch of Their intriguidisclosing dische outbreak States an implementation

In all, up to them native the Part of these if the others for s

THE GERMAN-TURKISH OFFENSIVE

EAST

ght to

com-

wever.

dea of

red in

d was

road

have

pelled

dvan-

lagan

upon

may

eater

ncen-

rkish

The

the

pper

was

staff

1st

ry 1,

hen

des-

ive.

ley,

rch

v is

rest

orm

ps.

ree

red

ion.

determined, but faced by superior forces, and sustaining heavy losses, it was compelled to retire upon Erzerum.

Strictly, this part of the war does not enter within the scope of the present volume. The first campaign in the Caucasus, however, had so material an influence on the whole of the subsequent conflict in the Near East that apart from it later events can hardly be grasped in their true bearings. Enver Pasha's enterprise destroyed a large part of the Turkish first line forces.

With ports on both the Caspian Sea and the Black Sea, and a main line of railway linking them up, the Russians had much better facilities for sending troops and supplies into the Caucasus than had the Turks, and so long as communications by sea with Batum were not seriously threatened, they thus enjoyed a signal advantage. Unable seriously to threaten communications with Batum, the German-Turkish plan had been to offset the advantage by an unlooked-for move. For the moment General Wozonoff found himself in an awkward situation. His conduct, however, was marked by prudence, energy and ability, and those qualities altered the aspect of affairs.

These, nevertheless, were not the opening activities of the War. The initial thrust had come from the quarter where it was least expected—British India. In putting the Government of India on the alert the Germans had acted rashly. While they failed to shake British authority, they left it evident that an expedition to the head of the Persian Gulf was among the near probabilities. The German aim had been to make the dispatch of any armed force from India impossible. Their intrigue had an opposite effect. So far from disclosing discontent with British rule in the Peninsula, the outbreak of war brought from Indian princes and States an impressive, and as events proved a sincere, demonstration of attachment to the Imperial Power.

In all, up to the end of 1916, 290,000 men, 210,000 of them native troops, had been sent from India overseas. Part of these forces were destined for service in France, the others for service in Egypt and East Africa. In Sep-

33

the guns,

the troops

loam of t

the wind i

season, he

It then is

and the I

The surfac

as level a

pression a

strengthen

like island

spreading

sions. Th

of the an

existent a

to the mel

to occupy

damage th

tion of the

refineries, t

a tract of

and well t

Euphrates

Arab. Fro

eastern, sh

western no

authority (

uncertain

German scl

to the Pers

and to ant

had been s

tember and

There w

tember, 1914, Sir Edmund Barrow, military secretary at the India Office, had drawn up a memorandum urging the occupation of Basra on the three grounds that it would tend to safeguard Egypt, to impress the Arabs and to protect the Anglo-Persian Oil Installation. Upon that recommendation the 6th Division out of the troops intended for service in Europe was reserved for an expedition to the Persian Gulf. For many years the British authorities in India had had political relations with the semi-independent Arab sheiks who ruled the territories at the head of the Gulf or adjoining its western shores, and Sir Percy Cox, selected to accompany the expedition as political officer, received instructions to get into touch with the Sheiks of Koweit, Murrammah. and Najd. We view of the call for prompt action the Poonah brigade, part of the 6th Division, in the middle of October embarked under the command of Brigadier-General W. S. Delamain, as an advance force. It was to occupy Abadan, the island in the Shatt-el-Arab on which were situated the Anglo-Persian Oil Company's refineries.

Consisting of the 2nd Dorsets, the 20th Punjaub Infantry, the 10th (Wellesley) Rifles, the 117th Mahrattas and two batteries of light guns, the advance force reached Barhein, at the head of the Gulf, on October 23. The first operation was to capture the Turkish fort of Fao, at the mouth of the Shatt-el-Arab. Following a bombardment by the gunboat *Odin*, the garrison of the fort were overpowered. Having secured this post, General Delamain sailed with his flotilla up the estuary, and disembarking his troops at Saniyeh, on the Turkish shore opposite Abadan, proceeded, on

November 7, to form an entrenched camp.

From Bagdad to Basra, following the course of the Tigris, the distance is 502 miles, and to follow the river in traversing this region is the only practicable course. At the very best rate of marching the Turkish troops ordered to Basra, if they advanced from Bagdad on foot could not complete the journey in much less than six weeks. With the means of river transport at their disposal the march had to be carried out in that manner,

arrived at
British adv
News of
Turks at B

was therefo

retary

andum

rounds

ess the

lation.

of the

ed for

lations

ed the

ng its

npany

ictions

nmah,

on the

middle

gadier-

was to

which

neries.

injaub

Mah-

vance

lf, on

re the

-Arab.

n, the

ecured

lla up

niyeh,

ed, on

of the

e river

ourse.

troops

ad on

s than

their

anner,

years

the guns, stores, and other impedimenta accompanying the troops on tugs and barges. In summer, the sandy loam of the Mesopotamian wastes is often blown by the wind into great clouds of dust. In winter, the rainy season, however, the soil becomes an adhesive mud. It then is heavy going. Save in the beds of the Tigris and the Euphrates, no stone is found in the country. The surface is one vast alluvial deposit, for the most part as level as an inland sea, and, indeed, giving the impression as much of water as of land, an impression strengthened by the rare ridges rising out of the expanse like islands, by the equal rarity of trees, and by the farspreading shallow lakes or swamps which fill the depressions. This state of things has resulted from the ruin of the ancient system of irrigation, traces of which, existent after 2,000 years of neglect and decay, add to the melancholy monotony of the prospect.

There was every reason why the Turks should move to occupy Basra in force. Apart from the military damage that must result to the British from the occupation of the Anglo-Persian oil-field and the seizure of the refineries, the vilayet of Basra from below Kurna included a tract of country, not merely fertile, but populated and well tilled. Joining at Kurna, the Tigris and the Euphrates unite to form the estuary of the Shatt-el-Arab. From Basra, fifty miles below Kurna, the eastern shore of the estuary is Persian territory, the western nominally Turkish—nominally because Turkish authority on these confines of the Empire was at best uncertain and disputed. An essential feature of the German scheme, nevertheless, was command of the outlet to the Persian Gulf. Alike to establish that command and to anticipate the landing of a hostile force, troops had been sent south from Bagdad at the end of September and by what was in effect a forced march, had arrived at Basra on or about the same day that the British advance force landed at Saniveh.

News of the British landing must have reached the Turks at Basra immediately on their arrival. No time was therefore lost in pushing down to Saniyeh a strong

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

reconnaissance. On November 11 the reconnaissance came within a short day's march of the British camp. The Mahrattas and Punjaubis were sent out to deal with it. In the skirmish the Turks were defeated.

Decidedly the Turks' best opportunity was to attack the British camp forthwith with all the strength at their disposal. Unfortunately for them their men were little fit for immediate campaigning. Reinforcements were sent from Basra, and proceeded to entrench at Sahain, four miles north of Saniyeh, thus cutting the route to

Basra by land.

Two days later, however, on November 13, Lieut.-General Sir A. A. Barrett sailed up the Shatt-el-Arab from India and reached Saniyeh with the remaining troops of the 6th Division—the Ahmednagar Brigade, and the Belgaum Brigade. The first (Brigadier-General D. H. Dobbie) was formed of the 1st Oxford L.I., and the 103rd and 119th Mahrattas; the second (Brigadier-General C. I. Fry) of the 2nd Norfolks, the 110th Mahrattas, the 7th Rajputs and the 114th Rajputanas. With the force were the 48th Pioneers, the 3rd Sappers and Miners, and the 33rd Cavalry.

As soon as practicable after the disembarkation the Turks at Sahain were (November 15) attacked by the Poona brigade and dislodged. But on the 17th word was brought in that the main Turkish force from Basra was advancing. A general British attack was accordingly decided upon, and the whole force moved out. At Sahil, nine miles north of the British camp, the Turkish army was discovered posted with its left on the estuary, and its right, where its artillery was chiefly in position, covered by groves of date palm. In front was a bare and level plain. As it seemed advisable to throw the weight of the British attack towards the enemy's left, where our gunboats were able to assist by enfilading the hostile trenches, while holding his right, and thus to turn him off the river, and by forcing him at the same time off the Basra route imperil his retreat, the British infantry had to advance in open order across this exposed tract. They carried out the manœuvre,

Route of Gen Fry's Expeditionary Force

to Nazariyeh

SCALE

EAST

sance camp. l with

ttack their little were ahain, ate to

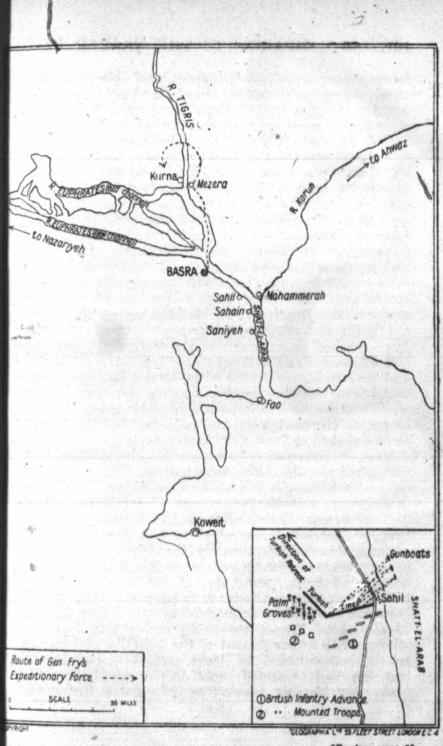
ieut.-Arab
aining
igade,
eneral
., and
adierMahtanas.

n the y the word Basra coord-out. o, the ft on hiefly front ble to s the ist by right,

g him treat,

across

euvre,



[To face page 36.

however, with dash and coolness, and this intrepidity so impressed the Turks that they broke before the British could close. The Turkish casualties chiefly suffered in the pursuit, and were reckoned at 1,500 men. Those of the British force were 353, but the killed only numbered 38.

Not only was the road to Basra cleared by this action: the Turks had been disorganised. To follow up the blow, part of the British force was embarked on two river steamers, and preceded by the gunboats made for Basra by water. The rest of the troops meanwhile pressed the retreating enemy by land. Some distance below Basra an attempt had been made to block the fairway by sinking three steamers across it. A battery of Turkish guns posted to cover the barrier was rapidly put out of action and some hours' work sufficed to blow up the obstruction. On November 22, that having been done, the flotilla and advanced troops pushed on at full speed. They reached Basra early on the same day. Rumour had affirmed that the Turks had evacuated the place, and the report was found to be true. The Turks had withdrawn the day before, leaving the town to be plundered by their auxiliaries. In the course of that afternoon (November 22) the main body of the British force marched in.

Measures were taken for converting Basra into a base camp, but the difficulties were various. There were no quay for landing either men or goods, no warehouses or buildings suitable for storage. Everything had to be improvised. General Barrett had brought with him two months' supplies, and these had somehow to be accommodated. Unfortunately, the only public building in the place useful for such a purpose, the Turkish custom house, had been burned down. So far, however, as lack of material permitted the camp was put into order.

Part of the Turkish forces having retired upon Kurna, Lieut.-Colonel Frazer was on December 3 sent up the estuary with a detachment of the Norfolks and Indian troops, accompanied by three gunboats, two armed launches, and an armed yacht. Going on ahead while Frazer put his men ashore four miles below Kurna, on

the weste enemy st where Tu In this pa wide, it i winds bet turns, an apart from navigatio therefore.

beyond h withdrew These. under the ber 7. A

and the T

On app

learned t

The car chose, to plan of cr was a dan Corps gal tached to and with up, former

In the r evidently attack, an higher up where the the main I cut them throw up Turkish of General F there was (December arms. The So far t

EAST

epidity British I in the of the red 38. ection; up the

o river
Basra
sed the
Basra
ay by
urkish
out of
ap the

done, speed. umour place, cs had to be of that

British

a base ere no houses nad to h him to be illding ustom er, as order. Curna, ip the Indian armed while na, on

THE GERMAN-TURKISH OFFENSIVE

the western bank of the Tigris, the gunboats found the enemy strongly posted at Mezera, on the east bank, where Turkish batteries covered the navigable channel. In this part of its course, though the Tigris is 300 yards wide, it is on the whole shallow. The deeper channel winds between the shoals from bank to bank in acute turns, and it being impossible to keep in midstream, apart from the current which runs at four knots per hour, navigation is difficult and dangerous. Shore batteries, therefore, formed a formidable obstruction.

On approaching Kurna, Lieut.-Colonel Frazer soon learned that the place was held in a strength quite beyond his small force to confront. He accordingly

withdrew and sent for reinforcements.

These, the rest of the Norfolks and the 7th Rajputs, under the command of General Fry, arrived on December 7. An attack upon Mezera was then resolved upon,

and the Turks were driven out.

The capture of Mezera enabled the British, if they chose, to cross the river six miles above Kurna, and the plan of crossing at that point was adopted. Though it was a dangerous service, men of the Sappers and Miners Corps gallantly swam the stream, carrying a line attached to a hempen cable which was then hauled across, and with a flat-bottomed dhow which had been towed

up, formed a ferry.

In the meanwhile, the Turks in Kurna had sat tight, evidently uncertain as to the direction of the main attack, and probably thinking the crossing of the river higher up a ruse. Since the town is close to the point where the Tigris and Euphrates join, the appearance of the main British force to the north and west completely cut them off. The British troops at once began to throw up entrenchments. Seeing this, a party of Turkish officers came out under a white flag to parley. General Fry insisted on unconditional surrender, and there was nothing for it but to comply. Next day (December 9) the garrison of 1,200 men laid down their arms. The equipment taken included nine guns.

So far the British blows had proved to be swift.

The hold on the estuary and the course of the Tigris as far as Kurna, 120 miles from the sea, was secure. But the organisation difficulties with which the British commander found himself confronted at Basra in establishing a basis for future operations gave the enemy an opening. Notwithstanding the loss of Kurna and Mezera, a Turkish force advanced to the Karun, the river which flows into the Shatt-el-Arab from the east. The pipe line from the oil-fields is carried along the southern bank of this stream. Evidently these enemy troops were the reinforcements whose destination had been Kurna. Finding that place already lost they had struck east towards Ahwaz, where, as part of the plan for patrolling the pipe line, the British had established a post. In the face of overwhelming numbers the post had to withdraw, and a small expeditionary force sent up to recover the position found the Turks too strong to be dislodged.

As the Turks were also at Nasariyeh on the Euphrates, 68 miles west of Kurna, General Barrett found that to meet all the demands upon his division forthwith would have involved its dispersal over a wide extent of country. Already the force had been reduced by the placing of garrisons at Koweit, Mezera and Kurna, and by the pipe line patrol. Further dispersal would, in the circumstances, have been highly imprudent. A fourth brigade was on its way from India, and a fifth was to follow, but until the arrival of these troops, it was necessary for the General to cut his coat according to his cloth. In the region occupied, a division of troops to go round had to be carefully handled. He had no alternative in the

interval save to mark time.

Nevertheless, looking at the situation broadly, the Turkish project regarding Basra had failed. Not merely had the British got in first, but with their sea communication it was clear they could not be ejected unless by an effort which geographical conditions and Turkish resources alike put out of the question.

How, meanwhile, had fortune gone with the expedition against Egypt? The main reliance in that instance had

been on 1 British au had been and Berlin the Germa render the A plot had of the Eg the first a the Egypt against th on the de Italy, then where he respect, ar to Constan

In Egyp thirty-eigh a profound declared a Kamel, se raised to tinguished in improv agriculture affairs as a British aut of the so-The move Not even t the guise o for a retu advocacy b the agitatic

Apart fr and the ap magnificent convinced Egyptian a imaginings.

THE GERMAN-TURKISH OFFENSIVE

AST

igris

eure.

tab-

v an

and

the

east.

the

emv

had

had

olan

shed

post

sent

ong

ites.

t to

puld

try.

g of

pipe

um-

ade

but

the

the

had

the

the

rely

ica-

an

re-

ion

had

been on revolt. At the head of the intrigue against British authority was the Khedive, Abbas Hilmi. He had been in regular correspondence with Constantinople and Berlin, and it seemingly was not doubted either by the Germans or by the Turks that his influence would render the so-called Nationalist movement formidable. A plot had been set on foot for undermining the fidelity of the Egyptian army, and assurances given that on the first appearance of a Turkish force on the frontier the Egyptian troops might be depended upon to rise against the British occupation. In November, 1914, on the declaration of war with Turkey, Abbas fled to Italy, then neutral. Later, he made his way to Vienna, where he was received with every outward mark of respect, and from Vienna travelled through Rumania to Constantinople.

In Egypt, however, it speedily became apparent that thirty-eight years of British administration had wrought a profound change. Abbas was deposed, the country declared a British protectorate, and Prince Hussein Kamel, second and favourite son of Ismail Pasha, raised to the throne with the title of Sultan. Distinguished by his public spirit, and his consistent concern in improvements, more especially those relating to agriculture, the new Sultan had had experience of public affairs as a Minister. These changes afforded a test of British authority on the one hand and of the influence of the so-called Nationalist movement on the other. The movement showed itself factitious and hollow. Not even those who had been paid to advocate it under the guise of independence showed themselves prepared for a return to Turkish domination. The moment advocacy became dangerous, and profits from it ceased, the agitation collapsed.

Apart from that, the inflow of troops from India and the appearance in Egypt for the first time of the magnificent corps from Australia and New Zealand convinced even the most fanatical that to pit the Egyptian army against such forces was the idlest of imaginings. It would have been the idlest of imaginings

41

Egypt, bu

coast of S

the enter

was to h

divisions

accepted

that Djen in the Bal

could be s

possible 1

Kressenst

tions at

when pra

designs h

course, w

Arish to]

suming su

would hav

transport

the usual

consignme

collected.

employ th

boats on

face it loo

-always a

be practica

lishing de

upon, look still there

The pre

declared, a

consisted c

skirmishers

War in Tri

as a vangu

for.

No tim

TH

had the Egyptian army been infected with "Nationalist" sentiment, and the fellahin of a like mind. Both the army and the peasant cultivators, however, were in the enjoyment of conditions better than had ever been known—better than their less fortunate fathers had ever dreamed of. To them the movement for alliance with the Turks made no appeal. The appeal had been addressed to their religious feelings, but their religious feelings had been respected and the appeal ran counter to their everyday perceptions and to their common sense.

Briefly, the idea of the state of affairs in Egypt entertained at Berlin and Constantinople had no foundation in fact.

Since, however, Egypt was the greatest of the prizes the new régime at Constantinople had set out to gain, and since the régime had to stand by success or fall by failure, belief in the certainty of a revolt in Egypt acted as a spur, and so acted though the means were, sanely weighed, utterly insufficient. The first necessity for any successful invasion of Egypt is sea power. Apart from sea power there is no access save across Sinai, a hundred and more miles of stony and waterless desert divided from an equally arid mass of mountains on the south by a tract of waterless sand. The region is rainless. Not a cloud is ever seen in the burning sky. With the exception of the dry and stunted scrub in the hollows of the southern mountains, Sinai is dead; cursed by an everlasting thirst; silent with the silence of eternal death.

Yet it was across this tract that the Germans had persuaded the Turks that their military science would enable them without command of the coast to transport a modern army with the machinery of modern war. In part the feat was to be facilitated by the laying down of a light railway.

Sober-minded men might well have had their misgivings, and for that reason probably Djemal Pasha had been picked out for the Damascus command. More than any other of the Young Turk party he was noted for his Anglophobia.

4.9

THE GERMAN-TURKISH OFFENSIVE

The concentration at Damascus was intended, however, not only to supply troops for an expedition against Egypt, but to guard against a possible descent upon the

coast of Syria, and against malcontents.

AST

ist"

the

the

peen

ever

with

peen

10us

nter

mon

gypt

oun-

izes

ain,

l by

cted

nely

any

rom

ired

ded

uth

less.

the

ows

an

ath.

had

puld

port

var.

mis-

had Iore

oted

No time was lost in launching the Egyptian part of the enterprise. Reports were spread that the attempt was to be made on a large scale—by three or more divisions of troops. All who knew the difficulties accepted the reports with reserve. It is possible enough that Djemal Pasha, whose military abilities as disclosed in the Balkan War were not high, believed a strong force could be sent as far as the Suez Canal, and it is equally possible that the chief of his staff, a German, von Kressenstein, thought as he did. Certainly the preparations at Gaza pointed to big things. But evidently when practical details were gone into these larger designs had to be given up. The great problem, of course, was that of water. From Gaza by way of El Arish to Kantara on the Suez Canal is 120 miles. Assuming success, at least twelve days' supply of water would have to be carried both for the men and for the transport animals and cavalry mounts. In addition to the usual skins used for the purpose in the East, a large consignment of kerosine and petrol tins had been collected, and the intention was to carry them full, and employ those empty on arrival to buoy up rafts and boats on which the canal was to be crossed. On its face it looked a brilliant idea, and a cheap one besides -always a recommendation. But even this would only be practicable by moving forward in stages and establishing depots. And though failure was not counted upon, looking at the imagined imminent revolt in Egypt, still there was the possibility, and it had to be provided

The preparations had been in train before war was declared, and the force that set out, early in November, consisted of the 8th Corps, part of the 4th, a body of skirmishers who had been employed during the Italian War in Tripoli, and were inured to desert fighting, and as a vanguard some 2,000 Bedouin irregulars. Besides

into acti

another l

from Is

gunboats

French g

into it, an

out of th

barded b

During t

stand his

ened. T

Maxwell.

over a c

second co

cleared. a

loss had

The hosti

as an ass

by infant

judged in

back no li

rent enou

The war l

Such is

At day

material for rafts the expedition carried with it a number of flat-bottomed boats.

The Sinai peninsula is politically part of Egypt, and the British had a small force at El Arish on the coast. but that post had been withdrawn, and the only troops east of the canal were a battalion of Gurkhas, and the Bikanir Camel Corps at Kantiveh, the western end of the El Arish route. Advancing without opposition to El Arish and finding that place evacuated, the enemy reconnoitred the track to the west, and on November 21 his irregulars appeared before Kantiyeh and engaged in a skirmish with the Camel Corps. Nothing more was seen of him until January 28, when there was another attack or demonstration at Kantiyeh, driven off with loss by the Gurkhas. This attack was a ruse. In the interval the expedition, leaving part of the 8th Corps in garrison, had been making its way south from there along the Wady-el-Arish a stony valley extending inland from the coast to the sandy tract of the interior. From that point, by following the Pilgrims' Route from Mecca, the Suez Canal may be reached near Toussoum, where the general flatness on the eastern side of the canal is broken by sand dunes.

This undulating stretch of the desert had been selected as the point of crossing. In the course of February 2 the van of the hostile column, reaching the dunes, had as stealthily as possible spread themselves along the banks of the canal. They waited until nightfall, and then entered upon preparations to launch their boats and rafts, covered by the fire of their batteries of field guns, and two heavy pieces of 6-in. calibre transported with great labour. It was still light enough, however, in that clear air for some of these movements to be observed from Toussoum, on the farther side of the canal. The British troops were on the alert, and word was sent to right and left. Lining the embankment on the west side the British wherever boats or rafts were pushed down to the water played on the embarkation places with machine-gun and rifle fire. The fusillade was answered by the enemy and as more men came

THE GERMAN-TURKISH OFFENSIVE

AST

nber

and

oast,

oops

the

d of

n to

emy

er 21

ed in

was

ther

with

the

orps

here

land

rom

ecca,

here

al is

cted

ry 2 had the and oats field orted ever. o be the word t on were tion lade ame into action on either side rapidly extended. One after another boats and rafts were sunk.

At daybreak on February 3 the battle became general from Ismailia to the Bitter Lakes. Three British gunboats, the armed Indian transport Hardinge, and the French guardships Requin and D'Entrecasteaux, entered into it, and made any crossing of the canal by the enemy out of the question. His positions were heavily bombarded both by the ships and by the British batteries. During the earlier part of the day he endeavoured to stand his ground, but towards afternoon his fire slackened. The British commander, General Sir John Maxwell, suspecting that a retirement had begun, threw over a column of Indian troops at Toussoum, and a second column at Serapeum. The dunes were speedily cleared, and 600 prisoners taken. Evidently the enemy loss had been heavy, for some 400 dead were found. The hostile guns, however, had been withdrawn as soon as an assault became imminent, and extended pursuit by infantry across the loose sand of this region was judged inadvisable. On the difficulties of the march back no light was publicly thrown, but they were deterrent enough to damp the ambition of conquering Egypt.

Such is the record of the German-Turkish offensive.

The war had not opened prosperously.

48

the influent At all even hesitancy British Car There was possibility tolerance at took advantage.

The second Allied force Turkey was In entering advisers in quarters—and a naw Mediterran Empire we they were

The basi

India and i pied in dea any moven well as in had made practicable best founds not less rea the Great movement Manifestly which alter the time, he and more e ated. In p necessities c themselves of a Germa consequence that in the moment to

CHAPTER IV

GALLIPOLI: THE NAVAL OPERATIONS

The Entente Powers and Greece—Political mistakes—Reasons advanced for the Gallipoli project—Their strategical unsoundness—Theories concerning naval attack upon land defences—Preliminary bombardment of Dardanelles forts—Turkish counter-preparations—The Allied Fleet—Attack of February 19, 1915—Its results—Arrival of Naval reinforcements—The attack of February 25—Attack of March 5—Renewed on March 7 and 10—Change in the Naval Command—The attack of March 18—Its failure—Causes of the reverse.

LOOKING at the events so far narrated, there were two measures which in their earlier stages might rapidly have

advanced the interests of the Allies.

The first was a steady and consistent pressure upon the King of Greece to follow a constitutional course of conduct. The grounds for the application of pressure were clear. A constitutional ruler may have personal views and opinions, but a personal policy on the part of such a ruler is not constitu-By initiating, therefore, and carrying out a personal policy Constantine was acting in defiance, not merely of the rights of the Greek people, but of the express authority of the three Guardian Powers. In their naval strength the Guardian Powers had the means at hand of applying the necessary pressure, and the French Government were in favour of applying the Constantine, on the other hand, had a certain influence at the Court of Russia. He was first cousin alike of the Tsar and of King George V. So far as the British Court was concerned, this relationship was negligible. But at the Court of Russia, seconded by the Empress,

GALLIPOLI: THE NAVAL OPERATIONS

the influence of Constantine counted for a good deal. At all events it was enough, in face of the resultant hesitancy of the Russian Government, to sway the British Cabinet towards a policy of circumspection. There was a reluctance to proceed to extremes if by any possibility extremes could be avoided, and of their tolerance both Constantine and the German Government

took advantage without scruple.

The second advisable measure was a descent by an Allied force on the coast of Syria. The weak point of Turkey was precisely the southern confines of the Empire. In entering upon the war the Turks and their German advisers had counted upon hostile attack from two quarters—a land attack by the Russians in the Caucasus, and a naval attack by the Western Powers from the Mediterranean. So far as the southern confines of the Empire were concerned, in place of looking for attack

they were prepared for offence.

iced

ries

om-

the

1808

wo

ve

on

rse

of

ay

nal

tu-

a

ce,

he

In

ins

the

St.

ice

of

ish

le.

SS,

The basis of this latter calculation was that alike in India and in Egypt the British would be too fully occupied in dealing with disaffection on the spot to attempt any movement in Asia Minor. In Egypt, however, as well as in India, the effects of British administration had made an attack upon Turkey-in-Asia at once practicable and safe. Really secure in Egypt on the best foundation of security—popular contentment—and not less really secure in India, the British possessed in the Great Dependency the resources for a military movement against Turkey on a formidable scale. Manifestly this introduced into the situation an element which altered the balance of affairs fundamentally. At the time, however, the effects of British administration, and more especially in Egypt, were not justly appreciated. In part the British Cabinet were pressed by the necessities of the war in France; in part they hampered themselves in meeting those necessities by apprehension of a German invasion; and they allowed themselves in consequence baselessly to be impressed by the belief that in the Nearer East a defensive policy ought for the moment to have the first place, though the situation,

Instead, therefore, of throwing an important force as soon as possible into Mesopotamia, and pushing it forward, and of completing that movement by another against the sensitive spot of Turkey-in-Asia, the Syrian coast and hinterland, an undertaking for which, with command of the sea, Egypt afforded an admirable base, the British Government decided upon the project of attempting to force the passage of the Dardanelles.

The question of whether this project ought to be ranked as a subsidiary or a divergent operation has given rise to some discussion. On the facts its character admits of no doubt. It was divergent. In plain terms it was at that time off the main track of the war. Had the Turkish Empire been pressed from its weak side on the mainland of Asia, the south—the weak side because the land communications from Constantinople were both difficult and extended, and made an attack based upon sea command, west or east, easier than a Turkish defence—that proceeding must most materially have aided the Russian operations in the Caucasus and would have co-ordinated with them. On the other hand, to attack the Dardanelles was to attack the Turkish Empire, not at its weakest, but at its strongest point. Furthermore, the attack was launched before any serious attempt had been made to thin out the Turkish forces at that point beforehand. Thus left for the time in security where they had most cause to fear attackon their southern confines—the Turks were free to concentrate the necessary resistance at the Dardanelles, and the Russian operations, in place of being promoted, were retarded alike by the resultant misapplication of British strength, and by the starvation of the Mesopotamia campaign which the Dardanelles project imposed.

Among the reasons which dictated the latter enterprise was the belief that a forcing of the Dardanelles, leading to the capitulation of Constantinople, would bring about an immediate collapse of the Turkish power, or at a
were r
of re-o
Black
short c
a spect
than o
by the
in the (
the Ru
no rea
would
Eastern
was the

probabi

G

That planned For t them cle peninsul fact the upon. it was es the Stra that mil and unt decisively even wit made the should h army on base, and Turkish circumsta was invit been evid larger sc

Not me out; the

energy. Fallipoli gin. force as it foranother Syrian h, with le base, ject of es.

to be on has aracter a terms side on

Had pecause re both d upon Curkish v have would and, to impire, urtherous atforces ime in tackree to inelles, moted, tion of esopoposed. enternelles, would power, or at any rate of the German régime in Turkey. There were next the advantages, too manifest for discussion, of re-opening the ice-free route to Russia through the Black Sea. It was an attempt, in a word, to find a short cut which would at the same time have afforded a spectacular triumph. But though that has been more than once asserted, the enterprise was not asked for by the Russian Headquarters Staff, for, as shown, events in the Caucasus made necessary no such request, and to the Russians in the war with Turkey the project was of no real military assistance. Though undeniably it would have been of most material assistance on the Eastern main front had it been attended by success. was there from the outset on the plans adopted any probability of success?

That question must be answered in the negative. As planned, the enterprise was radically unsound.

For the closing of the Dardanelles, and for keeping them closed if necessary, the occupation in force of the peninsula of Gallipoli would have sufficed, and that fact the Germans and Turks grasped at once and acted upon. But for the forcible opening of the Dardanelles it was essential, not merely to obtain naval command of the Straits, but military command of both shores, and that military command could not be obtained unless and until the Turkish army had been defeated, and decisively defeated, in the field. To hold one shore even with a naval force in the Straits would not have made the Dardanelles safe for merchant traffic, and it should have been evident that to attack the Turkish army on the peninsula of Gallipoli, close to its main base, and on the most difficult ground that the entire Turkish Empire presented, and to attack it in those circumstances with a force less than its own strength was inviting disaster. Much more should this have been evident when in the background there lay the still larger scheme of capturing Constantinople, which assuredly would not have been taken readily.

Not merely was the Gallipoli project not fully thought out; the preparations bore the traces of haste.

But e

if soun

has m

On the

for the

founde

to over

in trut

reach t

gunner

that a

against

within :

experier

advance

a point

while s

power o

be group

deemed

likely to

bardmen

ment of

served n

Previous.

through

a cargo o

enabled 1

lines of 1

of an ol

Lieut. He

the Strai

guardship

was rewa

time, fron

lay with t

were bety

And sa

On No

Such

Before everything this was a naval operation. Only when, by naval attack upon nodal points, the effective defence of Gallipoli by a Turkish force had been made impracticable could a military attack and occupation by British forces have become an acceptable proposition. It is now evident that the three phases of any well-planned scheme in point of method should have been:

(1) naval attack upon nodal points of the defence, not immediate attack upon shore batteries; (2) military assault in support and completion of the naval bombardment of nodal points; (3) naval attack upon the Narrows defences in conjunction with a land attack, and for the purpose of throwing troops over to commanding points on the Asiatic shore.

If the naval attack failed the enterprise failed. It was not when the British troops were withdrawn that the project was damned; the project was in fact dead and damned when the Allied battleships retired after their futile and misconceived bombardment of the

forts in the Narrows from within the Straits.

In the naval attack there were engaged altogether sixteen Allied battleships, twelve British and four French, mounting sixty-four guns equal to or greater in calibre than the heaviest ordnance on the forts. It is doubtful if on the forts or in the movable batteries supporting them there were half that number of very heavy pieces. The superiority of fire on the part of the Allied fleet was theoretically overwhelming. In addition to the mass of heavy guns the ships mounted a formidable medium and lighter armament.

The question of ships versus forts has given rise to some controversy. It has been contended that ships ought never to be pitted against batteries ashore, a doctrine which clearly limits the value and utility of warships. In support of that view the contention, backed by an active school of naval opinion, has been advanced that the aim of a fort, from a platform fixed and steady, is so much more reliable than the aim from a floating platform always in movement, that a fort can more than hold its own even with guns of smaller calibre.

on the grounds of the

led. It vn that ct dead d after of the

ogether d four eater in . It is atteries of very part of ng. In ounted

> rise to t ships nore, a lity of ention, s been n fixed n from ort can alibre.

But evidently the logical consequence of this opinion, if sound, is that a modern battleship as an engine of war has much less than the power it is supposed to have. On the other hand, naval gunnery is assumed to allow for the oscillations of the ship as a platform, to be founded on that allowance, and, if efficient, very largely to overcome it. The view referred to therefore comes in truth to this, that at its best naval gunnery cannot reach the same standard of efficiency in hits as land gunnery; is, indeed, so markedly below land gunnery that a piece of, say, 9.2 inches on land may be ranged against a piece of 15 inches at sea, if the latter be brought within range of the former. Proof of this theory from experience with modern ordnance is lacking. The proof advanced is out of date.

Such conclusions unfortunately leave out of account a point of great moment—that a fort is a fixed target, while ships are, in fact, movable forts. Their very power of movement is a signal advantage. They can be grouped and re-grouped as necessary, and at ranges deemed most advisable. What land fort ever built or likely to be built could withstand the combined bombardment of sixty forms.

bardment of sixty-four monster guns? On November 3, 1914, there was a long range bombardment of the forts at the entrance of the Straits. It served no purpose save to put the Turks on the alert. Previously to this a large German mail steamer had got through the blockade and reached Constantinople with a cargo of marine mines and heavy shells. The incident enabled the Turks to establish a field consisting of five lines of mines, and to guard the field they made use of an old warship, Messoudieh. On December 13, Lieut. Holbrook in command of a submarine, passed up the Straits beneath the minefield and torpedoed the guardship. The feat was brilliant, and Lieut. Holbrook was rewarded with the Victoria Cross, but up to this time, from the point of view of war, all the score really lay with the Turks.

And save for the attack upon Messoudieh there were between November 3, 1914, and the middle of

which

in par ships v

By

Kum I

shell, a

ment o

might 1

comple

They w

Lord N

battlesk

newest

On F

was ren

by Quee

at extre

forts con

guns of

attack s

Cornwal

the light

Charlem

the Cape

Triumph

el-Bahr.

been the

during t

repairing

time the

standing

sweeping

lighter cr

Duri

G

February, 1915, no further offensive naval operations except a seizure of the island of Tenedos.

During this interval of three and a half months a delay, largely due to discussion of the Dardanelles project and preparations, the Germans and Turks were hard at work re-fortifying both Gallipoli and the Straits. The British Government had entered on a war with Turkey without definite ideas of how such a war was to be carried on. In the blank the Dardanelles scheme had been pushed to the front. Both naval and military men had doubts, but do not seem to have

insisted upon them.

At length, however, a squadron of older battleships had been formed for the purpose, and dispatched to the Mediterranean. They were Inflexible, Agamemnon, Cornwallis, Vengeance and Triumph. In the Mediterranean the squadron was joined by the pre-Dreadnought French ships Bouvet, Suffren and Gaulois. The eight mounted together thirty 12-in. guns. But if there was substance in the view that ships ought not to be employed against forts, this armament against the reinforced enemy works was palpably inadequate. Triumph's four heavy guns were only 10-in. The British squadron was under the command of Vice-Admiral S. Carden; the French contingent under the command of Rear-Admiral Guepratte.

On February 19, at eight in the morning, the bombardment of the forts at the entrance of the Dardanelles opened. There were four of these works: on the European side that at Cape Helles, facing the Ægean and the batteries of Sedd-el-Bahr facing the Straits; on the Asiatic side the fort on the Kum Kale promontory, and the newer fort at Orkanieh, fronting the open sea. The forts mounted no armament equal to the 12-in. guns of the battleships, for during the first hours of the attack not a shot was fired in reply. Apparently all the forts were engaged by the squadron simultaneously, two ships attacking each work and evidently all the forts were repeatedly hit. Still it remained doubtful if they had been put out of action. In the afternoon,

GALLIPOLI: THE NAVAL OPERATIONS

therefore, six ships of the squadron closed in. Then at length the forts opened fire. Their shooting was poor, which may be attributed in part to the bombardment, in part to the movement of the ships. None of the ships was hit.

By sunset all the works had been silenced except Kum Kale. At nightfall the ships were withdrawn. The bombardment had involved a heavy expenditure of shell, and it seems a fair question whether the engagement of each fort in turn by the whole of the squadron might not have economised munitions and given a more

complete result.

During the next few days eight more ships arrived, They were Queen Elizabeth, Irresistible, Albion, Majestic Lord Nelson, Ocean and Prince George, and the French battleship Charlemagne. Queen Elizabeth mounted the newest 15-in. guns. These ships completed the force intended to attack the defence works in the Narrows.

On February 25 the bombardment of the outer forts was renewed. To begin with, part was taken in it only by Queen Elizabeth, Irresistible and Agamemnon. Firing at extreme range, they were beyond the reach of the hostile ordnance, for the total heavy armament of the forts consisted of ten 10.2-in. and four 9.2-in. guns. The guns of Queen Elizabeth having in a ninety minutes' attack silenced the Cape Helles batteries, Vengeance and Cornwallis were ordered to run closer in and deal with the lighter armament. At the same time, Suffren and Charlemagne closed in on the Asiatic forts, and after the Cape Helles work had been dealt with, Albion and Triumph stood in against the lighter batteries of Seddel-Bahr. In this second bombardment Agamemnon had been the only ship struck by a hostile shell. Though during the week's interval the Turks had been at work repairing the fortifications and remounting the guns, or mounting new ones, the hits were all on one side. This time the forts had been silenced altogether, notwithstanding that the attack had been sectional only. Minesweeping in the Straits covered by the ships and the lighter craft was at once entered upon. Next day, that

uropean and the on the ory, and pen sea. ne 12-in. rs of the ently all neously, all the

doubtful

ternoon,

R EAST

perations

onths a

rdanelles

rks were

and the

ed on a

v such a

rdanelles

aval and

to have

ttleships

ed to the

m. Corn-

erranean

t French

mounted

ubstance

l against

enemy

ir heavy

as under

French

ral Gue-

ombard-

rdanelles

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

having been completed, the ships proceeded to attack the inner fortifications.

The entrance to the Straits between Cape Helles and Kum Kale is not more than two and a half miles wide. but, within, the Asiatic shore sweeps away in the crescent known as Eren Keui Bay, and the channel expands to a breadth of nearly five miles. Then the opposite shores gradually approach until at the end of this outer section, the entrance to the Narrows, nine miles from Kum Kale, the width is rather less than one mile. The coast here on both sides consists of bold bluffs, Kilid Bahr on the European, and Chanak on the Asiatic shore. It was on these bluffs where there had been constructed the main The forts at Chanak looking down the fortifications. outer section of the Straits were understood to be armed with pieces of 14-in. calibre. Those on Kilid Bahr faced partly down the Straits, partly in the opposite direction so as to command the Narrows, that peculiar bend in the channel five miles in length which at its inner or northern end is marked by an outlet little wider than the access. Between the contracted inlet and the hardly less contracted outlet the Narrows expand to a breadth of more than two and a half miles.

The operations on February 26 were a reconnaissance. In advance of the main fortifications were Fort Dardanos on the Gallipoli shore, and Soghandere on the Asiatic shore. Albion, Vengeance, and Majestic were ordered to steam in and attack these works in order to ascertain their armament. It proved to be of no more than medium weight, but the attack drew the fire of batteries hitherto unlocated, and it became evident that the mere demolition of the permanent works would not The plan of the enemy clearly was to replace the destroyed forts by earthworks which might be abandoned when knocked to pieces, and reconstructed elsewhere. Activities of that description were afoot behind Kum Kale, and with the plain intention when the fleet entered the channel of opening an unexpected bombardment of it from the rear, and at close range. Landing parties of marines were accordingly thrown

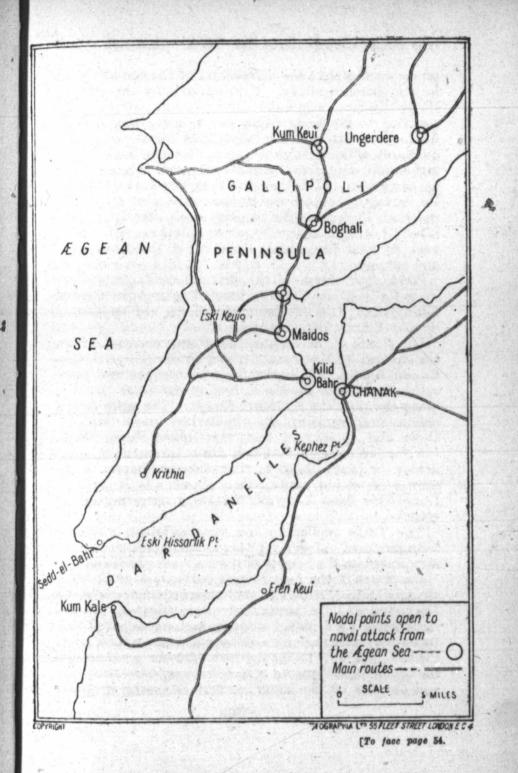
Kum Ka

R EAST

to attack

elles and iles wide. crescent inds to a te shores r section, ım Kale, past here r on the t was on he main own the e armed hr faced direction 4 nd in the northern access. ess conof more

issance. ardanos Asiatic lered to scertain re than atteries nat, the ıld not replace ght be tructed afoot hen the rpected range. thrown



ashore to complete the destruction of the enemy's guns in the entrance works. This, covered by the guns of

the battleships, they did.

Owing to northerly winds and a heavy sea, nothing further was attempted by the Allies for a week. But on March 4, the weather having moderated, Lord Nelson and Ocean went forward and once more threw landing parties ashore. This time, however, the Turks, realising the damaging character of the manœuvre, were prepared to resist in force. The landing party at Kum Kale, after a hot fight against superior numbers, were driven back to their boats with a loss of 47 killed, wounded and missing.

Next day, March 5, the first attack began on the main fortification. It was directed against the forts at Kilid Bahr. One of them was blown up, apparently

by a shell firing the magazine.

On March 6 the bombardment was resumed within the channel by Vengeance, Albion, Prince George, Majestic and Suffren. Neglecting the main fortifications, these ships dealt with Dardanos, Soghandere, and batteries along the shores of the outer Straits. The main fortifications were coincidentally attacked by Queen Elizabeth, Ocean and Agamemnon from the Gulf of Saros. From the farther side of Gallipoli they threw their shells across the peninsula on to the works at Chanak, which were well within range. One object was to prevent those forts from firing on the ships operating in the channel.

The Turks replied to this bombardment, not only from the forts, but with high angle fire from heavy howitzers posted on the heights of the Gallipoli peninsula.

On March 7 the four French battleships of the fleet steamed into the Straits and renewed the attack on Dardanos, and the works there were silenced. At the same time, Lord Nelson and Agamemnon engaged batteries re-established at the outer entrance on both sides. Chanak took part in the defence. On the previous day the works there appeared to have been seriously damaged, and the fire of the batteries, first becoming irregular,

had fi the gu Dur March batter put in bombe lines. of the Aga

chiefly Carder succee under March The wind

decided The consist Inflexion French the this istible

The Narrow heavy ron, clc formati demolit

To b ordname at a rai shorten irregula stances and as i The for

It washould

EAST

r's guns guns of

nothing
a. But
Nelson
landing
ealising
repared
Kale,
driven
ounded

on the orts at arently

within Majes, these tteries fortificabeth, From shells which revent in the

only nowitfleet k on

t the batsides.
day
aged,
gular,

GALLIPOLI: THE NAVAL OPERATIONS

had finally ceased. But it was now evident that all

the guns had not been put out of action.

During the next two days nothing was done, but on March 10 there was both a bombardment of enemy batteries which in the interval had for a third time been put into position at Cape Helles and Kum Kale, and a bombardment from the Gulf of Saros of the Bulair lines. On March 11 the batteries at the outer entrance of the Straits had once more been silenced.

Again there was an interval of inactivity. It arose chiefly from a change in the command. Admiral Carden, obliged to retire on account of ill-health, was succeeded by Vice-Admiral J. M. de Robeck. It/was under that officer that the attack was continued on

March 18.

The weather was favourable—the sea smooth, the wind light, and visibility good. Admiral de Robeck

decided upon an attack from within the channel.

The fleet was formed into three squadrons: the first consisting of Queen Elizabeth, Prince George, Lord Nelson, Inflexible, Agamemnon, and Triumph; the second of the French ships, Suffren, Bouvet, Gaulois and Charlemagne; the third of Albion, Ocean, Vengeance, Swiftsure, Irresistible and Majestic.

The plan was to attack the main fortifications of the Narrows. After the forts had been disabled by the heavy guns of the leading formation, the second squadron, closing in, was to attack at short range. The rear formation, supporting the second, was to finish off the

demolition of the defences.

To begin with, the attack went well. The powerful ordnance of the leading ships firing at visible targets, and at a range not exceeding eight miles, which was rapidly shortened to five, reduced the fire of the defences to irregularity and then to feebleness. In these circumstances the second squadron of French ships ran in, and as far as could be judged the manœuvre was effective. The forts on both sides made no reply.

It was now deemed advisable that the third squadron should advance. In those narrow waters, and with a

na

the

the

mo

cor

har

par

wit

froi

the

tha

wot T

in c

bear

atta

defe

current in the Straits averaging four knots per hour, the retirement of the second squadron to make way for the third was a movement that called for care. It was impossible to carry it out save at reduced speed. While the movement was in progress all the still serviceable ordnance on the defences re-opened. This counterattack, largely made with lighter ordnance, did no great material damage. Nor was it upon their guns that the defenders relied. In weight of fire they were outmatched The reliance was upon floating mines. The channel. crowded with ships having the smallest room in which to manœuvre, was a conjuncture plainly favourable for launching and sending down with the current mines enough to make the whole of the waters dangerous. Bouvet encountered one of these deadly obstacles. drifted into Eren Keui Bay and sank with a loss of some 600 men. Irresistible was struck by another and fell out of the line with a heavy list. Despite the fire of the forts, most of her crew were before she foundered got off by the torpedo craft, an act of cool intrepidity in accord with the traditions of the Navy. Meanwhile Ocean had also been mined, and foundered rapidly, though most of her crew were either taken off or picked up. After these losses, and in view of the dangers of the Channel, the fleet was withdrawn. The attempt to force the Straits was not renewed.

There are always reasons for a failure. In this instance the plan of attack disclosed two mistakes. It was a mistake to try to manœuvre so many heavy ships in a narrow part of the channel. Again the ships had not been prepared against the dangers of mines. Where rapid steaming was of no moment the ships might have been thus equipped. Seemingly, so long as the channel had been cleared by mine-sweepers beforehand, that was considered unnecessary. It was a fatal oversight.

But these were minor points in comparison with the lack of a scheme of attack, which, while envisaging the real difficulties independently of theories, would have brought the whole power of the fleet to bear from the first. With the immense range of modern naval ord-

ER EAST

r hour, the vay for the e. It was ed. While serviceable s counterd no great is that the utmatched e channel. in which urable for ent mines langerous. obstacles. s of some and fell fire of the ed got off in accord ile Ocean , though icked up. rs of the tempt to

s instance
It was a
hips in a
had not
Where
ght have
channel
that was
t.
with the
ging the
ild have
rom the

val ord-

GALLIPOLI: THE NAVAL OPERATIONS

nance the sixty-four and more heavy guns mounted by the ships could have been directed against the forts of the Narrows from the farther side of Gallipoli, and in the most destructive manner—by high-angle fire. Successive concentration shoots against particular defences could hardly have failed to demolish them. Not until this part of the work had been done ought an attack from within the Straits to have been attempted. The attack from within was essentially a second stage. And with the range of modern ordnance, the probabilities were that the entire fleet then proceeding up the Straits would have dealt successfully with temporary batteries.

The damage inflicted on the fleet by the fertifications in comparison with that inflicted by the fleet does not bear out the view that land forts are impregnable to sea attack, and it was not the strength of the Dardanelles defences which was the true cause of the failure.

and and in the same of the same and the same

The state of the second state of the second second

to a dark party made have but the best of the real of

es para la combinar a destro del meso este la caractería de la combinación de la combinación de la combinación La combinación de la

comments to their equipments to be delicated

ence of the season of the most constitute of the season of

to very nell oil good to have a self- if the best to

and the second s

when a common this man an look as a range familial.

THE THE REST WANT THE THE THE STREET STREET

CHAPTER

GALLIPOLI: THE LANDING

Effects of the Naval failure-Arrival of General Sir Ian Hamiltoncts of the Naval failure—Arrival of General Sir Ian Hamilton—His decision endorsed—His plans—Incomplete reconnaissance—The project primarily naval—General Hamilton's difficulties—Hasty dispatch of the British troops—The dispositions for landing round the "Southern toe"—Their defects—Casson's landing at Eski Hissarlik Point—Koe's success at Y Beach—Its tactical importance—Loss of the Y Beach position—An opportunity missed—The landings at X, V and W Beaches—Faults of the operations—Attack of the Royal Fusiliers on Tekke Burnu—The "Lancashire Landing"—Tekke Burnu taken—The struggle at V Beach—A costly scheme—Landing of the Anzacs at Kaha V Beach-A costly scheme-Landing of the Anzacs at Kaba Tepe—Its success.

EITHER, after the events of March 18, there should have been a renewal of the naval attack on effective lines, or the Gallipoli project should have been given up. Unfortunately, the contrary course was resolved upon. Not merely had the true causes of the naval failure escaped notice; the fact was overlooked that a preliminary naval success alone could render military co-operation advisable.

General Sir Ian Hamilton, who had been appointed to the command of the military part of the expedition leaving London with his Staff on March 13, and travelling by way of Marseilles, had reached the base at Tenedos on March 17. The naval attack by the entire fleet had been fixed for the next day. The General was a spectator of it. Previously he had been informed of the course of operations up to that time by Admirals de Robeck and Guepratte, and had conferred with General d'Amade, commanding the French military contingent.

Afte dedu comi to fo Th To Gene of a cable outw feasil Sei abruj great is tru

here cours it is bread with place limite adjac is Su flat, & round hower both : looked Of

Hami or ne Two : conte beach to Es 300 J lookin rising points

After the attack he cabled to London his "reluctant deduction" that the whole of the troops under his command would be required to enable the fleet effectively to force the Dardanelles.

This decision the British Cabinet accepted.

To begin with, and before sending his cablegram, General Hamilton had to satisfy himself that the landing of a large force on the peninsula of Gallipeli was practicable. With that object in view, he sailed along its outward shores. His conclusion was that a landing was

feasible at the extreme southern point.

Seen from the sea the peninsula appears to rise abruptly out of the blue waters of the Ægean, which is of great depth. The shores of Gallipoli are bluffs, not, it is true, of imposing height, but steep, and only broken here and there by ravines marking the beds of watercourses. The peninsula, in fact, is a tableland. Though it is fifty-two miles in extreme length, and varies in breadth from three miles to twelve, presenting therefore with sinuosities more than 150 miles of shore line, the places apparently adapted to landing troops are only a limited number of small coves, all commanded from adjacent bluffs. The one exception of any consequence is Suvla Bay, on the western side. The shore here is flat, and just beyond it is a small extent of plain, surrounding a salt marsh. General Hamilton at the time, however, rejected the idea of a landing at Suvla because both from either side and from inland the plain is overlooked by hills.

Of the seemingly feasible landing places, General Hamilton picked out six as probably suitable, all at or near the extreme southern point of the peninsula. Two faced the Straits; the others the open sea. The contemplated landings in the Straits were a small beach at the east end of Morto Bay and adjacent to Eski Hissarlik Point, and a stretch of sandy beach, 300 yards wide, just east of Sedd-el-Bahr. Overlooking the beach last named was a semicircle of rising ground. Morto Bay extended between the two points. Facing the sea it appeared feasible to land

milton—ssance—culties—landing at tactical ortunity of the nu—The tggle at t Kaba

hould ective en up. upon. ailure liminration

inted lition elling nedos t had specf the ls de neral gent.

troops at a small sandy bay between Helles Burnu and Tekke Burnu; at a break in the cliffs half a mile farther to the north and on the other side of Tekke Burnu; at the mouth of a stream indenting the cliffs. yet another two miles to the north; at a gully again a mile and a half farther on, and overlooked by steep bluffs overgrown with scrub; and finally besides these points, at the break now known as Anzac Cove, ten

miles up the coast in the direction of Suvla.

As to the proposed landing places within the Straits, the disadvantage was that they could be commanded by the enemy's fire from the Asiatic shore. The others, General Hamilton perceived, had already been fortified. Trenches and lines of wire entanglement were plainly to be seen from on board ship, and through a glass he made out what appeared to be gun emplacements and infantry redoubts. But as he afterwards related in his despatch dealing with the landing operations, "of the full extent of these defences, and of the forces available to man them, there was no possibility of judging except

by practical test."

It can hardly be said that such a reconnaissance was conclusive or satisfactory. General Hamilton evidently felt it was not. Two presumptions, however, were even at this time sufficiently clear; first that the enemy expected a land attack in force, as his preparations showed, and next that he had available and at hand a force in his opinion strong enough to repel such an attack. No other conclusion could in the circumstances be justified, and the more so since no attempt at a diversion of the enemy strength had been made. The General's judgment seems to have been that his own covering forces on landing would forthwith have to face the resistance of some 84,000 Turkish troops backed by 100 guns. This was an under estimate, more especially as regards artillery. The enemy had, in fact, taken advantage of successive delays to establish on the peninsula a mass of heavy guns, and instead of 100 pieces he had more nearly three times that number. Moreover, he had hurried the transport and emplacement

Allied such W by tl point from hamp

of thi

muni and v ment the p was n appea spot, comm becom

It is placed saying happil There invest amphi traditi that t a Gen officer did no that en Diffi

tion in sufficie tion; prepar the diff as far indeed. attemp But

EAST

Burnu f a mile

f Tekke

he cliffs

again a

y steep

es these

Straits.

manded

others.

ortified.

plainly lass he

nts and

l in his

of the

railable

except

ce was

dently

e even

enemy

ations

nand a

ch an

at a

o face

acked

specitaken

1 the

mber.

ment

The s own

of this artillery, well knowing that bombardment by the Allied fleet in support of the land attack would render such work dangerous and difficult.

Why, in the meantime, was there no bombardment by the fleet of Maidos and Chanak and other nodal points, seeing that with the naval guns it was practicable from the Gulf of Saros, and seeing that it must have hampered, not merely the transport of hostile guns and munitions, but of supplies of all sorts, and of troops, and why was there in the meantime no such bombardment of the town of Gallipoli, and of the main road along the peninsula from north to south? The fact that this was not done, or at all events not effectually done, appears to be proof that, whether at home or on the spot, and even at this early stage, the error was committed of looking upon these operations as having become primarily military with the fleet as a support.

It is but just to point out that General Hamilton was placed in a difficulty which he was well warranted in saying had no precedent in military history, and unhappily it was a difficulty over which he had no control. There was a lack of unified authority; no commander invested with power over the whole proceedings as an amphibious undertaking. The Navy is in British tradition the senior Service, and it is at variance with that tradition to place an Admiral under the orders of a General. There is no need to infer that the two officers, Vice-Admiral de Robeck and General Hamilton, did not work cordially together. They did. But was that enough?

Difficult in any case, and there is no more risky operation in war, the landing was thus handicapped by insufficient reconnaissance; by lack of necessary information; but most of all by failure to check the enemy's preparations. Sir Ian Hamilton proposed to get out of the difficulty by throwing his troops ashore en masse, and as far as possible suddenly and by surprise. This, indeed, was the only way out short of giving up the attempt.

But to do that another necessity had to be met. The

troops, sent out from England as they were ready, and with a haste which was in truth a loss of speed, had to be sorted on arrival. To do so on the Island of Mudros. already occupied by the Australian contingent, dispatched with the same haste from Egypt, proved out of the question. The transports, waiting to disbark their men, were therefore with the approval of the authorities at Home ordered from Mudros to Egypt, and the troops landed at Alexandria. Unfortunately, the necessity involved another month's delay, and that month in the enemy's preparations made all the difference. The time sufficient to take the British troops to Egypt, re-sort them and bring them back, was time enough for the Turks to transport to Gallipoli whatever reinforcements they might consider advisable. In that respect they were accepting no risks. If we, on our part, under-judged the difficulties, they did not underjudge British troops. The Germans had by this learned more than enough in France to be tempted into any such blunder. The one marvel of the matter, indeed, is that the British troops surpassed even this estimate of their prowess, and that a hostile strength calculated with certainty to drive them back into the sea did not do There are very few precedents in military history for a force making good its footing in the circumstances against more than its own numbers.

The British troops landed at Alexandria on March 24. It was not until April 23 that the force designed to cover the landing, the 29th Division, left Mudros for the landing beaches. Well have the 29th Division been named the "Immortal." They were to undertake a feat of arms next to impossible, and, in fact, considered by

the enemy utterly impossible.

Yet these intrepid men, faced with that duty, never flinched. The leading of a forlorn hope could hardly have been more desperate. The enemy's defences had been consistently strengthened, though we had guns enough to have pounded them to powder. Preliminary bombardment—as distinguished from that covering the actual landing-seems to have been decided against on

for t no se might Ap defini milita ton v Then officer propo eleven been (at one The place ashore Eski l (S Bei alread two n These than points. line of prelimi the op once of of disse enemy

the g

Ther Narrow to Sede passes from it observa landing on the (Y Bea

forceme

EAST

dy, and

had to

Mudros,

nt, dis-

disbark

of the

Egypt,

inately,

nd that

e differ-

oops to

as time

hatever

In that on our

under-

learned

ny such

is that

of their

d with

not do

history

stances

rch 24.

ned to

ros for

n been

a feat

red by

never

hardly

es had

guns

ninary

ng the

nst on

ved out

the ground that it would disclose the points picked out for the operation. But those points could have been no secret to the enemy in any event, and bombardment might have been employed to assist a surprise.

Apparently another reason was that nothing was very definitely known to the fleet concerning the intended military operations until April 10, when General Hamilton with his Staff returned to Mudros from Egypt. Then committees, composed both of naval and of military officers, were formed to work out the details of the proposed landings. This working out occupied another eleven or twelve days. On April 22 the details had all been determined upon. The landing of so large a force at one time was of course a complicated proceeding.

The plan of the landing contemplated in the first place and at daybreak on April 25 throwing troops ashore simultaneously at the small beach adjacent to Eski Hissarlik Point on the eastern end of Morto Bay (S Beach) and at the mouth of the stream which, as already described, formed an indentation in the bluffs two miles to the north of Tekke Burnu (Y Beach). These landings, however, were intended to be no more than a covering for the main operation. The two points, it will be observed, were at the extremes of the line of landing places picked out as practicable. A preliminary attack at these outside points would, in the opinion of General Hamilton, have the effect at once of protecting the flanks of the main landing force, of disseminating, as he expressed it, the troops of the enemy and of interrupting the arrival of enemy reinforcements.

There is a main road running from Maidos on the Narrows, south-westward along the toe of the peninsula to Sedd-el-Bahr, its extreme promontory. This road passes just to the west of the height of Achi Baba and from it as it descends towards Sedd-el-Bahr there is observation of the seaward approaches to all the five landing places from the beach at Eski Hissarlik Point on the one side to the indentation at Gurkha bluffs (Y Beach) on the other. In the circumstances it was

expecting much to suppose that the enemy would be

disconcerted by preliminary feints.

The real means of hindering the movement of the enemy's reinforcements was by naval fire to destroy Maidos and the roads and road junctions leading to and from it, as well as the light railway connecting Kalid Bahr on the Narrows with Sedd-el-Bahr. This light railway passed to the east side of Achi Baba, as the main road passed to the west. Chanak also should have been destroyed. With the enormous armament of the fleet enemy movements on any part of the peninsula south of Maidos might, it is not unreasonable to conclude, have been rendered extremely difficult and hazardous. The extreme distance across the peninsula south of Achi Baba from the Ægean to the Dardanelles is less than five miles.

The plan, however, was to preface the landings by a thirty minutes' bombardment of the defences. This was hardly adequate in any event, and more than ever inadequate if the theory of the inutility of naval attack on land defences had the justification attributed to it.

The covering force had arrived from Egypt off the Island of Tenedos on the morning of April 24. During the afternoon of that day they were transferred to the lighter warships and mine sweepers, in which it had been decided that they were to approach the shore. Each towing a number of cutters and other small boats, these ships at midnight slipped their cables, and under the escort of the third squadron of the fleet seven battleships and four cruisers, steamed towards the rendezvous at Cape Helles. General Hamilton records that the cables were slipped silently, and that the passage was made under slow steam. These were advisable precautions, but if there existed any idea that the enemy was being taken by surprise it was, as events proved, without foundation.

As timed, the rendezvous was reached just before dawn. There was no wind. The sea was as unruffled as a surface of glass. Light mists hung motionless over R EAST

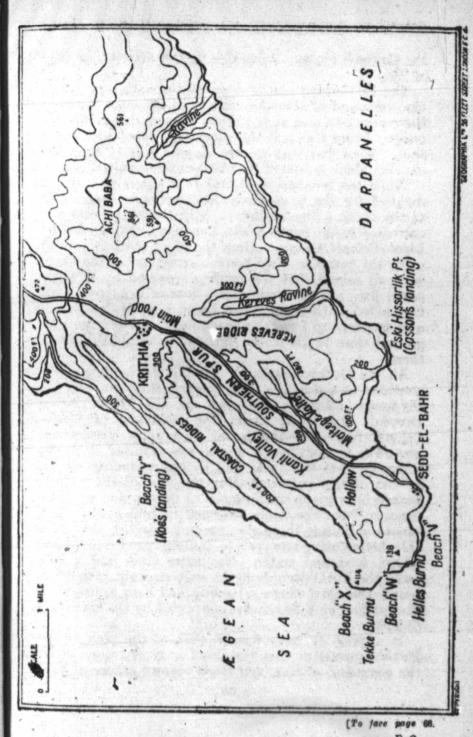
would be

destroy
g to and
ng Kalid
his light
the main
ave been
the fleet
south of
de, have
us. The
of Achi
ess than

s. This nan ever f naval tributed

off the During I to the it had shore. I boats, I under seven ds the records passage visable at the events

before truffled ss over



the Gallipoli bluffs. Ashore no sign of activity, or even of life.

His

The

held

wot

line

as t

his

cou

his

did

whi

near

was

to i

and

enen

had

force

serve

have

Krit

been

to vi

had

the s

day

Koe'

south

of su

been

That

vergi

attac

was

assign

Achi

flat t

clear

But

As

The battleships and cruisers of the squadron, under the command of Rear-Admiral R. E. Wemyss, took up their positions and at the signal opened fire simultaneously. From Gallipoli the enemy answered with not a shot. Some batteries on the Asiatic side of the Dardanelles alone indicated that he was on the alert.

While the bombardment was in progress the troops detailed for the preliminary landings were transferred to the boats. The landing at Eski Hissarlik Point was entrusted to the South Wales Borderers, commanded by Lieut.-Colonel Casson. Here the chief obstacle proved to be the current. Two hours elapsed before the Corps were all ashore, but the landing, covered by a heavy naval fire, was effected with a loss of not more than fifty killed and wounded, and Lieut.-Colonel Casson was able to push up from the beach and, seizing some high ground close to De Totts Battery, to establish himself there.

At the Gurkha bluffs (Y Beach) the landing party consisted of the King's Own Scottish Borderers and the Plymouth (Marine) Battalion of the Royal Naval Division, the whole under the command of Lieut.-Colonel Koe. The bluffs, at this point precipitous, proved to be undefended, and it was surmised, evidently correctly, that the Turks had judged a landing here to be out of the question. But the face of the cliffs is broken by various small cracks or gullies, and up these the men from the boats swarmed in Indian file. Fortunate in finding the higher ground deserted, they were able, before being attacked, to haul up reserves of ammunition, food and water. Not more than half a mile away the Turks were lying in wait strongly entrenched round the cove where a landing had been anticipated. The landing at Y Beach was supported by the battleship Goliath.

It appears to have formed part of the plan of the British operations that the small body of troops under the command of Koe, and those thrown ashore at Eski

68

or even

, under took up tultaneh not a te Dar-

troops
sferred
int was
ided by
proved
c Corps
heavy
te than
on was
he high
himself

party and the Naval Lieut.-pitous, idently here to cliffs is a these For-

y were ammua mile enched ipated. tleship

> of the under t Eski

Hissarlik Point, should get into touch with each other. They were separated by nearly five miles of country held by strong hostile forces, and to effect a contact would have to cross and get astride of the Turks' main line of communication with Sedd-el-Bahr. Extravagant as this notion was, Koe made an attempt to carry out his instructions. Since Casson meanwhile had all he could do to beat off the attacks upon him and maintain his ground which, though isolated during that time, he did for two days, the interposition of the Turkish force which had been watching the presumed landing place near Gurkha bluffs frustrated the manœuvre. Koe was obliged to withdraw to the head of the bluffs, and to improvise defences. Time, however, had been lost, and his men were fatigued. If, having drawn away the enemy from the cove they had been watching, advantage had been taken of that circumstance to throw another force ashore at that point, the manœuvre would have served a valuable purpose. A strong position might have been established on the enemy's flank, close to Krithia, but the landing arrangements elsewhere had been so elaborated that it was not thought advisable to vary them, even though this favourable contingency had arisen.

As might have been anticipated from this beginning, the sequel was unfortunate. On the afternoon of that day (April 25) the Turks threw a strong force against Koe's position from the village of Krithia, on the south-western slope of Achi Baba, and the opportunity of supporting or reinforcing Koe's troops not having been taken, he was attacked in overwhelming strength. That afternoon the assault began, backed by a converging fire of hostile field artillery. Despite that, one attack after another was beaten off. Very little aid was rendered by the guns of the fleet. The reason assigned is that the country between the bluffs and Achi Baba forms a wide hollow. Seemingly with their flat trajectory it was thought that the naval guns to clear the bluffs must fire beyond the enemy lines. But why was not high-angle fire resorted to? It is

manifest that the enemy surmised that this tiny British force was "in the air," and he was resolved to destroy it, for the position it occupied was important—much more important than those marked out as the main

the

soug at t

form

pose

and

whe

narr

to g

men

arc 1

had

prefe

follo

tops

shelt

the e

men

more

from

whol

the

Koe

point have

diffic

on t

stanc

enem

durir

the heav

in th

prepa

idea

Th

H

 \mathbf{T}

landing places.

Night fell and still the fight continued. Fresh relays of Turkish troops came into action. The attacks were led by parties of bombers. In one of these attacks there was in the midst of the assaulting column a pony carrying a machine-gun. The animal was led alive across the British trenches. In the centre of the position, and in a darkness lit only by the flashes of guns and rifles, amid the roar and confusion of a hand-to-hand struggle, the machine-gun suddenly opened fire. A party of British soldiers promptly closed in with the bayonet. In a matter of seconds the machine-gun team were annihilated. With the bayonet the Turks were driven out. But they came on again, and though repulsed, brought forward fresh troops. So the fight went on throughout the night. When day broke the British still held their trenches, filled with their own and the enemy's dead and dying, and littered with all the débris of the battle. They held on, worn out but grim, and so terrible that the enemy had at last for the time relinquished his effort to oust them. They had been reduced, however, to half their strength. The gallant Koe himself had fallen early in the struggle from a wound that unhappily proved mortal. In the circumstances, only one of two courses was open; either to throw ashore reinforcements, or to evacuate. The first, and better, course, was unfortunately, not adopted. Nothing, therefore, remained for it but to re-embark. Four warships, Goliath, Dublin, Amethyst and Sapphire, were told off for the duty. A rearguard of the King's Own Scottish Borderers was formed to cover the withdrawal, and kept the enemy at bay while, with the help of naval beach parties, who displayed great gallantry, first the wounded, then the munitions, or what was left of them, then the stores, were passed down the steep gullies to the boats. The men followed, and last

EAST

British

lestroy

-much

main

relays

s were

ittacks

a pony

alive

sition.

as and

o-hand

party

yonet.

were

driven

oulsed, ent on

British &

nd the

ll the

grim,

e time

been

allant

om a

rcum-

ner to

first,

opted.

bark.

phire,

Ling's

with-

e help

antry, t was

n the

the rearguard, fighting step by step the enemy, who now sought to gain the tops of the bluffs in order to snipe

at the boats as they pulled off shore. This episode had proved that with the peculiar formation of the bluffs along this coast—a ridge interposed between an inland depression on the one side and the sea on the other—it was in truth a safer landing where the cliffs, though perpendicular, were broken by narrow gullies affording an ascent at an angle, than to get ashore at beaches obstructed by wire entanglements and other devices, and each commanded by an arc of defences on the higher land. Where Koe's force had got ashore without a single casualty, 'owing to the preference of this point to the defended cove, it is evident that, the gullies secured, other troops could follow. So long as the enemy could be kept off the tops of the bluffs such troops would in landing be sheltered by the cliffs from his fire. And manifestly the enemy realised at once upon the apparition of Koe's men that here had been left a dangerous loophole; the more dangerous because it was not more than a mile from Krithia and the main road and threatened the whole defence of the southern point of the peninsula.

Hence the heavy sacrifices he made to repair his oversight. That very fact ought to have demonstrated the importance of holding on to such an acquisition. Koe promptly reinforced, and pressure applied at this point, what are now called the main landings might have been carried out with no more than moderate difficulty and expense. General Hamilton, commenting on this affair, observed, quite justly, that "the plucky stand made at Y Beach detained heavy columns of the enemy from arriving at the southern end of the peninsula during a very touch and go struggle." Precisely, but the heavy columns detained might have been still heavier. Fortune had offered a chance which, immersed in the execution of his plans, the General proved unprepared to seize

prepared to seize.

This unpreparedness seemingly was related to the idea that a force landed at different, though contiguous,

points along a coast is by that disposition divided, and General Hamilton's aim was primarily to keep his troops together, and form a continuous front extending across the peninsula from coast to coast. But a force dependent upon communications by sea though put ashore at different points is not by that fact divided even in a military sense. Command of the sea constitutes a connecting link. Converging, yet, because of sea command, connected, attacks from different points would have been much more difficult for the enemy to resist. It would have been the less easy for him to discover from which particular quarter the next blow was to be delivered, and the result would have given greater freedom in attack because offering wider alternatives.

to

We can now pass on to the story of the main landings

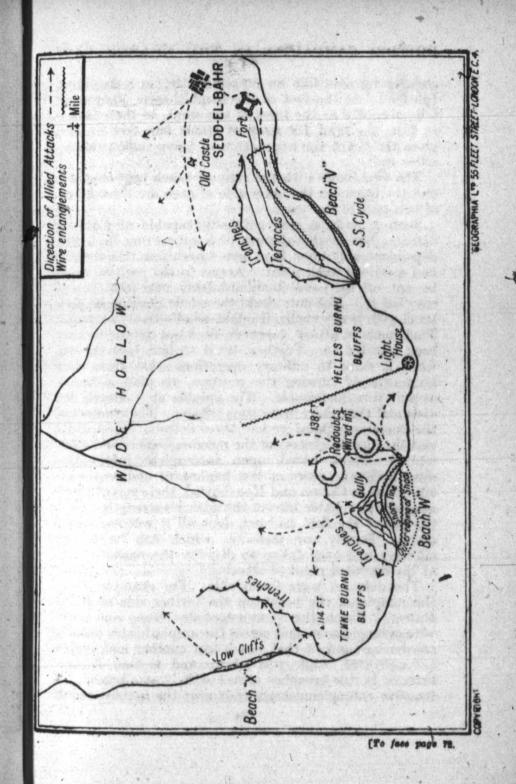
at the three beaches selected for that purpose.

At the extreme south-western point of Gallipoli there are two adjacent promontories, each presenting on its seaward face a bold bluff. One, looking towards the Ægean, is named by the Turks Tekke Burnu: the other. just to the south-east and facing towards the entrance of the Dardanelles, Helles Burnu. Tekke Burnu is 114, Helles Burnu 188 feet high. On what may be called the outer side of Tekke Burnu, fronting the sea, is a strip of shore, X Beach, some 600 feet in length, and 30 feet in depth on the average, and behind the strip of beach a low cliff. Again, between Tekke Burnu and Helles Burnu is another strip (W Beach) rather more than 1,000 fect in length, and varying in breadth from 35 to 120 feet. The depth is greatest in the centre, for at this point there is a break in the cliffs formed by a gully and at the foot of the break a small range of sand dunes. At either end of the beach, where it narrows, the cliffs become precipitous. Once more on the farther side of Helles Burnu, facing the Dardanelles, is a third strip of shore (V Beach) also rather more than 1,000 feet in length, but narrow and the width, nearly uniform, not being more than 80 feet. This beach, a fine sand, is nearly level. Its background consists of a depression rising in grass grown and roughly semiEAST

ed, and eep his tending a force t ashore en in a a conmand, we been would which livered, lom in

indings

i there on its ds the other, trance is 114, called a, is a h, and trip of u and more from sentre, and by age of ere it are on nelles, than nearly ach, a sts of semi-



circular terraces like an amphitheatre, to a height of 100 feet. At the foot of the amphitheatre the ground falls abruptly to the level of the sand, so that, looked at from the sand, the drop of about four feet in level gives the beach the appearance of being surrounded by a low wall.

The two bluffs with the strip of beach between them and the beach on the outer side of each are the features

of this part of the coast.

Such a position was naturally capable of a strong defence, but in the absence of a supporting fleet, and dependent only upon land communications, the defence had a serious weak point. Access to the position could be cut off by naval bombardment, were that means resorted to. Not only could the whole position be plastered with heavy shells, it might be effectively barraged. That mode of attack, however, does not appear to have been resorted to. Further, until it had been shown, when it came to military operations, that there were no means of turning the position, to plan a frontal assault was inadvisable. The episode at Y Beach had disclosed that there were such means. The conduct of the operations therefore had three defects. First, there was the incompleteness of the reconnaissances and information. Plans based upon incomplete information must always be more or less haphazard and as the instructions to Casson and Koe showed, there was at Headquarters no reliable idea of the enemy's strength. Next the fire of the fleet had not done all it was capable of Thirdly, no measures which can be termed effective had been taken to disperse the enemy's force at the intended point of attack.

The defences were formidable. For example, along the margin of the beach on the farther side of Helles Burnu (V Beach) there was a specially strong and heavy wire entanglement, and across the amphitheatre forming the background of that beach ran another and similar entanglement, while just above and beyond it were lines of hostile trenches armed with "pom-poms." A traverse entanglement also ran near the eastern end of

the beach fr the Turkish formed, as it sort of comp convert into the two head network just second entai the water's been hollowe machine-gun. two infantry ment 20 fee been carried edge, market to prevent a the one side defences at t much as they

The beach had also been have expected judging that obstruction, with W and cliffs in the oin the other.

In fact, he proved rather otherwise. I at daybreak rangement we pontoon raft parties, each beach workin (Anson Batta stood close in action swept summit of Togot ashore we

the beach from the margin uphill to the wire covering the Turkish trenches. The three lines of obstruction formed, as it were, three sides of a parallelogram, and a sort of compound, which the enemy plainly intended to convert into an abattoir. As for the beach between the two headlands (W Beach), there was a barbed wire network just below the surface of the water, and a second entanglement of considerable breadth close to the water's edge. Both faces of the gully besides had been hollowed out into caves, in each of which was a machine-gun. Again, on the top of Helles Burnu were two infantry redoubts, and round each a wire entanglement 20 feet broad. A wire entanglement, too, had been carried along the top of the bluff to its seaward edge, marked by the lighthouse. The intention was to prevent any British force moving from W Beach on the one side of the bluff to V Beach on the other. These defences at the time of the attack were standing very much as they had been made.

The beach on the outer side of Tekke Burnu (X Beach) had also been fortified, but the Turks do not appear to have expected a very sharp attack at this point, probably judging that the line of low cliffs would be a sufficient obstruction. They were evidently concerned chiefly with W and V Beaches, because of the break in the cliffs in the one instance and the semicircular depression

in the other.

In fact, however, the line of low cliffs at X Beach proved rather an advantage to the landing force than otherwise. The troops detailed to be thrown ashore at daybreak here were the Royal Fusiliers, and the arrangement was that they were to be towed ashore on pontoon rafts from H.M.S. Implacable and in two parties, each one-half the battalion, accompanied by a beach working detachment of the Royal Naval Division (Anson Battalion). To cover these landings Implacable stood close inshore, and with her whole armament in action swept the tops of the cliffs and the slopes and summit of Tekke Burnu. Thus supported, the troops got ashore with only slight losses. On Tekke Burnu

77

EAST

eight of ground , looked in level nded by

en them features

strong eet, and defence on could means be plasarraged. to have shown, re were frontal ach had nduct of st, there id inforrmation. the int Head-. Next pable of termed

e, along f Helles d heavy forming similar it were ns." A

's force

the Turks had entrenched themselves in positions from which they could sweep the beach end on. Consequently, the Fusiliers at once moved forward to attack the enemy's trenches on the bluff, and carried them. Strong Turkish reinforcements, however, speedily put in an appearance, and the Fusiliers were obliged to give ground. While the fighting was in progress the remainder of the 87th Brigade (two battalions) under the command of Brigadier-General Marshall, had been put ashore. In conjunction with the Fusiliers, these troops by the end of the day had cleared the slope of Tekke Burnu, and the country beyond the low cliffs to a depth of half a mile. On the lines thus established they entrenched themselves. Though wounded during the engagement General Marshall continued in command.

The beach between Tekke Burnu and Helles Burnu has been called the "Lancashire Landing" because the troops told off to lead the "forlorn hope" there were the 1st Battalion of the Lancashire Fusiliers, under the command of Major Bishop. The four companies of the battalion were distributed into thirty-two ship's cutters, and the cutters attached by fours to eight picket boats. The picket boats with their tows made for the shore

in line abreast.

It was now six o'clock and full daylight, and the whole movement was plainly visible to the enemy. Nevertheless, as the picket boats headed for shore not a shot was fired. On both sides ominous silence. The warships covering the landing were standing closer in behind

the tows; the enemy reserving his fusillade.

The "Lancashire Landing" is fronted by a stretch of shallow water, and as already noted the enemy had taken advantage of that fact to put down submerged entanglements. Since, owing to the shoal, the picket boats could not approach the shore because of their draft, the tows had to be cast off and the cutters separated to pull in. It was a race for life. Twenty-four, carrying three companies of the battalion, headed straight on; eight others, carrying the remaining company, and with them Brigadier-General Hare command-

ing the 88th Burnu. A f the first amo against the sides—from the enemy p war opened every calibre was slashed bursting high and raked. working like the submerg set foot on th ment there that seemed ever, the con found itself to fire, and, abl made it too their forces. of the ships |

As the ma end of the those of the either there, these positio they proceed Turkish tren three lines of line, however this end of demolished, landed and trenches the exploded. N of the assaul the Tekke I A little befor and a junct EAST ons from Conseo attack d them. dily put liged to ress the s) under ad been rs, these slope of ow cliffs ablished d during mmand. s Burnu ause the ere were nder the es of the

he whole levertheshot was warships behind

cutters,

et boats.

he shore

stretch emy had bmerged e picket of their cutters Twenty-, headed ing commmanding the 88th Brigade, pulled towards the cliffs of Tekke Burnu. A few moments elapsed at the outside before the first among the twenty-four cutters was brought up against the underwater obstructions. Then from all sides—from the bluffs, the gully and the sand dunes the enemy poured in a hurricane of shot. The men-ofwar opened at the same time with their armament of every calibre. The wire entanglement along the beach was slashed with shell, the gully became an inferno of bursting high explosives; the sand dunes were searched and raked. Amid this tornado the Lancashire Fusiliers, working like men possessed, hacked their way through the submerged obstructions. Many fell, but the rest set foot on the sand. The broad belt of visible entanglement there had still to be negotiated. It was a feat that seemed humanly impossible. Fortunately, however, the company which had steered towards the cliffs found itself to a certain extent sheltered from the enemy's fire, and, able from this position to enfilade the beach, made it too perilous for the Turks to throw forward their forces. The hostile fire had been checked by that of the ships but not subdued.

As the manœuvre of collecting under the cliffs at one end of the beach was found to afford protection, so those of the battalion who were still afoot gathered either there, or under the cliffs at the farther end. From these positions, the companies having been reformed, they proceeded, after a breathing space, to assault the Turkish trenches. At the Tekke Burnu end there were three lines of these barring access to the height. One line, however, was carried after another. Meanwhile at this end of the beach, the obstructions having been demolished, more troops of the 88th Brigade had been landed and pushed forward. Between the lines of trenches the enemy had laid land mines, which he exploded. None of these devices checked the impetus of the assault. By ten in the forenoon the defences on the Tekke Burnu side of the gully had been cleared. A little before noon the top of Tekke Burnu was gained, and a junction effected with the troops of the 87th

Brigade, who had come up from the other side. The bluff had been won.

Under the cliffs at the farther end of the beach meanwhile the smaller body of the Lancashire Fusiliers found themselves held up by the wire entanglements and too weak to force a way through. Helles Burnu and its approaches were therefore laid under a heavy bombardment, and covered by this a battalion of the Worcesters was landed. At two in the afternoon they advanced to the assault. Here also the defence proved to have been shaken. Two hours later the hill with its redoubts was in the hands of the assaulting troops. The British line was pushed as far as the lighthouse.

Unfortunately, the attempt to land at V Beach on the farther side of Helles Burnu had not prospered, though intended to be the most important of the three disbarkations. There were told off for it the Dublin Fusiliers, the Munster Fusiliers, half a battalion of the Hampshires, the West Riding Field Company, and other details.

The arrangements for putting these forces ashore were first that three companies of the Dublins were to be towed in boats, and next that the collier, River Clyde, having the remainder of the troops between decks, was to stand close in shore. Through large openings cut in her sides for the purpose the men were to pass by means of gangways on to lighters which she had in tow. Having reached land and discharged their freights, the lighters were to be so placed as to form a floating bridge between the ship and the sand. Finally, when this disbarkation had been managed, the rest of the covering force was to be brought ashore in tows from the attendant warships.

Much reliance seems to have been placed on this

scheme. It did not work as anticipated.

River Clyde reached the beach simultaneously with the first boats, which were delayed by the current, and as at the "Lancashire Landing," the enemy held his fire until the leading boat touched ground. Then the terraces of the amphitheatre blazed out, and the narrow strip of sand was lashed from end to end by a storm of shot. Those the entangle the low wall The boats w

And owin steady four in position no easy mat centrated la man of the fit party, hower Unwin, R.N ship, stood u Eventually t

On its cormustered to shore. To g seconds at swept by fire company w between the which the r second lighte

All the san company of at the doubl This has bee it was proba movement by moorings by was crowded lighter neare adrift. Ever water, and yo enemy's bulle of the men equipment, le Some contriv down by their

Again, thou

EAST

The

e beach

Fusiliers

lements

Burnu

1 heavy

of the

on they

proved

with its

troops.

on the

though

sbarka-

iers, the

pshires,

re were

e to be

· Clyde,

ks, was

ngs cut

pass by

had in

reights,

floating

, when

of the

vs from

on this

y with

nt, and

ield his

nen the

narrow

torm of

ise.

shot. Those of the Dublins who survived broke through the entanglement at the water's edge and dashed for the low wall or escarpment at the foot of the depression. The boats were shot to pieces.

And owing to the Dardanelles current, running at a steady four knots per hour, the placing of the lighters in position between River Clyde and the shore proved no easy matter. The enemy's fire was naturally concentrated largely upon the man at work, and every man of the first naval working party went down. Another party, however, at once took their places. Commander Unwin, R.N., captain of the River Clyde, leaving the ship, stood under a heavy fire, up to his waist in water. Eventually the work was carried through.

On its completion a company of the Munsters were mustered to dash across the extemporised gangway for shore. To gain the beach with a run was a question of seconds at most. The gangway, nevertheless, was swept by fire from right, left and centre. Most of the company were killed or wounded. Unfortunately, between the first and second lighter there was a gap which the men had to negotiate by jumping. The second lighter also did not reach the beach.

All the same, the effort was persisted in, and a second company of the Munsters mustered. As they crossed at the double, the moorings of the lighters gave way. This has been attributed entirely to the current, but it was probably also due in part to the strain of rapid movement by a mass of men, and the cutting of the moorings by shot. At all events, whilst the "bridge" was crowded with this second contingent, those on the lighter nearest the shore suddenly found themselves adrift. Every moment carried them farther into deep water, and yet to stay on the lighters, a target for the enemy's bullets, was to be shot for a certainty. Many of the men consequently, though loaded with their equipment, leaped from sheer desperation into the sea. Some contrived to reach the shore. Most, weighed down by their packs, were drowned.

Again, though shot and shell were being poured in,

Main Roads-

SCALE

the lighters were hauled into position, and refixed, and a third company of the Munsters mustered for the rush. By this time, however, the enemy had not only concentrated machine-gun and "pom-pom" fire upon the gangway, but field guns. Bursts of shrapnel fell upon the gangway like hail. The "bridge" held, but only a few out of the gallant company who attempted to pass

over survived.

This "plan" for what had been presumed would be a rapid landing, formed apparently without duly taking the current into consideration, was, it should now have been evident, a failure; impracticable and murderous at the same time. There was a suspension of the attempts, but after a while they were renewed with a contemplated dash by the half-battalion of Hampshires, and the lighters were crowded with men of that corps when a second time the moorings gave way. As the lighters drifted off the troops had to lie down on them. There was nothing else for it. Even so, they were helpless targets. Among them were Brigadier-General Napier and Captain Costeker, his brigade major. Both were killed.

So far not more than one-half the intended covering force had been put ashore, and of those again half had become casualties. Further landing operations here

were in the circumstances not persisted in.

Since it would be as difficult and as costly to get the men who had landed embarked again as it had proved to throw them ashore, all that could be done was to prevent the enemy from coming down on to the beach in a counter-attack. That, happily, was feasible, because of the machine-guns mounted on the deck of River Clyde and protected by sandbags. At nightfall there was a bright moonlight, but though on that account the enemy's fire was still formidable, River Clyde was enabled to discharge the troops remaining aboard. In the course of the night several attempts were made to clear the ruined fort of Sedd-el-Bahr, and the outskirts of the ruined village. They were failures. The men were fagged out.

EAST

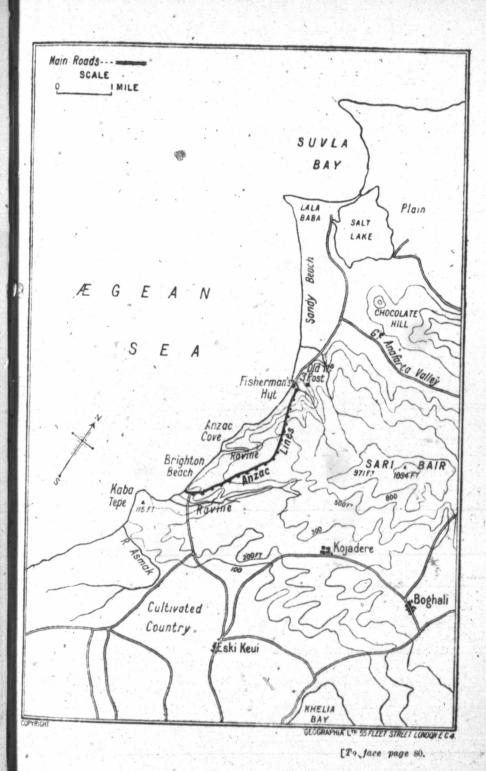
ted, and he rush. concenpon the ell upon t only a to pass

uld be a taking ow have urderous of the with a upshires, at corps As the on them. ey were -General

covering half had ns here

. Both

get the l proved was to ne beach feasible, deck of nightfall account lyde was ard. In made to putskirts the men



During the operation of the shelter of only cover. Dublins and Hampshires, mandant, Country the senior of and the continuous of the River Clyde, for their confirms to keep the contract of th

The story pleted by 4,000 the concentration of April 24. Queen, Londowarships of the Sear-Adriver carried of the batteruiser Bacch the landing.

The place was a point part of the c sea, but at t stretch of be was hoped th surprise, and

At about of flotilla, consist destroyers, the balloon ship, dezvous. A moon. The state same times

During that night the survivors of this disastrous operation crouched along the side of the beach under the shelter of the four-foot escarpment which was their only cover. They consisted of the remnants of the Dublins and the Munsters, and two companies of the Hampshires. The latter regiment had lost its commandant, Colonel Carrington Smith. Few, in fact, of the senior officers of any of these three corps were left, and the command was taken over for the time by Lieut.-Colonel Doughty-Wylie, and Lieut.-Colonel Williams of the Headquarters Staff, who had landed from River Clyde, and have been mentioned in despatches for their conspicuous contempt of danger and their efforts to keep up the spirits of the men.

The story of the disbarkations on Gallipoli is completed by that of the Anzacs. To the number of 4,000 the covering troops of the Australian and New Zealand Army Corps left Mudros Bay on the afternoon of April 24. Fifteen hundred had been placed on board Queen, London and Prince of Wales, three of the escorting warships of the second squadron of the fleet commanded by Rear-Admiral C. F. Thursby. The remaining 2,500 were carried on transports accompanied by six destroyers. To the battleships Triumph and Majestic, and the cruiser Bacchante had been allotted the duty of covering

the landing.

The place picked out for throwing the troops ashore was a point a mile to the north of Kaba Tepe. This part of the coast is rugged, rising abruptly out of the sea, but at the point just alluded to there is a limited stretch of beach, narrow, but judged wide enough. It was hoped that this operation might take the enemy by surprise, and that the strip of beach might not be fortified.

At about one o'clock in the morning of April 25 the flotilla, consisting of five battleships, one cruiser, eight destroyers, the Ark Royal seaplane ship, the Manica, balloon ship, and fifteen trawlers, arrived off the rendezvous. A calm night, and a smooth sea, but a bright moon. The ships kept well off the coast. At one and the same time the business began of transferring the

men on the warships to the boats and the men on the

On boar

same perf

shots rang

flashes alor

splash in t

were hit:

reply; not

any man The numer

the narrow

men leaped

impulse th

the sheer c

trap. Tho

and the ra

was no lon

After his e

attempt to

stalwart so

Not only w

a succession

lightning s

swept bare

the landing

of the Aust

Colonel Sin

These co

transports to the destroyers.

It was carried through silently, swiftly, and without a hitch, and by half-past two, all these preparations having been made, the squadron with the destroyers and tows stood towards land, making a speed of five knots. An hour later the tows were ordered to make for shore. The destroyers, kept back because more conspicuous objects on the water, and able owing to their speed to catch up, were sent off after a forty minutes' interval.

Whether through the set of the current or the difficulty of identifying features of the coast in the moonlight, the strip of beach on which the landing took place was not that set out in Headquarters' plans. It was another and a narrower strip. But the mistake, if it can so be called, was on the whole fortunate. The selected beach, as might have been expected, was watched; that where the landing occurred was not. Again the latter, though narrower, was on that account safer, since the cliffs offered a better shelter from hostile fire. At the northern end was a steep gully running into the hills; at the southern end, a narrow and deep ravine its sides overgrown with scrub. The interlying cliffs were high, forming, in fact, the seaward face of a bold spur looking as though it had been abruptly broken off. By advancing up the gully and the ravine it would be practicable to seize this spur, and in that case the strip would become a fairly secure landing place.

Approaching the shore in silence, and at moonset, when darkness had fallen on the sea, the men on the tows and destroyers were close in before signs of the enemy were perceived. Then in the dim light what appeared to be a battalion of Turks were seen running along the shore, with the evident object of intercepting the boats. Most probably these enemy troops, watching the beach where the landing was anticipated, had seen the ships outlined at sea against the moonlight, and observing that the tows were not after all making for the expected point, had hastily shifted their ground.

On board the boats the same silence as before: the same perfect order. Very soon the rip-rap of rifle shots rang out from beneath the cliffs; a fluctuation of flashes along the shore; the "ping" of bullets and their splash in the water. A number of men in the boats were hit; the others set their teeth. Not a shot in reply; not a word spoken; not a move on the part of any man not wounded. Bayonets were ready fixed. The numerous boats, urged at their fastest, raced towards the narrow shore almost in line. Almost in mass the men leaped from them, and in a mass and as with one impulse they charged home with the cold steel. With the sheer cliffs behind them the Turks were caught in a trap.' Those of the enemy who could fled up the gully and the ravine, the Anzacs hot upon their heels. It was no longer an attack; it had become a man-hunt. After his experience on the beach the enemy made no attempt to stand. The mere appearance of these stalwart southern warriors was the signal for flight. Not only was the spur above the landing place cleared; a succession of ridges to right and left were carried at lightning speed. The rugged moorland country was swept bare of the foe from a point two miles north of the landing place to a point nearly as far to the south.

These covering troops consisted of the 3rd Brigade of the Australian Division. They were commanded by

Colonel Sinclair Maclagan, D.S.O.

moonset, n on the ns of the ght what running ercepting watching had seen ight, and aking for round.

R EAST

n on the

without

parations

estroyers

d of five

to make

se more

owing to

minutes'

difficulty

oonlight,

lace was

s another

an so be

ed beach.

d; that

ne latter.

since the

he hills;

its sides

ffs were

pold spur

off. By

vould be

At the

88

G 2

GALLIPOLI: THE BATTLE FOR KRITHIA

CHAPTER VI

Turkish attacks upon the Australian and New Zealand force—Strate-gical importance of the Kaba Tepe position—Misjudgments in the British dispositions—Adverse effects on the campaign—First move forward from the southern landing places—Errors in tactics—Turkish counter-attacks—Disadvantages of the British position—The battle of May 5—Costliness of frontal assaults—The Anzac force divided—Partial British success before Krithia—Anzacs reduced to the defensive—Review of the campaign to May 6—Its mistakes.

The landing of the Australian covering troops was speedily followed by that of the 1st and 2nd Brigades of the same Division. By 2 o'clock the following afternoon (April 26), there had, thanks to the efficiency of the naval support, been thrown ashore a force of 12,000 men, with two batteries of Indian Mountain Artillery. These operations were carried out under the command of Lieut.-General Sir W. R. Birdwood. In every sense the selection of that able and distinguished officer for the command of the Australian and New Zealand Army Corps was a fortunate one.

Naturally the Turks hastened to attack the Australian troops while the landing was in progress and before the guns and other equipment could be got ashore, and early on April 26 they had gathered in strength, arriving by forced marches during the night. The reinforcement apparently consisted at this time of a full division, mustering 20,000 men. The Australian covering troops were spaced out along a semi-circle of posts, as yet, save for the light pieces already mentioned, unsupported

GALLI

by field a tralian lin the landin approache with heav to shore, v out, and increased i to prevent the penins The battle replied, ar this long 1 either side finish, the had the included G

In spite surprisingly on rapidly.

On rapic ashore wa opened at line had be infantry a against the of the accountnumber practically power of the proved cruunits, howeofficers, and

Meanwhi instant pus took their to barrage now to stan which bot havoc with

GALLIPOLI: THE BATTLE FOR KRITHIA

by field artillery. To assist the attack upon the Australian line the enemy planted batteries to the left of the landing beach so as to enfilade boats as they approached the shore, and he opened upon the transports with heavy guns. The ships, which had stood in close to shore, were on that account obliged to steam farther out, and that of course prolonged the landing and increased its risks. So anxious, indeed, was the enemy to prevent the landing that he opened fire also across the peninsula from a naval squadron in the Narrows. The battleships of Rear-Admiral Thursby's squadron replied, and all the while the landing was in progress this long range naval duel against targets invisible to either side and directed from the air, went on. At the finish, the British ships, armed with the heavier guns, had the best of it. The Turkish squadron, which included Goeben and Breslau, was obliged to withdraw.

In spite of all, the landing arrangements worked with surprisingly little confusion, and the disbarkation went

on rapidly.

On rapidity depended success, for already the battle ashore was in full blast. The Turkish attack had opened at 11 a.m. (April 26). After the Australian line had been severely searched with shrapnel, the hostile infantry advanced to the assault. The onset was against the whole line simultaneously. At the beginning of the action the Australian covering troops were outnumbered by at least eight to one. But they were practically without an exception dead shots, and the power of the rifle in the hands of skilful and fearless men proved crushing. The broken and confused Turkish units, however, were forthwith rallied by their German officers, and again thrown forward.

Meanwhile, as men were landed they were on the instant pushed forward up the gully and the ravine and took their places in the line. The effort of the enemy to barrage those exits was unavailing. He had himself now to stand a crashing bombardment from the warships, which both hampered his re-assemblies and played havoc with his batteries. His second attack, as it

rce—Strateidgments in paign—First rs in tactics ish position —The Anzacs to May 6—

oops was rigades of ng afterciency of of 12,000 Artillery. command ery sense officer for and Army

ustralian pefore the nore, and arriving orcement division, ng troops as yet, upported

proved, was directed more especially against the left or northern sector of the Australian position, held by the 3rd Brigade, though it extended to part of the posts formed by the 2nd Brigade. Here, apparently, the enemy thought he had found a weak spot. It is true that, under the weight of the assault, the 2nd Brigade began to retire; but the broken ground, thickly overgrown with scrub, while to a certain extent it favoured the Turks, also favoured prudent defensive tactics. And though the line bent, it did not break, for when the enemy followed up, coming on in depth, since his earlier general assault in shallow formation had proved a failure, he had as hot a reception as before. On his retirement the Australians followed up. For three hours the fight swayed backwards and forwards. Finally, at 8 in the afternoon, the enemy gave the effort up. The country, strewn with his dead and wounded, especially where the machine-guns had caught him in close formation, testified to his casualties. He gave it up because, though the attack had been pressed with determination, the Australian line was found steadily to be stiffening, and the newcomers as keen in the fray as the first men. In the course of the action the 9th and 10th battalions charged and spiked a battery of Krupp guns.

German stubbornness, however, was not thus to be denied. After a breathing space of two hours, during which the Australians were hard at work contriving cover, a powerful Turkish column was once more signalled as on the move. The point of attack was the same as in the afternoon. As it doubled forward the assaulting mass suffered heavily, but it was driven on by its officers, and the contending forces came to grips. Outnumbered though they were, the 3rd Brigade more than held their own. Though the struggle lasted for an hour or more amid a hellish uproar, the result really was never doubtful. The Turks, while naturally brave, found themselves shot and bayoneted out of all proportion. They first wavered, then broke, and finally

ran.

GALLII

Having both ways tactics. V one local a wear down dation of t Turkish in some Germ with the the moonl selves by t up to the forward w surprise th quarters b or disperse

> Nor had been mate had been of driving driven intelished in a of the Kak ground over

The diffammunition to the mer Turkish repersistent two more Naval Dividual Capacity the line.

The proforce had Gallipoli of landed not the sensite the intent capture of

GALLIPOLI: THE BATTLE FOR KRITHIA

EAST

the left

d by the

ne posts

tly, the

; is true

Brigade

ly over-

avoured

tactics.

hen the

s earlier

roved a

r three

orwards.

he effort

ounded,

him in

gave it

sed with

steadily

the fray

the 9th

ttery of

us to be

, during

ntriving

ce more

was the

vard the

riven on

to grips.

ide more

isted for

ılt really

ly brave,

all pro-

d finally

On his

Having attacked in breadth and depth and failed both ways, the enemy now once more changed his Waiting until after nightfall, he threw forward one local assault after another in order to harass and wear down the defending troops and hinder the consolidation of their lines. Finding that, with the rifle, the Turkish infantry were no match for these invaders, some German commander hit upon the idea of an onset with the bayonet without any preliminary fire. In the moonlight and through the scrub, covering themselves by the folds in the ground, a force of Turks stole up to the lines of the 8th Brigade, and then bounded forward with a yell. But the charge was not the surprise they had imagined. A blaze of fire at close quarters bowled over many. The rest were dispatched or dispersed.

Nor had the consolidation of the Australian position been materially interfered with. These Turkish troops had been pushed through the hills, certain apparently of driving the invaders into the sea. So far from being driven into the sea, the Australians were firmly established in a rough half-circle extending from a mile north of the Kaba Tepe headland on the one side to the high ground overlooking Fisherman's Hut on the other.

The difficulties, by no means light, of bringing up ammunition, water and supplies and distributing them to the men in the line were now tackled. Since yet more Turkish reinforcements had put in an appearance, and persistent and harassing assaults were continued during two more days and nights, four battalions of the Royal Naval Division were landed both as handymen, in which capacity they did yeoman service, and as reliefs in the line.

The prompt and heavy Turkish attack upon the Anzac force had a distinct significance. This part of the Gallipoli coast from the point where Koe's troops had landed northwards to Suvla Bay was, for the enemy, the sensitive sector. It was evident that, assuming the intention of the British to be in the first place the capture of Achi Baba, and the domination from that

was the la

Corps und acted und

Kale on

explained the Turkis

Unquestion open ques

difference.

their re-en the Frenc

Australians

instantane

embarrasse

sula was n

It offered

once seized point from

The facilit

and Achi l

south to t

and unobst

the invadir

to have ha

not realisin for bold dis

The pro course afte

issue, but t

of the Aust

back had f

fortify him

keep his ho surrounded

entangleme

with the ad

striking dis

Kalid Bahr, spot of the

Of the p

height of the broad depression extending across the peninsula just to the north of the mountain, Achi Baba would be much more difficult to hold against a frontal combined with a flank attack than against a frontal attack alone. Indeed, it was highly problematical if a frontal attack alone could meet with success. It certainly would not be by itself a skilful operation of war. Of course the enemy's object was to reduce the operation to a frontal attack, and therefore to bring about a deadlock, and, unfortunately, General Hamilton, looking upon these flanking moves rather as a diversion than as an integral part of the main scheme, and, in fact, the most important feature of it, contributed unwittingly

to this hostile design.

It was, of course, General Hamilton's objective to capture Achi Baba, and as preliminary to that to take Krithia. Already the fact has been pointed out that when Koe's force landed at Gurkha bluffs by a successful ruse, there was disclosed the possibility of seizing Krithia had reinforcements reached Koe in time. The village was distant from the bluffs not more than a mile, and the interlying country was then open. When, after the disasters attending the landing of the covering force at V Beach, the question was raised as to what ought to be done with the main body who were to have followed them, and whose immediate landing at V Beach was seen to be, in the circumstances, impracticable, two courses were suggested; one that these troops should be sent to support Koe; the other that they should be transferred to W Beach—the adjacent "Lancashire Landing." Unhappily, the second course was adopted, on the ground that the first "would have involved considerable delay owing to the distance." Since the distance is not more than seven miles at most, the delay could not have been serious. Not only did this error of judgment lead to the evacuation of a most important position; it had, as will be seen in the sequel, the gravest effect on the later operations and on the campaign.

And there was another misjudgment, not, it is true, so serious in its results, but still unfortunate. This

GALLIPOLI: THE BATTLE FOR KRITHIA

was the landing of a part of the French Expeditionary Corps under the command of General d'Amade, who acted under the orders of General Hamilton, at Kum Kale on the Asiatic shore of the Dardanelles. The explained purpose of the move was to draw the fire of the Turkish batteries off the V and W landing places. Unquestionably it served that purpose, but it is an open question if the fire thus diverted made much difference. The landing of these French troops and their re-embarkation cost a fair total of casualties. If the French Corps had been thrown ashore near the Australians the effect would have been alike great and instantaneous, and the enemy would have been really embarrassed. The extreme southern toe of the peninsula was not a sensitive point in any sense of the word. It offered facilities for landing, and positions which, once seized, were strongly tenable, but it was not the point from which attack could be successfully developed. The facilities were too limited. Between this point and Achi Baba extended a broad depression running south to the Dardanelles, and the enemy had perfect and unobstructed observation over every movement of the invading army. General Hamilton, however, seems to have had misgivings about the division of his forces. not realising that the fleet at his back gave him freedom for bold dispositions.

The proof of these conclusions is not merely the course afterwards taken by the operations, and their issue, but the circumstance that immediately the landing of the Australians occurred, and the effort to drive them back had failed, the first thing the enemy did was to fortify himself against them in feverish haste, and to keep his hold upon Kaba Tepe cove and upon Y Beach, surrounded both positions with a broad zone of wire

entanglements.

R EAST

ross the

a frontal

tical if a

of war.

peration a dead-

looking than as

act, the

vittingly

ctive to

to take

iccessful

seizing

e. The

than a

covering

to what

to have

g at V

practice troops

r should

acashire

dopted,

nvolved nce the

le delay

is error

portant

gravest

. This

n. is true,

When,

It cer-

Of the points along the coast, Kaba Tepe headland with the adjacent cove was important, for it was within striking distance of the junction of roads from Maidos, Kalid Bahr, and Krithia. That junction formed a vital spot of the defence.

As it stood immediately after the landing operations at the southern point of the peninsula, the position was that Tekke Burnu was in British hands, together with landing place "X" on the one side of it and landing place "W" on the other. Part also of Helles Burnu was in possession of General Hamilton's troops, but owing to the obstruction offered by successive lines of wire entanglements, added to the difficulties of the landing at V Beach, the enemy still held the eastern slopes of Helles Burnu together with the amphitheatre just beyond.

On the morning of April 26 one of the first necessities was to improve the position of those of the Dublins, Munsters and Hampshires who had managed to get ashore. In the course of the night, in response to a message from General Hunter-Weston, Rear-Admiral Wemyss had steamed in with the ships of his squadron, and at daybreak the enemy's positions in the amphitheatre, with points of support in the ruined fort of Sedd-el-Bahr, the ruins of Sedd-el-Bahr village, and an old castle just to the north of it, were heavily shelled. These places lay on the eastern slopes of Helles Burnu. The objective was to capture the remainder of that height.

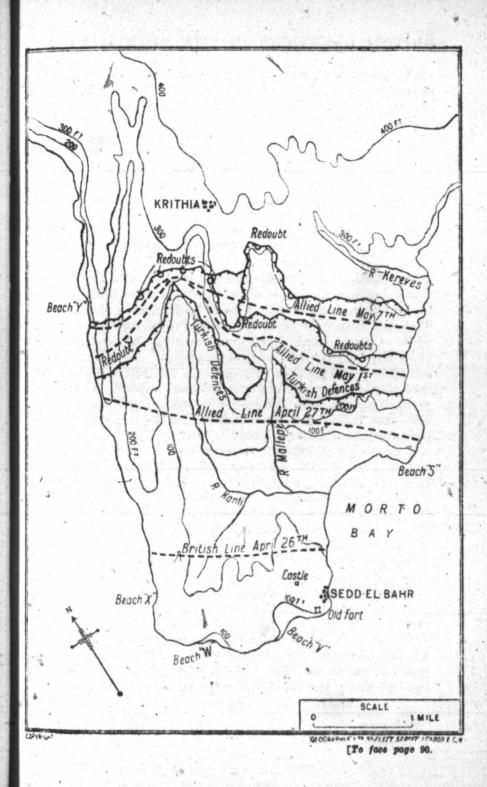
Beach

With that in view the small force of British infantry -500 out of the original 2,000 had been killed or wounded on the previous day chiefly in the attempts to land from River Clyde—were led to the assault by Lieut.-Colonel Doughty-Williams and Captain Walford, R.A., Brigade-Major. They had now the support of the naval guns, and though that support alone made such an attempt practicable, were subjected on the way from the beach to the village to a galling fire. Captain Walford was among the first of those who fell. Yet despite their trying experience during the landing, and the hardly less trying night they had just passed crouched under the escarpment along the shore, these brave men did not waver. Few have been the instances in war of more unshakable intrepidity. With such troops, skilfully handled, it seemed possible to accomplish anything. EAST

erations ion was together it and f Helles troops, ive lines s of the eastern itheatre

cessities
Dublins,
to get
use to a
Admiral
quadron,
amphifort of
, and an
shelled.
s Burnu.
of that

infantry wounded and from .-Colonel Brigadeval guns, attempt he beach ford was ite their e hardly ed under men did r of more skilfully anything.



And this valour was unquestionably not without its moral effect on the Turks, for though they offered a determined opposition, backed by machine-guns in every lurking place, they showed here little relish for fighting at close quarters. By 10 in the forenoon (April 26) the ruins of the village had been cleared. Then after the briefest pause the troops started to scale the open slope above and by 2 in the afternoon had reached and taken the old castle on the apex of the hill. Both heights, Helles Burnu as well as Tekke Burnu, being now in British hands, it became feasible to use V Beach for the landing of the French Corps.

On April 27 a general move forward was ordered. The intention was to reach a line extending across the toe of the peninsula from a point two miles to the north of Tekke Burnu to Eski Hissarlik Point, where all this while Casson had been maintaining himself. The proposed line was three miles in length. To this initial advance the enemy, engaged in withdrawing and reorganising his forces, offered no opposition. The ground gained had the effect of relieving congestion, and since it included several wells, it also, in part, eased

the problem of water supply.

Considering it important, as it was, to push forward before the Turks received reinforcements, General Hamilton determined upon a second move for the morning of the 28th, though owing to the losses incurred during the several landing operations his line was not strongly held. The aim this time was to advance upon Krithia, the left brigade of the 29th Division leading. On their right were the 87th Brigade, strengthened by the Drake Battalion, R.N.D., then the 88th Brigade, then on the extreme right the French Corps. The 86th Brigade, now under the command of Casson, was in

To Krithia the distance was about three miles. Viewed from the British line, the ground to be covered was the *cul-de-sac* valley of the Kanli Dere, having on the left along the coast the ridge of the bluffs, and on

GALLII

the right Achi Baba was narrow of the more was anothe Dere. It so that the itself on the

The posi favourable neglected t slopes of th works, and so that the funnel fort vantage of not yet lan ammunition

As plann the mornin the 87th F miles. The having to was on the Brigade att first. They half hours out. On t stormed the rise borderi within a n 88th Brigac 86th were c pushed on t along the h the Inniskil until close on their rig works, the line.

GALLIPOLI: THE BATTLE FOR KRITHIA

the right the long gradually falling southern spur of Achi Baba. At the head of the valley, and where it was narrowest, lay the village on the south-western foot of the mountain. Beyond the long spur to the right was another small cul-de-sac valley, that of the Kereves Dere. It was intended to seize this southern spur, so that the French Expeditionary Corps might establish itself on the line of the stream last named.

The position to be attacked offered, however, very favourable dispositions for defence. Nor had the enemy neglected to make the most of them. On the inward slopes of the coast ridge he had now thrown up defence works, and he had entrenched the Achi Baba spur, so that the Kanli valley presented the aspect of a funnel fortified along both faces. Further, a disadvantage of the attack was the lack of field artillery, not yet landed, and the difficulty, as yet, of moving

ammunition supplies from the beaches.

As planned, the attack of April 28 opened at 8 in the morning. The most rapid advance was made by the 87th Brigade, which in two hours advanced two miles. That, however, was due in part to the Brigade having to move up the valley. The main opposition was on the higher ground on either side. The 88th Brigade attacking the spur had stiff fighting from the first. They pushed on, nevertheless, for three and a half hours and until their ammunition began to give out. On their right the French had coincidentally stormed the part of the spur in front of them, and the rise bordering on the Kanli Dere valley was cleared to within a mile of Krithia. Seeing, however, that the 88th Brigade had at length been brought to a halt, the 86th were ordered forward to take up the advance, and pushed on three-quarters of a mile further. Meanwhile, along the higher ground on the coast side of the valley the Inniskilling Fusiliers had likewise fought their way until close to Krithia. But the troops in the valley on their right having been held up by strong defence works, the Irishmen were ordered to withdraw into line.

e mornd during strongly Krithia. In their by the de, then ne 86th was in

EAST

nout its

ffered a

runs in

elish for

orenoon

cleared.

to scale

on had

apex of

s Tekke

became

French

ordered.

ross the

ne north

all this

lf. The

is initial

ng and

n. The

gestion,

t, eased

forward

General

miles. covered ving on and on

of two ba

GALLI

This was the situation as it stood by 2 o'clock in the afternoon. An hour later the Turks launched a counterattack. The effort was to drive the Allied troops off the part of the spur they had captured. It was a heavy counter-attack and a resolute one. The enemy came to close quarters with the bayonet, and some of the ground gained was lost, more especially on the right. This uncovered the flank of the 88th Brigade. Already tired by hours of stiff fighting, and short of ammunition into the bargain, they met, before the position could be restored, with heavy casualties. In the main, however, the ground gained was held.

Krithia had not been taken as had been hoped, and the action had not, as regards its chief objectives, proved successful. It was the expressed opinion of General Hamilton that "had it been possible to push in reinforcements of men, artillery and munitions during the day, Krithia should have fallen, and much subsequent fighting for its capture would have been avoided."

Much more evident is it now, however, that had the position taken by Koe's force at Gurkha bluffs not been evacuated, as by this time it had been, but reinforced instead, Krithia must assuredly have fallen, and at a mere trifle of the cost of this indecisive action, for the position seized by Koe lay right at the head of the Kanli valley, and since the enemy could not then have defended the coast ridge lying between this flanking force and the British main body, he would have been compelled to rely solely upon a defence of the Achi Baba spurs, where, however, he would also have found himself outflanked. It was exactly such a move that he most feared. Further, in this action itself it was unfortunate to have withdrawn the Inniskillings, seeing that they had by great dash reached once more the position which had been given up. Unhappily these mistakes proved costly.

During the next two days no movement was made by either side, beyond a readjustment of the French section of the line. The interval was made use of to land most of the British field guns and reinforcements, consisting

29th Divis Just bet launched a sudden bu formation. man in an afterwards and as the had no che alone. Th tic Germa which the the spur which was gave way. it advance could be r 5th Royal upon it ar the enemy was hurle troops ha column. The assaul

more than Evident his noctu enemy to attacking green Ben red signall stormed " were found in these te

> Attack We sh nation w Soldier salvation to give u

R EAST

ck in the

counter-

roops off

s a heavy

v came to

ne ground

ht. This

ady tired

ition into

could be

however,

oped, and

es, proved

f General

h in rein-

uring the

ibsequent

t had the

not been

reinforced

and at a

n, for the

ad of the

then have

flanking

nave been

the Achi

ave found

nove that

elf it was

igs, seeing more the

pily these

s made by

land most

consisting

ed."

GALLIPOLI: THE BATTLE FOR KRITHIA

of two battalions of the Royal Naval Division and the 29th Division of the Indian Army.

Just before moonrise on April 30, however, the Turks launched a heavy night attack. Preceded by a hot and sudden burst of fire, their infantry came on in massed formation, three lines with no interval between man and man in any. The first line did not fire. It was found afterwards that they had been deprived of ammunition, and as the second and third lines were close behind they had no choice save to advance, relying upon the bayonet alone. This, at that stage of the war, was a characteristic German tactic. The point of the British front upon which the weight of the assault fell was that held on the spur by the 86th Brigade. Under the pressure, which was overwhelming, this part of the British line gave way. But the flank of the attacking column as it advanced became exposed, and before its dispositions could be readjusted two corps of the 88th Brigade, the 5th Royal Scots and the Essex Regiment, were thrown upon it and closed with the bayonet. In the darkness the enemy column fell into confusion, and the attack was hurled back. On the left the French Senegalese troops had been attacked by a second and similar column. There was here a swaying and savage fight. The assault was succeeded by counter-assault, and this more than once repeated.

Evidently, though in fact it accomplished nothing, his nocturnal enterprise had been expected by the enemy to yield great results. The officers of the attacking troops had been provided with red, white and green Bengal lights for the guidance of their gunners—red signalling "lengthen range"; white, "front trenches stormed"; green, "main position carried." And there were found on the field copies in Turkish of an army order

in these terms :-

Attack the enemy with the bayonet; and utterly destroy him-We shall not retire one step. If we do our religion, country and nation will perish.

Soldiers, the world is looking upon you. Your only hope of salvation is to bring this battle to a victorious issue, or gloriously to give up your life.

The Turks had fought stubbornly, and their losses had been severe. At daylight, therefore, the whole Allied force was thrown forward in a counter-assault. On the left there was a marked advance, and in fact, since the French right was held, the line tended to pivot on its right. This not being in accordance with intended dispositions, the former line was fallen back upon.

In these actions, in the battle round Anzac Cove, and in the several landings the total Allied losses had been some 15,000 men. Those of the Turks, since they were also under naval gunfire, were even heavier. The confined space in which the battle for Krithia had been fought had left the ground thickly strewn, and in places even heaped, with the dead and wounded, and notwithstanding that no formal suspension of hostilities had been arranged for the purpose, enemy burial parties came out next day bearing red crescent flags. Their work of digging great common graves into which the bodies of their slain were cast was not interfered with. On the side of the Allies the proportion of killed, less than 2,000 men, had not been high, and they had already been interred with due honours. The chief difficulty had been the evacuation of the wounded, not an easy matter for either of the combatants.

A very considerable percentage of the British troops were young recruits without previous experience in action, while the Turks pitted against them were for the most part veteran regulars. But in coolness and steadiness these recruits, volunteers who had flocked to arms at the first call, had proved tactically more than a match for the foe. There had been critical moments in the action, moments in which it had seemed touch and go whether or not the struggle might end in disaster, for the enemy, powerfully reinforced, had been "out" to win at all costs, and the appeal to fanaticism had not been without effect. Always, however, at these moments, as had been proved before on many a field, the British soldier revealed his nerve in battle. The harder he was pressed the more unconquerable he showed himself. And General Hunter-Weston, who had the

GALLII

conduct of resourceful in tactics t expected. strategical handicappe complete were able repulse. Ediriven into

Though I some 5,000 remarkable occupied we enemy held British posthe range imperative

Hence, th resolved on sidered, how of the peni think it pr without a re a new comp and New Cove for the the *Drake* Brigade, the Corps. Wh withdrawal toe of the p The transfer of the Anza more than a operations. skill in the a

And that of the renew southern rid

GALLIPOLI: THE BATTLE FOR KRITHIA

conduct of the action on the spot, proved a ready and resourceful tactician. It was from no want of skill in tactics that the battle had failed to give the results expected. That failure arose from oversights in the strategical dispositions. Tactically, the marvel is that, handicapped as the Allied force was by the lack of a complete equipment and inferior in numbers, they were able to inflict upon the enemy a most costly repulse. By "all the rules" they ought to have been driven into the sea.

Though by May 1 the British line had been advanced some 5,000 yards from the main landing places, a most remarkable feat in the circumstances, the position occupied was still cramped and crowded, and since the enemy held the higher ground, and the whole of the British position, landing places included, was within the range even of his field artillery, it was clearly

imperative to enlarge the area.

R EAST

ir losses

e whole

-assault.

in fact,

to pivot

intended

ac Cove,

sses had

nce they

er. The

had been

in places

and not-

ostilities

al parties

s. Their

hich the

red with.

lled, less

dalready

difficulty

an easy

sh troops

rience in

were for

ness and

l flocked

nore than

moments

ouch and

disaster.

n "out"

had not

nese mo-

field, the

ne harder

showed

had the

on.

Hence, though his troops were tired, General Hamilton resolved on May 5 on a further attack. He now considered, however, that the force at the southern point of the peninsula was not strong enough and he did not think it prudent to risk another general engagement without a reserve. To form that reserve he constituted a new composite division, consisting of the 2nd Australian and New Zealand Brigades, withdrawn from Anzac Cove for the purpose, and of a Naval Brigade, formed of the Drake and Plymouth battalions. Another Naval Brigade, the 2nd, was assigned to reinforce the French Corps. While it had become apparently necessary, the withdrawal of part of the Anzac force to the southern toe of the peninsula cannot be considered a good move. The transfer left it out of the question for the remainder of the Anzacs to conduct the vigorous offensive which more than anything else must have aided the southern operations. Sledge-hammer blows are not necessarily skill in the art of war.

And that very speedily became evident. The object of the renewed attack on May 5 was the capture of the southern ridges of Achi Baba. Part of the southern

97

spur had been taken, but to the rest the enemy continued tenaciously to cling, and he had been hard at work entrenching and throwing up redoubts. The shape of this spur, dividing the valley of the Kanli Dere from that of the Kereves Dere, is somewhat peculiar. Towards its end it divides, and while one part of the rise runs south-west, the other, branching off, runs south towards the Dardanelles. Between the two lies a small depression down which flows the Mallepe Dere. The result, taking a bird's-eye view, from the south is that the bifurcated ridge presents the appearance of a very high-heeled boot. The British had seized the "heel," but the enemy still held on to the rest of the boot. The rest of the boot was now to be captured—if possible.

The attack was to be carried out by the 29th Division, stiffened by the inclusion in it of the Indian Brigade, and by the French Corps, plus the 2nd Naval Brigade. The French and the Naval men on the right were to assault the ridge between the Mallepe Dere depression and the Kereves Dere, while the 29th Division were to advance from the "heel" as a jumping-off place, and push in between the Turks and Krithia. In themselves these dispositions were sound enough, had it not been that the enemy, relieved of anxiety with regard to the Australian force which he had shown he gravely feared and had reason to fear, was able to concentrate against the British main body. And that beyond question suited him to a nicety, for on these southern ridges of Achi Baba he could fight to the greatest advantage. From his point of view it was his chosen ground.

While, consequently, the tactical plan of the action was excellent, yet, as has been proved over and over again, faults of strategy, like a bad foundation, ruined the structure. It is, of course, but just to observe that General Hamilton considered himself faced, owing to his limited forces, with a very serious embarrassment. But it is equally evident that he would in all probability have gained more by a vigorous concurrent attack on the part of the whole of the Australian and New Zealand force, launched just before these southern activities.

GALLIPO

The assau Half an hou The Turks c were taken. and held ag them. It was most part Allied forces of this fighti and the enen His main pos the right the but were the Brigade had converted in once they ha of bullets cou

The day nothing more closed in on the dead and and the moathe sniping the control on both side the French at Dere, and he with the bay evacuated.

having got on guns, knocke searching by led off, were then dashed Scots cleared enemy sniper some of their left of the w

continued at work shape of from that Towards rise runs h towards all depreshe result, that the f a very e "heel," the boot. f possible. Division, Brigade, l Brigade. t were to depression n were to place, and hemselves not been ard to the ely feared te against question

d. the action and over on, ruined serve that ving to his ent. But robability attack on w Zealand vities.

ridges of

dvantage.

The assault of May 5 was led by the 29th Division. Half an hour later that by the French Corps started. The Turks contested the ground foot by foot. Positions were taken, then lost, then retaken. Others were taken and held against every effort of the enemy to recover them. It was a desperate encounter, the fighting for the most part at close quarters. Slowly, however, the Allied forces by sheer valour pushed on. In five hours of this fighting they had gone forward some 300 yards, and the enemy's advanced defences were in their hands. His main position, however, had not been reached. On the right the French had gained the summit of the ridge, but were there compelled to dig in. On the left the 88th Brigade had been held up by a plantation of fir trees converted into a nest of machine-guns. More than once they had got into this wood, but under the sweep of bullets could not remain in it.

The day was now waning, and it was plain that nothing more could be done save entrench. Night closed in on the scene of this bloody struggle, where the dead and wounded of both sides lay mingled together, and the moans of the injured formed an undertone to the sniping that, despite darkness, went on along the line on both sides. At midnight the enemy, worried by the French advance, crept up the slope from the Kereves Dere, and hurled himself on General d'Amade's troops with the bayonet. The summit of the rise had to be evacuated. At dawn, however, the French launched a counter-attack, again cleared out the Turks, and held their advantage.

Next day the battle began afresh. The British guns, having got on to the lurking places of the hostile machineguns, knocked them about vigorously. Thanks to this searching by the artillery, the Lancashire Fusiliers, who led off, were able to make headway. The 88th Brigade then dashed forward, and this time the 5th Royal Scots cleared the firwood, dealing faithfully with the

by an assault in flank, the Inniskillings successively rushed three lines of Turkish trenches. To the left of the Irishmen the Scottish Borderers also took a bite.

Affairs indeed seemed to be going well—for the enemy's taste, too well. Early in the afternoon, therefore, he came on in a counter-attack, an assault in mass, with weight of numbers behind it. Once more the fir plantation changed hands. Then an enfilading fire was opened on this part of the British line from the rise on the opposite side of the Kanli Dere valley along the coast. It was decided, therefore, before daylight failed, to make a final dash, and the New Zealanders were ordered to support it. The Allied troops were tired, but they responded with spirit to this call upon them and the whole line, from extreme left to extreme right, charged forward simultaneously, and by the sheer effergy, fury and momentum of the impact the Turks. resisting desperately, were borne back. Yet another 300 yards or so had been gained, and the whole of the enemy's first line passed over.

It was now the end of the second day and another night was put in on the battlefield behind hastily contrived cover. The Turks had been heavily punished. At the same time, it was palpable that they were receiving a steady stream of reinforcements. Next morning the enemy's lines and communications were vigorously bombarded by the fleet. The New Zealanders, who this time were to lead off with the 88th Brigade in support, recaptured the firwood and advanced slightly beyond it, in all some 200 yards. But no further advance proved then practicable. This arrest on the left of the line led to a corresponding arrest of the French advance on the right, for the movement

had become one converging upon Krithia.

There was now, in consequence, a pause in the attack for about three hours. During that time messages were being sent to the fleet for a renewed bombardment, and arrangements made that the pounding might at once be followed by a general assault. It was half-past five in the afternoon when, after tremendous salvoes from the sh it was still order along Zouaves of t Turkish red another def efforts at rec

On their the 2nd Aus into the fig another 400 troops again time. Not Rarely has the battlefie and it is cert the enemy's who drove or by bitter an dier-General dier-General wards, not a ordeal. Mos

In the mea the 87th Bri along the ric bare of cove long range effort was, t In all, durin carried forwa

Just previ Tepe had a cove. With could not b storm a kno also not bee ing" type t every time; through botl

GALLIPOLI: THE BATTLE FOR KRITHIA

from the ships, the move took place. Night fell while it was still in progress. Charging forward in open order along the slopes of the Kereves Dere ridge the Zouaves of the 1st French Division carried two lines of Turkish redoubts. The 2nd French Division stormed another defence work and held it against repeated

efforts at recapture.

ER EAST

uccessively

the left of

l—for the

oon, there-

ilt in mass.

ore the fir

lading fire

from the

alley along

e daylight

Zealanders

coops were

call upon

to extreme

y the sheer

the Turks,

et another

hole of the

another

nd hastily

punished.

they were

nts. Next

tions were

New Zea-

h the 88th

dadvanced

. But no

This arrest

g arrest of

movement

the attack

ssages were

lment, and

ht at once

s half-past

ous salvoes

a bite.

On their left the New Zealanders, in company with the 2nd Australian Brigade, who had also been thrown into the fight, pushed forwards towards Krithia yet another 400 yards. Counter-attacked by fresh Turkish troops again and again, they beat back the enemy every time. Not all his sacrifices could shake their hold. Rarely has grimmer determination been witnessed on the battlefield. The Turkish losses here were frightful, and it is certain that that alone at length put an end to the enemy's assaults, for the German officers from behind, who drove on the Turkish rank and file, seemed animated by bitter animosity. From their commanders—Brigadier-General F. E. Johnston (New Zealanders) and Brigadier-General the Hon. J. W. Clay (Australians)—downwards, not a man among the Anzacs flinched from the ordeal. Most of this fighting went on in darkness.

In the meantime, led by Major-General W. R. Marshall, the 87th Brigade had made a resolute effort to advance along the ridge bordering on the coast. The ridge was bare of cover and the enemy took care to sweep it at long range with machine-guns. Gallant though the effort was, the Brigade could only advance 200 yards. In all, during the three days' battle the front had been

carried forward something like 1,000 yards.

Just previously, on May 4, the Australians at Kaba Tepe had attempted to seize that headland and the cove. With their diminished force, however, the effort could not be persisted in. An attempt on May 2 to storm a knoll overlooking the centre of the line had also not been fortunate. In tactics of the "bushranging" type the Australians were remarkably successful every time; and most probably they would have carried through both the enterprises alluded to had they been

left to do it in their own manner. In fact, their peculiar tactics, though turned down as "ragged," were the more

skilful and adapted to this rugged country.

Reviewing the Gallipoli operations so far as they had gone up to May 6, there were misjudgments which have since become palpable. It was a misjudgment to employ a military force not to support naval action, but in effect to remedy a naval failure due partly to untested theory. partly to a piecemeal method. That employment of the troops amounted, in fact, to a radical change of plan. and it was a bad change. But the change in turn was aggravated by unsuitable strategical dispositions. The main attack, supported by a naval bombardment of the nodal points of the defence, should have been delivered from the Anzac flank from the first. Finally, there were misjudgments as to tactics. Even in the attacks from the southern toe the Achi Baba defences were most vulnerable to a turning movement from positions along the coastal ridge, and least vulnerable to a frontal assault. The Expeditionary Force, in short, was wrongly employed; it was inadequate for the purpose; and besides being inadequate its strength/was frittered away.

Indecision as

—Appoirefused—the Brishend's of Naza of the ti—Defeat Caution—Inforrinadequiand Bat

SINCE it the order Gallipoli, Campaign And it is paigns in related. arose fron former. described and succe pursued in by a camp at the con gravely to attack upo might the of success stages of t R EAST

peculiar the more

hey had ich have employ in effect theory, ment of of plan, urn was The ment of been de-Finally. in the defences om posible to a n short, the pur-

gth was

CHAPTER VII

MESOPOTAMIA: THE ADVANCE TO KUT

Indecision as to policy in Mesopotamia—Advance inland decided upon
—Appointment of Sir John Nixon—His demand for cavalry
refused—Nixon's plans—The transport problem—Its neglect by
the British Government—The expedition to Amara—"Townshend's Regatta"—Capture of Amara—Expedition to and capture
of Nazariyeh—Deficiencies of medical equipment and hardships
of the troops—Townshend ordered from Home to move upon Kut
—Defeat of the Turks at Kut—Inception of the Bagdad project—
Cautions of military authorities disregarded—Pressure upon Nixon
—Information of enemy movements withheld—Townshend's
inadequate force—His protest—The project rash—Advance to
and Battle of Ctesiphon—Necessity for retreat.

SINCE it is clearest in narration to follow events in the order of time, we may now, leaving the story of Gallipoli, take up the relation of the Mesopotamia Campaign from the point reached in the third chapter. And it is advisable also so to proceed because the campaigns in Gallipoli and in Mesopotamia were not unrelated. The difficulties of the latter to no small extent arose from the difficulties and miscalculations of the former. But for the operations in Gallipoli, already described as off the main track of the War, a vigorous and successful offensive might from the first have been pursued in Mesopotamia, and, seconded in due course by a campaign in Syria, could hardly have failed, looking at the concurrent Russian operations in the Caucasus, gravely to have shake German power in Turkey. An attack upon Gallipoli, assuming it to be soundly planned, might then have been undertaken with every prospect of success. It belonged to the later, not to the initial stages of the struggle.

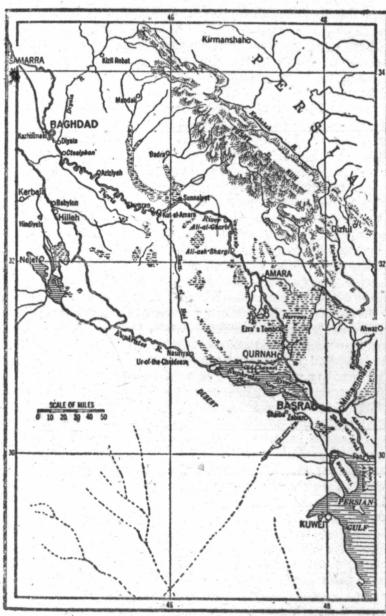
As related, General Sir A. Barrett had occupied the country on both sides of the Shatt-el-Arab, and had pushed his advance as far as Kurna. His force—one division of the Indian Army—had not only a wide extent of territory to safeguard, but also the work of converting Basra into a suitable base. The Turks were on both sides of him—on the east at Ahwaz, threatening the oil-fields, and on the west at Nazariyeh on the Euphrates. It was by no means an easy situation, and the less easy because, notwithstanding his repulse, the enemy was known to be preparing to renew the attack. All the probabilities, if they were not promptly met, were that this renewed offensive would take the form of a converging movement, and it was plain that the way to meet it was by anticipatory blows which would defeat

the several enemy forces in detail.

It was fortunate that the Turkish communications with the Lower Tigris were alike enormously long, and beyond Bagdad undeveloped, for the question of the British policy to be followed in Mesopotamia had not yet at this time been determined. Nor was it until April, 1915, that the matter was settled even tentatively. At the beginning of the year the British Government at home considered that Basra should mark the limit of the advance. And there were other impediments. In India, during the five years which elapsed between Lord Kitchener's relinquishment of his command-inchief of the Indian Army and the outbreak of the War, there had been initiated and followed a rigid military economy. The idea that India might be called upon for aid in an imperial struggle had been definitely set aside. A re-organisation of the army was entered upon, having as its aim the limitation of military operations to possible wars on the North-west Frontier. In pursuance of that re-organisation, or more properly, reduction, the number of divisions immediately mobilisable for service in the field had been cut down from nine to seven. And the artillery arm had been cut down throughout the Service, which was left wholly unprovided with heavy guns. These economies, indeed, EAST

pied the and had be one extent exerting on both ing the phrates. ess easy my was All the ere that a conway to I defeat

ications ng, and of the nad not it until atively. ne limit iments. etween and-inie War, nilitary d upon ely set l upon, rations In puroperly, nobilisn from en cut wholly indeed,



[To face page 104.

sent for

brigades

Turks c

were felt in every branch, and not least in the Medical. In hospital equipment and in field ambulances the Indian Army had never been brought up to a European standard. But even the standard that had existed was lowered, and not merely in material but in the numbers

of the personnel.

Nevertheless, though that was the state of affairs, the Government of India suddenly found itself on the outbreak of War in 1914 faced with demands from the Cabinet at home for an Expeditionary Force for France; an Expeditionary Force for Egypt; an Expeditionary Force for East Africa, and the Expedition to Basra. Blame for what afterwards occurred in Mesopotamia was laid partly upon high officials of the Indian Government, partly upon men upon the spot. The facts just cited leave it beyond doubt that the root cause was the policy which had been followed, and that whatever its motive, relief of taxation or otherwise, it had been based

upon a total misreading of political portents.

So far as the Expedition to Basra was concerned, the fact was patent that affairs could not be left as they were in these first months of 1915. An additional brigade had been sent from Bombay to reinforce Sir A. Barrett, but that brigade was no more than a stop-gap. Finally, it was decided, at the beginning of April, and after much official correspondence, to increase the Expedition to an Army Corps, and Sir John Nixon was sent to take over the command. He arrived with his Staff at Basra on April 9. These measures for the increase of the force, which now was to be made up of the 6th and 12th Divisions of the Indian Army, plus a brigade of cavalry, were taken only just in time. The Turks, encouraged by the inactivity which had succeeded the first British irruption, had pushed forward again as far as Barjisiyeh, close to Basra. At that place, however, on April 14, they were met and defeated by a force under the command of General Melliss.

The enemy having thus on one flank been thrown back upon Nazariyeh, Sir John Nixon's next step was to clear him out of Ahwaz, and General Gorringe was

This one Gener in the f vilayet. spot, to

His firs cavalry, **Pioneers**

With who was having t Amara. to make and wit Turkish Bisaitin before th find thei an impor flank as capture (

Politic because t administ founded the Tigri tamia it river ofas usual of quaint bazaar, a the rive Next to 1 and its not mere that, pur the Emp EAST

Medical. ices the uropean sted was

numbers

on the rom the France; itionary Basra. potamia Governates just was the tever its an based

ned, the as they ditional e Sir A. top-gap. ril, and ase the Nixon ed with for the le up of 1y, plus n time. ich had forward At that lefeated

thrown tep was sent forward up the Karun River to Ahwaz with two brigades of infantry and the cavalry. He drove the Turks out and followed them up towards Bisairin. This once more secured the oil pipe-line.

General Nixon had landed at Basra with instructions in the first place to occupy the whole of the Basra vilayet, and next, after ascertaining conditions on the spot, to report on a subsequent advance to Bagdad. His first demand was for an additional brigade of cavalry, including a British unit, and for a battalion of Pioneers. The demand for more cavalry was refused.

With the arrival on April 22 of General Townshend, who was to take command of the 6th Division, Gorringe having the 12th, the plan came up for an advance upon Amara. On military grounds, Sir John Nixon desired to make that move as soon as possible. If it were made and without delay, then it appeared likely that the Turkish force Gorringe had been shepherding towards Bisaitin would fail to reach the capital of the vilayet before the British under Townshend arrived, and would find their retreat upon Bagdad cut off. It would be an important success both as securing the British right flank as weakening the enemy, and as ensuring the capture of Amara with very little loss.

Politically the capture of Amara was of consequence, because the place was the seat of the Turkish provincial administration. The town, quite modern-it was only founded about the year 1866—lies some 200 miles up the Tigris. In comparison with other towns in Mesopotamia it was well built, with a frontage towards the river of—relatively—handsome buildings, constructed as usual of baked mud, but decorated with oriel windows of quaint Eastern design. Amara too boasted a spacious bazaar, and was one of the chief entrepôts of traffic on the river. The population numbered about 12,000. Next to Bagdad it was the largest town in Mesopotamia, and its capture would be a serious loss to the Turks, not merely as injuring their prestige, but from the fact that, pursuant to the policy of developing this part of the Empire as a route to the Persian Gulf, efforts to promote the prosperity of Amara had been a consistent aim for several decades.

The occupation of Amara besides was within Sir John Nixon's instructions. Nevertheless, the project led to another round of official correspondence. The British Government at home first of all laid it down that "in Mesopotamia a safe game must be played," and then intimated that Sir John Nixon must "clearly understand" that he could be provided with no more troops.

On the spot meanwhile the preparations had been pushed forward. The chief difficulty was lack of transport. From the outset in that respect the Expedition had been badly provided for. Matters were now, however, much worse, for though the original force had been doubled, the river flotilla, barely sufficient

for the half of it, had not been increased.

The real cause of this deficiency lay in the obscurity of declared political aims. To begin with, it had not been the intention to push up the Tigris at all, and the British Cabinet was opposed to such a project. Naturally, therefore, there had, to begin with, been no preparations to do so. The policy having been in that regard changed, it was irrational to expect that the equipment of the Expedition for this new task could be improvised with equal readiness. Of course, the farther up the Tigris the British force moved the more important transport became. The idea of reaching Bagdad unless and until something like adequate means for transport had been provided was impracticable. This was the kernel of the situation. The entire advantage of the British over the enemy depended on communications and on their character. It was not the number of troops which in this campaign constituted the primary factor, it was, in view of the vast and empty spaces to be traversed by either side, the facility of moving troops. Upon transport the campaign manifestly hinged.

Sir John Nixon had been instructed to report upon the transport question, and through General Kemball, the Chief of his Staff, in due course formulated his demands. They we steamers as perso lack of serious a was no wear an perfectly would "occupati

Unformation was anot a demar interval while, us army of additionativing classification insufficies insufficies insufficies insufficies in a far a far

spot wer official n stood, t rapidity all the or pass nev country Gorringe there may a powerf port, the essayed.

The re Regatta. thing the craft we

MESOPOTAMIA: THE ADVANCE TO KUT

They were for six paddle steamers, three stern-wheel steamers, eight tugs, and forty-three barges, as well as personnel and material. He pointed out that the lack of light draft steamers and other craft caused serious delay, uncertainty, and anxiety, and that there was no provision, taking the craft at his disposal, for wear and tear. His Chief of Staff added, which was perfectly true, that a properly equipped river fleet would "double and treble the value of the army of

occupation."

Unfortunately, apart from the delay due to official intercommunication, of which, on this demand, there was another outbreak, it was perfectly evident that such a demand could not be met save after a considerable interval of time—some months at least. In the meanwhile, unless the campaign was to be suspended, the army of occupation would have thrown upon it heavy additional hardship and fatigue in an exceptionally trying climate. That fact was the root of the so-called medical breakdown. The sequence of causes and consequences was—indefinite policy, no preparations, insufficient transport, hardship and overwork, sickness, inability to cope with it, reverses.

So far as transport was concerned, the men on the spot were not disposed to wait upon the workings of official machinery, which, though solid, is slow. As it stood, the military position imperatively demanded rapidity of action. Indeed, if action were not rapid, all the odds were that the favourable opportunity would pass never to return. If it managed to struggle across country and reach Amara first, the Turkish force Gorringe had been holding off would undoubtedly there make a stubborn stand, and form the nucleus of a powerful enemy counter-offensive. Inadequate transport, therefore, or not, a push up to Amara had to be

essaved.

The result of this determination was "Townshend's Regatta." A flotilla of sorts was improvised. Everything that would float was pressed into service. Light craft were converted into "gunboats." All the native

EAST

hin Sir

nsistent

project The t down layed,"

clearly o more

d been ack of he Ex-'s were original fficient

scurity ad not and the Naturrepararegard ipment rovised up the portant unless insport as the of the cations troops factor. to be troops.

on the ill, the nands.

Mesopotar

his Staff

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

boats called "bellums" that Nixon could lay hands on were collected. It was a queer and miscellaneous assortment, but this time, at all events, audacity repaired the effects of oversight. After a day and night preparation the troops of the 6th Division were embarked, and from the lofty watch-tower put up by the engineers at Kurna and commanding a vast horizon of this flat land, the flotilla could be seen breasting the current and negotiating the windings of the Tigris; a sinuous procession of gunboats, real and "camouflaged," mahelas, "bellums," and barges, flanked on

either side by shore scouting parties. This was the last thing the Turks had looked for. Unquestionably they were well informed as to the British transport entanglement, and unquestionably they were reckoning upon it. Suddenly this thing had sprung up, apparently from nowhere, and rumour no doubt magnified the phenomenon. Townshend met with no opposition worth mentioning. When on May 28 his advance force got within sight of Amara it proved sufficient for a party of twenty-two daring men, some sailors, some soldiers, to penetrate boldly into the town and announce the arrival of the "Armada" for the Turkish garrison without more ado to lay down their arms. They were 700 strong, but the force chased out of Ahwaz, having Amara as its base, had not returned, and it was not certain what had happened to it. The conclusion naturally was that the worst had happened. Next day Townshend's troops marched in

without resistance.

Two days later the missing Turkish division turned up, and were close upon the town before they discovered their mistake as to its new occupants. With one British force in front of them, and another somewhere behind, and hundreds of miles from anywhere, they did not stay to offer battle. The vanguard which had walked into the trap were surrounded and taken prisoners; the main body dispersed.

So far audacity had justified itself, and it is hardly warranted to suggest, as was done in the Report of the

For wh not to pu have been at Nazariy ringe was and throu also swift Turkish ga war mater and there blows so dispersal o capture of tion in the its garrisor secure whe tide of fort

To rend provised fla But becau the fatigue notwithsta Indian Arn—they we be rememb the therma Fahrenheit And the s

EAST

hands aneous idacity d night re emby the norizon ing the Tigris; camou-

ted on

ed for. to the onably ng had our no et with lav 28 proved , some e town or the 1 their chased lot rened to st had

turned overed h one where they h had taken

hed in

hardly of the Mesopotamian Commission, that Sir John Nixon and his Staff acted after this stroke from over-confidence. Sir John Nixon had been placed, and from no fault of his own, in an almost impossible position—confronted with the alternative either of acting promptly and boldly, or of piling up obstacles. If he had chosen the latter alternative he would most assuredly have been condemned for failure. Those responsible for putting him in such a position were little likely to shoulder the censure. After this success Sir John Nixon's confidence was perfectly explicable and it is confidence of that kind that leads to victory in war.

For what was the commander's next step? It was not to push Townshend farther forward, which would have been rash; it was to turn attention to the Turks at Nazariyeh, which was advisable and prudent. Gorringe was dispatched with his force up the Euphrates and through the Hammar Lake, and this stroke being also swift and unexpected, he captured on July 25 the Turkish garrison, with 17 guns and a great quantity of war material. For the enemy the loss was crippling, and there can be no sort of question but that the three blows so far dealt—the capture of Ahwaz and the dispersal of the Turkish column holding that place; the capture of Amara, wiping out the Turkish administration in the vilayet, and the capture of Nazariyeh with its garrison and stores, alone made the British occupation secure when later, owing to the transport problem, the tide of fortune turned.

To render the seizure of Nazariyeh feasible the improvised flotilla had to a great extent to be drawn upon. But because it was only a makeshift, and insufficient, the fatigues imposed upon the troops were severe, and notwithstanding their spirit—and these soldiers of the Indian Army were as magnificent in patience as in valour—they went down rapidly with sickness. It has to be remembered that in the summer heats in Mesopotamia the thermometer stands between 120 and 130 degrees Fahrenheit, not merely for days together, but for weeks. And the swamps breed myriads of insect pests which

render the days, and much more the nights, well-nigh unendurable.

Here again the lack of preparation, due partly to political indecision, partly to an imaginary economy, appeared. The medical equipment of the Indian Army has been already referred to. But in the present instance even that equipment had been cut down. The two divisions had only the medical and hospital outfit for one. And the truth about that matter simply is that the huge demands made upon the previously attenuated Indian Army Medical Service had left the Mesopotamia Expedition to put up with what was left. The men on the spot, overtaken by an impossible task,

had to make the best of it.

This being the position of affairs, what next happened? The troops were tired. With marvellous gallantry they had campaigned through the worst season; they had gained a series of swift and striking successes. Upon whom was the effect of those successes most marked? Upon Sir John Nixon and his Staff? Not at all. The effect was most marked on the Government of India, and on the British Government at home. In July the Government of India suggested to the Government at home that Kut should be occupied, and the Government at home agreed. The condition and fatigues of the troops were overlooked; the problem of transport had not been attacked; the provision of hospitals and medical necessities had not been improved. Yet in these circumstances, though it certainly was rash, and rash here is a very mild word, to order General Townshend to move on to Kut, those orders were given. With a transport barely enough to extend the communications as far as Amara, and risky even at that, it was now decided to push them yet another 180 miles farther. It may be doubted if, Gallipoli only excepted, there is in modern history an equal instance of administrative temerity.

General Nixon had conducted his operations with audacity and therefore, since true audacity is rational, with brilliant results; there were those not on the spot MESOI

who though

However lonely mar communicate reached Sh by assault Rammanel and defeat before that and a large position a pushed for far as Aziz

Amara, to On August Governmen Bagdad. It it would be Turkish ar he observe anything y serious for

The effect

To take campaignir provided treinforcement through ektransport limits land employing the enemy position, as communical stranded by freight, be reach of the was interru

On recei

R EAST

well-nigh

partly to economy, an Army present ut down. hospital er simply reviously left the was left.

ible task,

ppened? gallantry on; they successes. ses most ? Not at vernment ome. In : Governand the ion and oblem of vision of mproved. inly was r General ere given. ommuniit, it was s farther. there is nistrative

ons with rational, the spot who thought they could better that by butting in and conducting operations with a dash which was merely foolish.

However, the advance upon Kut was made; a long, lonely march dependent upon a vamped-up means of communication. On September 14 Townshend had reached Sheik Saad; on September 15 his troops took by assault the strongly fortified enemy position of Abu Rammaneh; on the 29th they had reached Kut, fought and defeated the Turks, who had attempted a stand before that place, and taken 1,700 prisoners, 13 guns, and a large quantity of war material. To secure his position at Kut General Townshend very properly pushed forward his cavalry in pursuit of the Turks as far as Aziziya, 50 miles farther up the Tigris.

The effect of this success was, like the advance upon Amara, to set on foot a project for going still farther. On August 30 Sir John Nixon had forwarded to the Government of India his report as to an advance upon Bagdad. He pointed out that the Turks being in flight it would be easier to follow them up than to fight a Turkish army entrenched above Kut. Such an attack, he observed, would be more difficult and costly than anything yet met with, "and the result of a check more

serious for us."

To take the ball at the bound in this manner was, as campaigning, the absolutely advisable procedure—provided that transport was adequate and necessary reinforcements were forthcoming. Kut had been reached through ekeing out the river transport, and the river transport had been eked out by marching the troops with land transport, and by lightening the vessels and employing them to tow loaded barges. By this time the enemy realised that transport was the crux of the position, and had set on his irregulars to maraud the communications, so that wrecks of mahelas sunk or stranded by the fire of his irregulars, and looted of their freight, became by no means infrequent along this reach of the river. At times even the communication was interrupted.

On receiving Nixon's report Sir Percy Lake, Chief

of the Indian Army Staff at Simla, agreed that on military grounds the suggested pursuit of the Turks was desirable, and he forwarded the report with a memorandum to that effect to the Commander-in-Chief. Sir Beauchamp Duff. General Duff, however, considered the project out of the question unless troops could be got "from France, Egypt, or elsewhere." A week later (September 17) the Viceroy of India (Lord Hardinge) wrote to Mr. Austen Chamberlain, Secretary of State for India, emphasising the desirability of an advance from Kut to Bagdad "if sufficient troops can be made available."

The question of whether or not he could advance to Bagdad was put to General Townshend. His reply, in a telegram to General Kemball was:—

If it is the desire of the Government to occupy Bagdad, then, unless great risk is to be run, it is, in my opinion, absolutely necessary that the advance from Kut should be carried out methodically by two divisions, or one Army Corps, or by one division supported closely by another complete division, exclusive of the garrisons of the important places of Nazariyeh, Ahwaz

In response Kemball sent on the same date another telegram to Townshend informing him that it was General Nixon's intention to open the way to Bagdad, "as he understands another division will be sent here from France." Townshend was asked for his plan for effecting such an advance. Replying to Kemball, Townshend telegraphed: "You did not mention the arrival of a division from France in this country. That makes all the difference in my appreciation." With reference to that division he wrote in his diary: " Nothing definite known about this, and no earthly chance of its being in this country in time."

The question had been put to Townshend owing to the receipt by Nixon on October 8 of a cablegram from the Secretary of State. Nixon's reply was: "Consider I am strong enough to open road to Bagdad and with this intention propose to concentrate at Aziziya." "Next day he wired demanding another division (of

the Indian Army) from France.

MESC

Meanw referred India Offi reach Ba unjustifia Next da

Nixon sta and take Nixon's d ments cou

On Oct War Offic They cons with large be to cou of India reply: "O yesterday

Seeming evidently had read c

The G

his grate noble sp. Amara, c moved or That v of the sh are endo He wis their lab depend o danelles, He desi Governme

> position v advance t

to make t

circumsta

But thou the Cabinet

R EAST

that on he Turks t with a -in-Chief. onsidered could be A week ord Harretary of y of an coops can

lvance to is reply,

gdad, then, absolutely carried out or by one n, exclusive yeh, Ahwaz

e another t it was Bagdad. sent here plan for Kemball, ntion the That With ' Nothing nce of its

owing to ram from Consider and with Aziziya." vision (of

MESOPOTAMIA: THE ADVANCE TO KUT

Meanwhile at home the question had been (October 4) referred to Sir E. Barrow, military secretary at the India Office. Barrow's opinion was that an attempt to reach Bagdad with the present force would involve unjustifiable risk.

Next day (October 5) came a cablegram from Sir John Nixon stating that the Turks had ceased their retreat and taken up a position at Ctesiphon. The reply to Nixon's demand for more troops was that no reinforce-

ments could be spared.

On October 6 the opinion of the General Staff at the War Office was taken. Their opinion was decided. They considered that an attempt to hold Bagdad except with larger forces and increased river transport would be to court disaster. Of that opinion the Government of India was informed, and the Viceroy cabled in reply: "Orders to stop further advance were telegraphed vesterday to General Nixon."

Seemingly the question had been settled, and it was evidently so regarded on the spot, for the troops at Kut had read out to them the following Army Order:-

The General Officer Commanding 6th Division wishes to tender his grateful thanks to all ranks of the division for the gallant and noble spirit in which they have advanced some 180 miles from Amara, defeated the enemy in an extremely strong position, and moved on another 50 miles or so in pursuit.

That we did not catch the retreating Turks is due to the fact of the shallow water of the river, and to the fact that the Turks

are endowed by nature with strong knees.

He wishes he could have announced to the troops the end of their labours in Mesopotamia, but these operations naturally depend on those operations now being carried out in the Dardanelles, whence we now hope for good news.

He desires to tell the troops that orders have been received from Government in England that we are, for the present, to hold the position we have gained and thus our present orders are not to advance to Bagdad. It is the intention, therefore, of the G.O.C. to make the force as comfortable as it is possible to do under the circumstances; tents, etc., will be brought up as soon as possible. (Signed) R. G. PEEL,

Colonel, General Staff.

But though the orders referred to had been received. the Cabinet had on October 5 appointed a committee

MESC

Meanw

-to Kut t

arrived a

place on

Military

the exist

being pus

consisting

of infant

About th

have bee

being bro

The Com

referred t

provided

guarantee

The Secre

Viceroy t

and the G

nople loo

presumab

of a striki

that som

Bagdad b

mated str

To this re

in his jud

occupy Ba

joined (Oc

he has is

information

Turks by

Chief in]

Parliamer

routine co

of State ac

left to ac

The cir

of the Foreign Office, General Staff, Admiralty, and India Office, to consider an advance on Bagdad "in all its possibilities and policy," on the ground that political reasons made such an occupation desirable.

More interchanges of views took place with the Government of India, and Sir Beauchamp Duff was again asked for his opinion. It was that while the troops available could capture Bagdad, they would not be able to hold the place against a counter-attack in mass, and that the effect of having to retire would be disastrous. He doubted also whether with the then insufficient number of light draft steamers the troops at Bagdad could be adequately supplied. This opinion was not sent to the Home Government in full. The Viceroy's reply was limited to the statement that in the view of the Commander-in-Chief in India it would be unwise to occupy Bagdad with present forces.

In the Government at home, however, the proposal was being pressed, and consequently on October 8 the Secretary of State for India sent two telegrams, one to the Viceroy, the other to Sir John Nixon. The telegram to the Viceroy ran: "The Cabinet are so impressed with the great political and military advantages of occupation of Bagdad that every effort will be made by us to supply the force necessary. We do not wish to attempt it with insufficient forces. I shall be glad to know whether you are satisfied that one division will suffice." To Sir John Nixon he wired: "Very urgent. To both occupy and hold Bagdad what addition to your present force are you confident will be necessary?"

Nixon replied that he was confident no additions to his present force were necessary to take Bagdad, but that he would need an additional division and one cavalry regiment permanently to occupy the city. He asked the Government of India to send him more river

craft as an urgent need.

Referred to once more for their view the General Staff at the War Office at home urged that if Bagdad

116

ralty, and igdad "in ound that sirable.

with the Duff was while the would not attack in would be the then the troops his opinion full. The ment that India it h present

ober 8 the grams, one ixon. The net are so ary advantor will be We do not I shall be one division d: "Very what addint will be

dditions to agdad, but n and one city. He more river

he General if Bagdad was to be occupied Nixon must have another two divisions. Sir E. Barrow took the same view.

Meanwhile Kemball had been sent up from Basra to Kut to interview Townshend. The Chief of Staff arrived at Kut on October 19, and the interview took place on the very day that at home the Naval and Military General Staff reported against the project on the existing footing. Coincidentally too there was being pushed up to Townshend a feeble reinforcement consisting of five squadrons of cavalry, two battalions of infantry, and one battery of Royal Horse Artillery. About the problem of transport nothing appears to have been done. Coincidentally also pressure was being brought to bear on the Government of India. The Commander-in-Chief in India again had the matter referred to him, and this time assented to the project provided a full division of reinforcements could be guaranteed to reach Mesopotamia within two months. The Secretary of State on October 21 represented to the Viceroy that prospects in Gallipoli being very uncertain, and the German attempt to break through to Constantinople looking as though it would succeed, "we"presumably the British Government—" have great need of a striking success in the East." He added a warning that some 60,000 Turks might be concentrated at Bagdad by January, though the Turks' then present estimated strength in that quarter was only about 9,000. To this representation the reply of the Viceroy was that in his judgment the right policy was to take the risk and occupy Bagdad without delay. The Secretary of State rejoined (October 31): "If Nixon is satisfied that the force he has is sufficient, he may march on Bagdad." information as to probable heavy concentration of Turks by January was not sent to the Commander-in-Chief in Mesopotamia. This was explained before the Parliamentary Commission of Inquiry as arising from routine consequently upon the telegram of the Secretary of State addressed to the Viceroy being marked "private."

The circumstance remains that General Nixon was left to act without knowledge of this essential piece of

information. All the facts just outlined are given in the Report of the Mesopotamia Commission, but not in chronological order as here. Their sequence, clarifying their relationship, leaves the origin of the project beyond doubt, and equally beyond doubt the responsibility for the events which followed. There was pressure upon the Government of India; pressure on the spot in Mesopotamia; a "hustle" that forced on the scheme in the teeth of responsible professional advice; a desire to snatch a political effect; the impatience that could not realise the foundation of success in war. Very different was this rashness from the audacity that had marked Sir John Nixon's strokes earlier in the campaign. But the very success which had attended them because they were audacious and not rash prompted this interference by those who had not taken the trouble to understand the conditions.

What was the force with which General Townshend. nearly 400 miles already from Basra, was expected and directed to embark upon this enterprise? It consisted of the 6th Division, but the 6th Division worn down by a hard campaign. Adding the cavalry brigade, under Brigadier-General Roberts, and the reinforcements sent forward, it did not muster much more than 15,000 men. The General's own estimate put the effectives at 11,000 at most. Some of the battalions were at half strength. Nor was Sir John Nixon in a situation to afford further aid. At the outside the entire force in Mesopotamia at this time did not exceed 25,000, and they were now in occupation of a vast extent of country. The march from Kut to Bagdad, nearly 100 miles, would have to be made by the troops on foot, for the transport, owing to this effort to stretch it still further, would not and could not suffice for more than the carriage of supplies. To make matters worse, information had come in that the enemy, commanded by Nur-ed-Din, was concentrated at Laj, and with 38 guns was strongly posted near Ctesiphon behind a double line of defences. The attempt to dislodge him was to be made, notwithstanding that, owing to limitation of transport, it had taken six

MESO

weeks to l Basra.

On rece Townshend soldier even circumstant to the Vi in which h

These slightly the sacrare not a soldier a look ove sea, and

It was experience They were pointed ou of forces forces. H been availa tion of his a swift blo him in tim transport, point had but by all reports, th fixed upor matter. V ments wit forward fro in addition transport Nixon had —that of " saddled wit capture an

time left wi

given in

but not clarifying

et beyond

bility for

ure upon

in Meso-

cheme in

a desire

that had

ampaign.

1 because

his interto under-

wnshend.

ected and

consisted

down by

ie, under

ents sent

000 men.

at 11,000

strength.

d further

opotamia

vere now

ne march

have to

rt, owing

not and

supplies.

e in that

concen-

sted near

es. The

estanding

taken six

MESOPOTAMIA: THE ADVANCE TO KUT

weeks to bring the supplies and reinforcements up from Basra.

On receiving the orders transmitted to him, General Townshend thought it his duty to protest, a course no soldier ever takes save in what he regards as extreme circumstances. He wrote, not to Sir John Nixon, but to the Viceroy of India. The passage in this letter in which he described the state of his force ran:—

These troops of mine are tired and their tails are not up, but slightly down; the Mohammedans are not pleased at approaching the sacred precincts of Suliman Pak at Ctesiphon—the troops are not confident and have had enough; as it is now, the British soldier and the Sepoy, as the Roman soldier did under Belisarius, look over their shoulders and are fearful of the distance from the sea, and go down, in consequence, with every imaginable disease.

It was just because Townshend was a skilful and experienced commander that he entertained misgivings. They were only too well founded. Already it has been pointed out that in this campaign the relative strength of forces was secondary to the question of moving forces. Had a suitable and sufficient river transport been available Townshend, despite the numerical limitation of his troops might have forestalled the enemy by a swift blow, and assuming that reinforcements reached him in time, could without doubt have held on. Suitable transport, however, was not available. Though that point had been insisted upon, not only by Nixon himself, but by all the naval and military authorities in their reports, the attention of the Cabinet at home had been fixed upon reinforcements—the comparatively minor matter. What was the good of discussing reinforcements without discussing how they were to be sent forward from Basra and how they were to be supplied in addition to the troops already on the spot by a transport inadequate even for the latter purpose? Nixon had given his assent to a strictly limited operation -that of "opening the road to" Bagdad. He had been saddled with a very much larger enterprise—the proposed capture and occupation of that place—and at the same time left without the means of carrying the enterprise out.

Townshend had his misgivings, since he knew that if he could not forestall the enemy the enemy would in all probability forestall him. It was certain in any even that the Turks would make every effort to do so. The Turkish communications with Mosul were enormously long, and in that fact lay the main chance in favour of this British offensive. But to take advantage of it swiftness of movement was imperative. Much time had already been lost in official beating about the bush, and the delay had been of value to the enemy. So far as the means of ensuring the success of the intended enterprise were concerned, the delay had resulted in nothing.

Finding himself so placed, there was only one thing which, short of resigning and breaking his career, Townshend could do. It was to make up for the lack of transport facilities as far as it could be done by forcing the pace of his march. This was asking much from the troops under his command, having regard to

their condition, but what else was there for it?

At the outset there was little opposition. Only skirmishing parties of the enemy were met with. The distance to Aziziya was speedily covered. From that point, half-way to Bagdad, the real defence began. As informations, previously received, had declared, the Turks were found concentrated at Laj. Behind them, within easy distance up the river, they had the fortified position at Ctesiphon to fall back upon. The enemy at Laj was attacked (November 21) and dislodged.

Having occupied Laj, Townshend, after the briefest possible delay, pushed on to Ctesiphon. It was important to anticipate the arrival of enemy reinforcements

Ancie

bed 1

Pool

known to be on the way.

Ctesiphon, not more than 16 miles—one day's long march—from Bagdad, is not a town or village, but the site of the ancient city marked by mounds covering its ruins. Nothing but the "Arch of Ctesiphon" remains to attest bygone importance. There is, hard by the site, a wretched hamlet called Bustan, but the existence

ER EAST

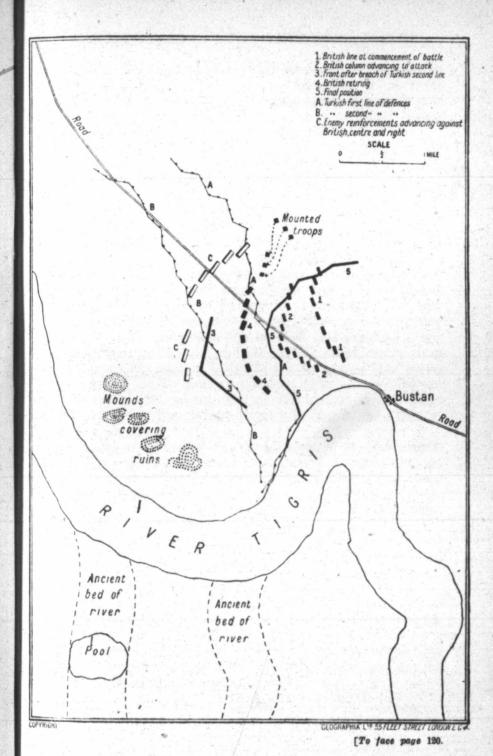
knew that emy would tain in any rt to do so. were enorichance in advantage ive. Much g about the the enemy, he intended resulted in

one thing his career, or the lack e done by sking much gregard to

ion. Only with. The From that nce began. declared, ij. Behind they had back upon. er 21) and

he briefest was imporforcements

day's long ge, but the overing its i" remains and by the e existence



MES

of these

to emp cause for unoccup into its

From Ctesiphore vantage the concover for from the is a sha at all, uside of the long and country ages ago of the resurround a quarter readily both batto turn attack, Again reaching while, it 75 miles

Beyond to be

strength it pruder stiffened

Gener night material ascertair other coturn bac

MESOPOTAMIA: THE ADVANCE TO KUT

of these few mud huts by the riverside served merely to emphasise the surrounding solitude. It is little cause for wonder that in this lonely land, as vast as it is unoccupied, the Indian soldiers, as they marched deeper into its recesses, "looked over their shoulders."

From the enemy's point of view the position at Ctesiphon was well chosen. Besides affording a certain vantage of observation, the mounds lent themselves to the construction of defence works, and gave some cover for the guns. It would not be easy to attack from the river because just below the position there is a sharp bend which would have to be negotiated, if at all, under a concentrated fire. And on the opposite side of the great waterway also there is a tongue of land, long and narrow and marked off from the adjacent country by the ancient bed of the river, which had here ages ago formed an acute loop. The modern course of the river cuts across the neck of this peninsula, but surrounded as it is by a kind of dry moat, more than a quarter of a mile in breadth, the tongue of land could readily be held against assault. Thus established on both banks, the enemy was secure against any attempt to turn him. The attack upon him had to be a frontal attack, or none.

Again, if defeated he could reckon at least upon reaching the Diala, not more than ten miles distant, while, if victorious, he had the attacking force some

75 miles distant from its base.

Beyond all this the Turkish force was ascertained to be some 13,000 strong. Notwithstanding that strength, the enemy, in view of the proved prowess and impetuous valour of the British-Indian troops, deemed it prudent to keep behind his two lines of entrenchments, stiffened by redoubts.

General Townshend arrived at Ctesiphon after a night march of nine miles from Laj. On November 22, at daybreak, he attacked. Having regard to the ascertained and evident force of the enemy he had no other course open to him. He had gone too far to

turn back without a battle.

His attack, directed against the enemy's position on the left (or East) bank of the river, had all the chances against it save one—the military virtue of his men. Despite the character of this service they had been unexpectedly called upon to perform, their discipline was firm. And the attack went well—well beyond anticipation. It cannot be said that the "artillery preparation" was adequate. There were not the guns. But, incomplete though it was, when the infantry went forward, the Turks, though they resisted stubbornly, were overpowered by the sheer impetuosity of the rush. The British-Indian troops, compelled to advance over a flat tract giving little or no cover, in the approach to the Turkish first line, lost heavily. That, however, did not shake them; it added fuel to their fury. After a sharp struggle in the enemy trenches with the bayonet, the Turks (the 45th Division) broke. The remnant bolted for their second line, a mile to the rear. the attackers close upon them. The wreck of the flying Turks and the van of the attacking column entered the second line to all intents together. The second line also was broken, and the attack swooped on to the batteries behind it. Eight of the Turkish guns speedily fell into the assailants' hands. It looked as though, after all, the battle would end in a victory.

Just at this juncture, however, a heavy column of Turkish reinforcements arrived—just at this juncture in the very nick of time. They were thrown into the fight forthwith. Townshend now found himself faced with something like a two to one superiority. The contingency he had feared had come to pass—the enemy had forestalled him. His own men, too, were spent with their exertions. Against the newcomers they could not hold the breach in the Turks' second line, wide though it was. The struggle was obstinate and bitter, the British striving to widen the breach; the enemy to press in upon the salient. Finally, weight of numbers told. The British troops were little by little pushed out. Sullenly they retired upon the Turkish

MES(

first line

breach ir He was n was now into a du That n in "turr trenches. done. It Townsher gerous to risky as open. To that he n retiremen to Laj. fellows, & crowded t without 1 and the fi river, it to That w more Tur earlier (N

General v must be threat? addition t passing to expected, right, tha river, and of retreat inferiority ning shor

engaged o

wounded a

General 1

Turkish f

to Irak (t

MESOPOTAMIA: THE ADVANCE TO KUT

osition on ne chances his men. had been discipline ll beyond "artillery the guns. ntry went ubbornly.

the rush.

ance over

ER EAST

proach to rever, did After a with the ke. The the rear, of the column ier. The swooped Turkish It looked

id in a

olumn of juncture into the elf faced ty. The se enemy re spent ers they and line, sate and sch; the reight of by little Turkish

first line. Contenting himself with having closed the breach in his second line, the enemy did not follow up. He was not in a condition to attempt it. The long day was now fading into night, and the battle died down into a duel between the

into a duel between the opposing guns.

That night and next day were occupied by the British in "turning round" the captured Turkish first line trenches. But the question arose of what was to be done. It was plain that with the force at his disposal Townshend could not go on. It was hardly less dangerous to fall back. The General saw, however, that, risky as it was, the latter was in truth the one course open. To the enemy he put on a bold front as indicating that he meant to hold on. Meanwhile he prepared for retirement, and with that in view evacuated his wounded There were many steamer loads of these poor fellows, and for want of transport they had to be crowded together like cattle. They bore their sufferings without murmuring. Also through lack of transport and the fire of hostile guns on the right bank of the river, it took two whole days to remove them.

That was unfortunate, because during those two days more Turkish reinforcements had arrived. Eight days earlier (November 17) the India Office had wired out to General Nixon that intelligence received disclosed a Turkish force of 30,000 on the march from Anatolia to Irak (the Bagdad province) under the command of General von der Goltz. Not very cheerful news, it must be admitted. How could Nixon meet such a threat? Wherever it came from, with this further addition to his strength the enemy showed signs of passing to the offensive. And he made, as might be expected, a move threatening to envelop the British right, that is the part of the line farthest from the river, and to throw his cavalry on to the British line of retreat. Unfortunately, once more, besides his inferiority in numbers, Townshend found himself running short of supplies. The transport could not be engaged on that work and on the evacuation of the wounded at the same time. There was not enough of

it. Besides, the enemy had now posted on the right (or west) bank more batteries designed to bar the passage of the river to Laj. In the circumstances further delay was impossible. Covering the manœuvre by a feint attack the British General gave orders for a retreat.

Skill of T
Umm
dispo
stand
secon
tangle
works
on th
Town
Secon
Britis
—Sur
at Hi
Alesss
of Ju
parati

REDU battle, force set on Nove retiring a power lines of the upon a under the mar daring a destruct able mo

ER EAST

the right bar the umstances manœuvre rders for a

CHAPTER VIII

THE SIEGE AND FALL OF KUT

Skill of Townshend's retirement from Ctesiphon—Turkish repulse at Umm al Tubal—Opening of the siege of Kut—Townshend's dispositions for defence—Episodes of the siege—Reasons for the stand at Kut—Enemy's first attempt to take Kut by storm—The second, and final, attempt—Preparations for relief—The transport tangle—Haste of the first Relief Expedition—The Turkish blockade works—Effects of transport delays on British operations—Attack on the Turkish positions at Hanna—Causes of its non-success—Townshend's measures for holding out—Enemy air attacks—Second effort at relief; the battle of Es Sinn—Causes of the British reverse—Townshend's Army Order to the Kut garrison—Supplies begin to fail—The third effort of relief—British victory at Hanna and check at Sanna-i-yat—Indecisive attack at Beit Aiessa—Attempts to reprovision Kut by aeroplane—The episode of Julnar—Townshend receives instructions to surrender—Preparations for capitulation—Fall after 147 days.

Reduced by losses both on the march up and in the battle, totalling over 3,500 men, Townshend's little force set out on its retreat from Ctesiphon in the night, on November 25. The Turks at once closed in. The retiring movement had eluded what was intended to be a powerful attack, and the enemy reached the British lines only to find them evacuated. Thus began a march of eight days, which, considering the condition of the troops, the fact that it followed immediately upon a desperate battle, and that it was carried out under the pressure of superior forces, ranks it among the marvels of campaigning alike as regards endurance, daring and leadership. That the British force escaped destruction is to be attributed in part to its still remarkable mobility, notwithstanding that it was worn out—

compared with what it had been a thing of threads and patches—and in part to the dash and boldness of the cavalry. The enemy had many more guns, but he was less efficient in the cavalry arm. To destroy the British force he had first to bring it to a halt, and then to concentrate his artillery upon it. And there can be no question but that that was his design. While in furtherance of that object he sought repeatedly to envelop the retreating division by manœuvring towards its left, the difficulty was to penetrate the rearguard, supported by a cavalry his own horse could not cope with. Meanwhile, doubtless to his astonishment, the pace of the retreating column showed few signs of slackening. It was a pace with which the Turkish troops found it hard to keep up.

On scanty and insufficient food snatched in haste, with nothing more than brief intervals of sleep, unwashed, footsore, the retiring column tramped on, the boom of guns where the rearguard was in action perpetually in each man's ears. One toilsome day across the monotonous solitude followed another. Night fell, and dog-tired men threw themselves down beside their bivouac fires to rise almost more weary than before. But marvellously few fell out. The camp fires flicked upon faces set and grim, and grimy, but they were those of men who, knowing that they had done great deeds of arms, were confident of themselves, and, despite adversity, confident in their commander. Had not the brilliant episode of Amara proved that they had every reason to be?

Then it was plain that the enemy found this chase by no means a promenade. The Turks were panting after the retreating column, but visibly panting, for the hostile force consisted largely of reinforcements which, in order to arrive at Ctesiphon in time, had already faced a succession of forced marches.

General Townshend reached Laj on November 26, and on that day and the next he rested his troops. On the night of November 27–28 he set out for Aziziya. This movement was not molested.

On N the Brit enemy, routed k (Harians After

November Here,
The flot had got is the common river gure the support of What wistranded were at beyond process.

command as the m the road Brigade, 16th (Inc. The er

up (Nove had hasti time. The At day

At day attack in Ctesiphor and the e a strong c movemen plan, was

In the frontal a river by was disal She was t ER EAST

reads and eas of the out he was he British d then to can be no in furthernvelop the sits left, supported h. Meanuce of the ening. It found it

in haste, sleep, und on, the ction peray across light fell, side their in before. es flicked vere those eat deeds , despite d not the had every

his chase panting iting, for recements dalready

nber 26, s troops. Aziziya. On November 29 there was a sharp clash between the British and the Turkish cavalry at Kutunie. The enemy, attempting to loot stranded river craft, was routed by a charge of the 14th Hussars and the 7th (Hariana) Lancers.

After another night march the main column on

November 30 reached Umm al Tubal.

Here, however, a halt became for the time imperative. The flotilla, which accompanied the retreating force, had got into difficulties in the shoals of the river. Under the command of Captain Nunn, R.N., D.S.O., the light river gunboats had rendered brilliant service in covering the supply transports and barges, for it was to them most of all that the enemy had turned his attention. What with sweeping the banks, and getting off barges stranded in the shallows, the crews of the gunboats were at work night and day. Their gallantry was beyond praise.

From Umm al Tubal a Mixed Brigade under the command of General Melliss—"lion-hearted Melliss," as the men called him—was sent forward to keep open the road to Kut. It consisted of the 30th Infantry Brigade, a howitzer battery of the R.F.A., and the 16th (Indian) cavalry.

The enforced halt had enabled the enemy to catch up (November 30) and the same night the Mixed Brigade had hastily to be recalled. Happily they came back in

time. They covered 80 miles in three days.

At daybreak (December 1) the Turks launched their attack in great strength. The British, facing towards Ctesiphon, were posted with their left upon the river, and the enemy, in addition to a frontal onset, dispatched a strong column with the object of carrying out a turning movement against the British right. The plan, as a plan, was good. It failed from three causes.

In the first instance the hostile troops told off for the frontal attack found themselves enfiladed from the river by the fire of the gunboats. In this duel *Firefly* was disabled by a shell which penetrated her boiler. She was taken in tow by *Comet*, but both boats grounded,

and at the finish, though Firefly was got off and drifted downstream, Comet had to be abandoned. Efforts to tow her off made by Sumana were not given up until the Turks had advanced and begun to bombard the vessels at a range of fifty yards. By this time, however, the gunboats had done their work.

For besides this enfilade fire the frontal attack was severely hammered by the British field guns. Townshend wisely concentrated all his artillery upon it, and

in the absence of cover he broke it up.

Finally the Cavalry Brigade once more proved its dash by charging into the enemy's encircling column. The troopers, whom the Turkish fire could not check, slashed through the hostile lines, turned, and hewed their way back. The column was thrown into confusion.

In brief, though heavily outnumbered, Townshend, by a masterly use of his resources, had won. He gave the enemy no chance to rally. The march upon Kut was at once renewed in echelons of brigades, a tactic which at once covered the land transport and foiled

any further effort to outflank him.

It is extraordinary how long the miles grow on a march of this kind, as day follows day. Halts had to be lengthened, stages shortened. There was no help for it. The column trailed on though still safe, still unbroken. At length, on the eighth day the slender minaret of the solitary mosque of Kut rose above the distant horizon. The guns were booming as usual to the rear, but the toils of this desert tramp were over. In its way, though the reverse manœuvre, the retreat had been as great a feat as the dash of the "Regatta."

The vanguard reached Kut on December 2; the main body marched in on the 3rd. Not until December 7 could the enemy, after his rough handling at Umm al Tubal, arrive in strength sufficient to attempt an investment. The interval of four days was precious. Kut was already full of wounded who had come down from Ctesiphon in shiploads. Those who could so be disposed of, as well as the Cavalry Brigade and many of the transport animals, were sent downstream to Ali-el-

Gharbi, tion has 6,000 an the answ to be prorelief.

The tr Most had all were less, had of prepar

Kut lie measures an advanted bend, whethe village of outlying together factory we trenches.

North two miles old Turki the river the farthetion, havi on each fa able thick face was To cover the fort w

Between that side gardens a the town, was open a brick-fic as observe of a stiff of

nd drifted Efforts to up until abard the however,

tack was Townon it, and

roved its g column. ot check, nd hewed confusion. shend, by He gave upon Kut, a tactic and foiled

row on a lts had to s no help safe, still ne slender above the s usual to were over. he retreat egatta." ; the main ecember 7 t Umm al an investous. Kut lown from e disposed ny of the to Ali-elGharbi, while the route yet remained open. The question has been asked why the native population, between 6,000 and 7,000 souls, was not turned out. To that the answer is that nobody then expected the investment to be prolonged, and everybody felt assured of a speedy relief.

The troops needed besides a brief interval of repose. Most had not had the boots off their feet for ten days; all were war-worn; many in rags. Discipline, nevertheless, had not been shaken, and the work, when it began, of preparing to stand a siege was pushed with energy.

Kut lies in a somewhat deep bend of the river. The measures of defence were in the first instance to establish an advanced and support line across the neck of the bend, which is about a mile in breadth, and next to secure the village—Woolpress village, as it was called—a sort of outlying suburb on the opposite side of the Tigris, together with the Liquorice Factory adjoining. The factory was loopholed, and the village surrounded by trenches. At this time the village was still connected with Kut by a bridge of boats.

North of Kut, across the neck of the bend, the lines, two miles distant from the town, extended from the old Turkish fort on the right to, on the left, a point on the river about a mile above the Liquorice Factory on the farther bank. The old fort was a square construction, having walls of baked mud about 450 feet in length on each face, and some ten feet in height, but of considerable thickness. They were loopholed. On the north face was a kind of projecting redan called the Bastion. To cover the garrison against shell fire the space inside the fort was converted into a maze of dugouts.

Between the fort and the last houses of the town on that side lay a space occupied for the most part by gardens and groves of date palm. Directly north of the town, facing inland towards the desert, the ground was open and mainly bare. Part of it, however, was a brick-field, marked by a group of kilns, now utilised as observation posts. This brick-field position, capable of a stiff defence if need were, formed a support for the

centre of the line. Westward, on the farther side of the town and along the river, the gardens and palm groves were again met with. To a certain extent the groves screened the defensive lines here from the enemy's

observation posts on the opposite bank.

Taking the force under General Townshend's command, these dispositions were, as events proved, thoroughly sound. As much was made of the resources as could be done, but not too much. Accommodation had to be provided for about 8,000 horses and pack mules, besides heavy battery bullocks. Could the length of the siege have been foreseen it would, of course, have been a desirable measure to have reduced the numbers of these various animals from the first and thus have saved a very large consumption of barley, but that the force would be beleaguered in Kut for five long months was neither at this date nor for many weeks later considered even a probability.

Previously to the siege the base hospital had been just outside of and to the north-west of the town, on the edge of the western area of gardens. It had with all haste to be removed. Beds, apparatus, furniture and injured men had to be carried into the town itself, a huddled mass of more or less mean houses bordering narrow lanes. The wounded were disposed as well as it could be done in the buildings judged most suitable and in the bazaars. The devotion and efficiency of the Medical Service were, considering its straitened resources,

admirable.

All along the line outside there was trench-digging, sand-bagging, the construction of dugouts and the excavation of dumps for munitions. The preparations for a siege are manifold, and in the interval before the enemy closed in they went on night and day. Happily for the time being there was no cause for anxiety as regarded food supplies.

Kut, needless to say, might have been abandoned, for, with the start he had gained, it was open to Townshend, had he thought fit, after a day or two days' interval, to have continued his march. Apart, however,

from t 180 mg the ass relief, & of hold upon A results shend. world tl he issue be exp Sheik S Appare wireless forceme ments.

So fa sniping, which I board. ment of effort to stream. seeing t post at in, it wa end so on to th the ene Two m R. T. S. perilous dead of swim th and ove if undet and fire followin they we seemed

ER EAST

and palm extent the he enemy's

thoroughly as could be had to be les, besides f the siege been a derrs of these ve saved a t the force nonths was considered

l had been e town, on t had with s, furniture town itself, s bordering as well as it ost suitable ency of the d resources,

nch-digging, and the exreparations l before the r. Happily anxiety as

abandoned, in to Towntwo days' rt, however, from the risks and hardships involved in covering the 180 more miles separating him from Amara, there were the assurances he had received of comparatively speedy relief, and the importance, military as well as political, of holding up the enemy at Kut. A Turkish advance upon Amara would have threatened to undo the whole results so far of the Mesopotamia Expedition. Townshend, too, was still in communication with the outside world through his wireless installation, and on December 8 he issued the announcement that reinforcements might be expected at Sheik Saad a week from that date. Sheik Saad is some 25 miles farther down the Tigris. Apparently an intimation to that effect had been wirelessed from Basra. The non-arrival of these reinforcements proved to be the first of a series of disappointments.

So far the enemy's activity had been confined to sniping, and to turning back by gunfire the last steamers which had tried to run the blockade with wounded on board. On December 9, however, the Turkish bombardment opened. In the midst of it the enemy made an effort to rush the bridge of boats which lay slightly up stream. The attempt was gallantly beaten off, but, seeing that it was certain to be renewed, and that the post at the farther end of the bridge had been driven in, it was decided to blow up the structure at the farther end so that, broken, it might be swung by the current on to the Kut side of the river. It was urgent to prevent the enemy from seizing the boats and other material. Two men, Lieut. A. B. Matthews, R.E., and Lieut. R. T. Sweet, of the Gurkha Rifles, volunteered for this perilous piece of service. It was necessary to wait until dead of night. Then in the darkness the two had to swim the river, no easy thing against a four-knot current, and over a distance of nearly 250 yards. After that, if undetected, they had to plant their charge of explosive and fire it. For those concerned in the duty there was, following the departure of the two heroes, for heroes they were, an interval of acute suspense. The odds seemed dead against them, and the attempt would have

been none the less devoted and daring had it failed. Presently, however, from near the farther side of the dark expanse of water the night was stabbed by a flash, followed by a roar, and a wild outburst of hostile rifle shots. The bridge began to heave and swing.

The two men got back safely.

The news of this exploit ran through the lines with the cheering effect of a victory. There was at the same time the story of the Brigadier-General who at the wildest of personal risks had dashed out across the bridge after two of his officers had fallen wounded in defence of it, and tried to carry one of them in. And it was a good thing, perhaps, that this cheerful news came out for the following morning (December 10) the enemy made his first attempt to take Kut by storm. His opening assault was beaten, so was a second and a third. But these repulses, severe as they were, proved not enough. In the afternoon a fourth attack came forward. It met with no better fortune. The British troops had set their teeth and were not to be shifted. Towards evening there was a last burst. The dirty little town was deafened with the roar of battle. The roar, however, died down without coming nearer. Once more the enemy had been flung back.

He was not satisfied with this trial of strength. Next morning, under cover of a heavy shell fire, he again came forward. It was only an additional and costly disappointment. The British defences looked slight, and to all appearances a mass attack ought to have romped over them. The appearances were deceptive. The value of a trench is the value of the men in it.

Thus foiled the foe fell back upon his batteries, and day by day, at irregular intervals, indulged in bursts of shooting, accompanied by sniping which was not irregular but persistent. Behind the lines the bombardment caused relatively few casualties. While the projectiles rained down there was an absence of all signs of life above ground; nothing to indicate that some thousands of men were ready to spring out at a moment's warning. The force had dug itself in to some pur-

pose. town. For

made monoto waiting Genera toured the hot that no supplie word.

Opinio

Chris

thing 1 The en not ha waste their G that th to push lished 1 if held the ene reinforc stormin by a gr forces (This ge the poi the seq fort. I had bee breach forward column in the f were me

the oth

it failed.
de of the
ped by a
of hostile
id swing.

ines with the same he wildest idge after nce of it, as a good e out, for my made s opening ird. But t enough. . It met had set s evening town was however, more the

th. Next he again and costly ed slight, t to have deceptive. n it.

bursts of was not bombarde the prof all signs that some moment's some pur-

pose. Most of the misery of the shelling was felt in the town.

For a fortnight after their last repulse the Turks made no further move. There was little save the monotony of morning and evening "hates." While waiting for the relief, of which as yet there was no sign, General Townshend kept his own eye on everything; toured along the lines; visited dugouts; went through the hospitals; inspected the commissariat; and saw that no man wanted what ought to be and could be supplied. Everywhere he had a cheery and appropriate word. Meanwhile, both in the town and in the lines, the chief topic of speculation was the date of the relief. Opinion generally looked for it at about Christmas.

Christmas approached and outside headquarters nothing more definite was to be gleaned than rumours. The enemy's bursts of fire had evidently in his opinion not had the desired effect of causing the besieged to waste their ammunition. Acting on the counsel of their General they husbanded it "like gold." Realising that the blockade was likely to be prolonged; anxious to push in force down the river before the British established their footing in the country; and fearing that if held Kut would probably in the finish be relieved, the enemy, having brought up further and considerable reinforcements—another division—once more essayed a storming enterprise. It was preceded on December 24 by a great bombardment. Every gun of the Turkish forces on both sides of the river was put into action. This general shelling, of course, was intended to mask the point of the attack, which it was known would be the sequel. The point of the attack proved to be the fort. By a concentration of guns upon it the Bastion had been breached, and though to a certain extent the breach had been offset by wiring in, the enemy threw forward what no doubt he judged to be an overwhelming column of some 6,000 infantry. They pressed onward, in the face of a withering fire and, although the losses were most severe, and hundreds perished upon the wire the others swarmed through the breach and into the

Bastion, carried forward by the impetus of numbers. The British batteries, however, were in turn focussed on the work, and its mud walls crumbled into ruins. And in the gap beyond it was found that the defenders had built up an inner breastwork. The Turks tried to rush it. They tried again and again. Time and again it came to a struggle at close quarters, only, however, yet again to prove that the Turk was no match for the veterans of the Indian Army with the bayonet. Meanwhile, efforts had been made to scale the walls of the main fort, men climbing on each other's shoulders, or using short ladders. Nowhere could a footing be established. In the midst of this deadly conflict the guns on both sides were busy, and squalls of shrapnel lashed assailants and defenders alike. The defence, which was magnificent, finally triumphed. So magnificent was it, indeed, and so severe this time had been the lesson, that this was the last endeavour to take Kut by assault. In and around the ruins of the Bastion, and the walls of the main fort, the enemy's dead lay everywhere. The total Turkish losses in this, for them, disastrous affair were some 2,000 men.

Christmas Day dawned in peace; after the pandemonium and carnage of the day and night before a silence reigned that seemed as strange as it was impressive. Not a shot was fired. In the still cold air—for the weather was now wintry—the snow-clad Pushti-Kuh mountains marking the boundary of the great plain and the uplands of Persia reared themselves clear and majestic on the eastern horizon. The smoke of fires from dugouts floated lazily upward, but over all brooded a Sabbath stillness, and in dugouts and billets the thoughts of men turned from that far away land to home. For two months and more they had been without letters or news, save that which the wireless told them

of the world's doings.

Of course it was only a pause. Next day observers on the brick kilns saw that the enemy was busy moving his batteries. The intention soon appeared. He was transferring guns from north of Kut to the opposite side of the miglidesirous that the crow fli

On tl the pre the san of the enterpr In the his cor ill-healt for his any ma too wel ings, tl successi at his be take do wit resignir the Sta soldier, Genera Army, what I The lat Indian troops At this shend's 12th I only re burden of river as large

in the

indeed.

But

numbers. focussed nto ruins. defenders is tried to and again however. ch for the t. Meanlls of the ulders, or be estabe guns on nel lashed e, which ficent was he lesson, y assault.

before a was imcold air—
d Pusht-ireat plain
clear and
e of fires
ll brooded
billets the
y land to
n without
told them

the walls

erywhere.

disastrous

observers y moving He was opposite side of the river, where from above the Liquorice Factory he might enfilade the British lines. Evidently he was desirous of speeding up the siege and the reason was that the Relief Force had reached Ali-el-Gharbi, as the

crow flies forty miles downstream.

On the face of it this looked hopeful. Unfortunately the preparations for the relief of Kut were marked by the same hustle and the same oversight of the essentials of the campaign as had pushed Townshend into an enterprise which had not even a fair chance of success. In the middle of December Sir John Nixon had resigned his command. The ground officially given out was ill-health and in poor health the General certainly was, for his worries and anxieties would have broken down any man. To put it plainly, he had had enough. Only too well was he aware that though, in fact, his proceedings, the affair of Kut apart, had been marvellously successful, the blame of the Kut affair would be laid at his door, while the credit of the Amara dash would be taken by those who had had nothing whatever to do with it save to add to its difficulties. Nixon, on resigning, was succeeded by Sir Percy Lake, Chief of the Staff of the Indian Army, an experienced and capable soldier, and he had arrived at Basra in company with General Sir F. Aylmer, Adjutant-General of the Indian Army, appointed at the same time to take command of what had now been designated the "Tigris Corps." The latter was to be reinforced by two divisions of the Indian Army sent back from France, as well as by Indian troops returned from Egypt after service in Gallipoli. At this time there were in Mesopotamia, besides Townshend's troops, nothing more than the remains of the 12th Division, under Gorringe, a mere handful, not only reduced by the fatigues of a hard campaign, but burdened with the duty of policing nearly 400 miles of river, as well as the occupation of a province nearly as large in area as Great Britain. A stand at Kut was, in the circumstances, imperative. No other course, indeed, could have saved the situation.

But numbers were not the chief concern. The old

problem of transport was still unsolved. The troops from France had been sent off to Basra in hot haste, and the orders were to push up to Kut without delay. How the troops were to be pushed up to Kut was left to the men on the spot. Owing to the haste of embarkation the reinforcing divisions arrived piecemeal—parts of one and parts of another. General Aylmer well knew it would take time to piece them together again. But he also knew that he could not afford the time and must make the best of it. A Staff of sorts had to be improvised, and the Staff went to work to lick the Expedition into some kind of shape. The force had very few heavy guns; in that respect, as already noted, the equipment of the Indian Army had been starved. Then there was the question-the question-of movement. The transport was no larger than it had been six months before. Insufficient as it had been then, it was doubly so now, since exactly twice the work had, somehow, to be done. A service which 500 tons of river shipping could barely have met was by some means or another to be conjured out of 150 tons. Of course that was the root of all the troubles. Political policies and plans were changed by those who treated this problem of transport as a detail. It was so essential a detail, however, that of the reinforcements which reached Basra, some 12,000 men were never able to get up the Tigris at all, and spent week after week at the base in inactivity. Had they been movable, these 12,000 men would have made all the difference.

Aylmer set out with a column at once hastily got together, badly equipped for attacks upon entrenched positions, and impeded in its mobility. Though he met with no opposition of any moment before reaching Aliel-Gharbi, the greater part of a month had gone by before he could advance his force so far, and in face of the impediments to have advanced so far was, in truth, good going. As before, the effects of deficiencies in transport fell upon the troops. The column had been got up to Amara by instalments. Beyond Amara the route had to be covered on foot, and the pace had to

One c at Basra forcemen impractic fying on ground fe By this t General I a sufficie effort in it was as Caucasus on either three m added to little hesi his comn to estima is now ki Russian upon this march ov resulted i positive g

be regula

on which

As to t when it I by storm, turned hi the place So long a maintain effectually round the garrison fi with the re fore, were Hanna an those at I R EAST

ne troops ot haste. ut delay. was left embarkaal-parts mer well er again. time and ad to be lick the had very oted, the d. Then ovement. k months s doubly omehow, shipping another was the nd plans

ald have
stily got
trenched
he met
sing Aliy before
of the
truth,
hoies in
ad been

ara the

had to

blem of

a detail,

d Basra,

ne Tigris

activity.

be regulated to the movement on the river of the supplies on which the Expedition was dependent.

One cause of the pressure put upon Headquarters at Basra was the fear that the enemy might mass reinforcements so formidable as to render the relief of Kut impracticable; another, that he was known to be fortifying on both banks of the river. There was good ground for each of these apprehensions, as events proved. By this time, the beginning of 1916, the Russians, under General Baratoff, had in Persia pushed on to Kermanshah; a sufficient reason for the Turks to put forth a special effort in Mesopotamia, and all the more reason because it was assumed that in the depth of the winter in the Caucasus, where the temperature is arctic, operations on either side were out of the question for the next three months. Under the influence of that belief, added to the Russian menace in Persia, the enemy had little hesitation in sending down the Tigris all the troops his communications would allow, and it was moderate to estimate those forces at 30,000 men. Of course, it is now known that the Grand Duke Nicholas, the new Russian Commander-in-Chief in the Caucasus, seized upon this opening to bring off the marvellous surprise march over the mountains north of Erzerum, which resulted in the fall of that fortress. It was the one positive good which the ill-wind of Kut yielded.

As to the second ground of apprehension, the enemy, when it became evident that Kut could not be taken by storm, and would have to be starved out, naturally turned his attention mainly to preventing the relief of the place. The position was peculiar in this respect. So long as he was between Kut and Amara, and could so maintain himself on both banks of the river, Kut was effectually isolated. It was only necessary to keep up round the town itself a blockade that might prevent the garrison from coming out into the open and co-operating with the relieving column. The real blockade works, therefore, were not the enemy's lines round Kut, but those at Hanna and Sanna-i-yat on the east side of the Tigris, and those at Es Sinn on the west side. The defences on the

east side consisted merely of lines of trenches cut parallel one behind the other; those on the west side were more elaborate—a chain of redoubts extending from the Tigris to the Shatt-el-Hai, one of the ancient main canals connecting the Tigris with the Euphrates, and still in the rainy season navigable, despite ages of neglect. by the native mahelas, flat-bottomed craft of the felucca type, exactly like those used in the days of the Babylonians. The chain of redoubts cut off a considerable triangle of country of which it formed the base and the Tigris and the Shatt-el-Hai the sides, with the junction of the canal and the river, just opposite to Kut, as the apex. This hostile disposition was skilful, and the western bank defences were more carefully made because the enemy before the finish realised that here lay the key of the position.

His great risk was that of a force striking up the Shatt-el-Hai from Nazariyeh, where the canal joins the Euphrates, or striking across the country from Amara, and turning him. Plans of a turning movement had suggested themselves to General Aylmer. They were, however, not approved. It was unfortunate, because at this time and for some time afterwards the enemy's defences on the west side of the river were incomplete.

It was unfortunate also that though the relieving column reached Ali-el-Gharbi about Christmas Day, attack upon the enemy there had to be delayed owing to transport difficulties for more than a week. In these matters celerity is everything. To Khalil Pasha, the Turkish commander, the interval was beyond estimation. In the course of it more Turkish reinforcements arrived, and one of the Turkish proceedings was to form at Shumran, where the line of redoubts joined the Tigris, an entrenched camp from which troops might either be ferried over the river, or used to stiffen the defence of the Es Sinn line as the case might be.

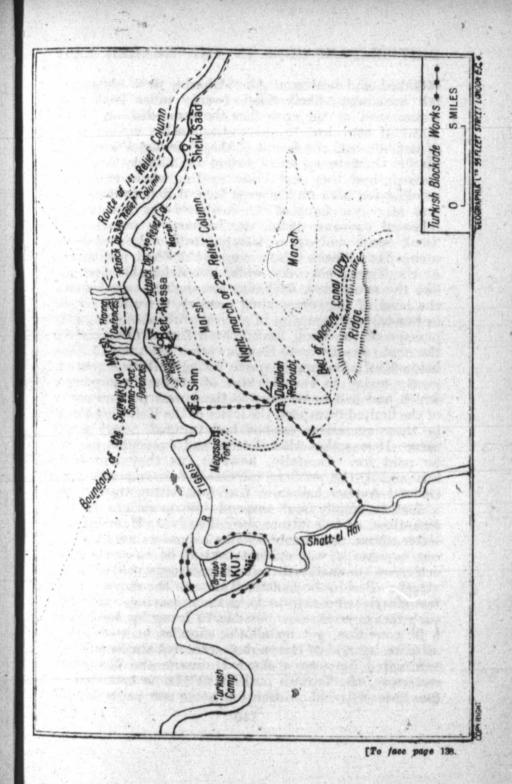
The winter rains too had now set in, so that the vast swamps which diversify the arid spaces of the country became shallow lakes. This weather was all against the relieving operations. Nevertheless, the Turks,

RER EAST

s cut parallel he were more ag from the incient main phrates, and es of neglect, of the felucca of the Baby-considerable base and the the junction Kut, as the ul, and the nade because here lay the

king up the rom Amara, vement had They were, ate, because the enemy's ncomplete. he relieving istmas Day, layed owing k. In these Pasha, the d estimation. ents arrived, to form at I the Tigris, night either the defence

hat the vast the country all against the Turks,



attacked and beaten at Ali-el-Gharbi, were obliged to fall back upon Sheik Saad, twenty miles farther up stream and as the crow flies the same distance below Kut. If they had to contend against a complication of impediments the troops of the Relieving Force made up for them to no small extent in military qualities. Indeed, had they not done so the whole enterprise would have been on the very face of it hopeless. The day after the fight at Ali-el-Gharbi the enemy was followed up, and again, on January 6, attacked at Sheik Saad, and again defeated with a loss of 4,500 men. He fell back this time upon the Wadi, a tributary of the Tigris, not very wide, but defensible because, like the main river, its banks are slightly raised above the level of the surrounding country, these low ridges, or bunds, forming traces of ancient embankments. The passage of the Wadi having been forced (January 9), the next retreat was to Hanna, rather less than 15 miles below Kut. Unhappily, partly owing to the wet ground, partly owing to the shortage of artillery equipment, which had had to be kept to the lowest point because of the limited transport, the losses of the Relieving Force in these successive actions had totalled nearly 6,000 men. It was thus that defects and oversights had to be paid for. Carefully, however, as they had been husbanded, the artillery munitions had run very low. General Aylmer had now, therefore, either to wait for a further supply and suspend his operations in the meantime, or to continue his offensive. He chose the latter course, not merely because his orders were urgent, but because it was evident that if he suspended his activities, the enemy, divining the reason, would counterattack. Besides he had the Turks on the move, and it was clearly advisable to keep them moving. He took such measures as were possible to bring his force into a fit condition, got up all the supplies he could, and after an interval of eleven days, renewed the assault.

Situated between a flooded swamp and the great waterway, the Turkish position at Hanna consisted of five lines of trenches, each line some 200 yards behind

3.4 the o formid after v failed. There can ac handic and bl attacki Dogras Absenc enemy power barrage farther position Their le The '

> It was e to a ha The] its cast cropped

as they

them ir

In th reverse of Kut. raised t at the headqua were b precauti the circu before t again cu

Three Save at first atte confiden

RER EAST

e obliged to farther up tance below complication Force made ry qualities. e enterprise peless. The enemy was attacked at oss of 4,500 a tributary ole because. aised above low ridges, nents. The January 9). nan 15 miles wet ground, equipment, int because eving Force early 6,000 thts had to had been 1 very low. to wait for ons in the e chose the vere urgent, pended his ild counterove, and it He took force into

force into could, and assault.

the great onsisted of rds behind

THE SIEGE AND FALL OF KUT

the other and connected by numerous saps. This formidable maze had to be attacked (January 21) after very inadequate artillery preparation. The attack failed, and it would have been a miracle if it had not. There are some things which not the bravest troops can accomplish. The valour and vigour of the attack, handicapped as it was, was shown by the desperate and bloody character of the conflict. On the left the attacking troops (the Black Watch, 6th Jats and 41st Dogras) broke in, but they could not break through. Absence of a sufficient weight of guns allowed the enemy to retreat from line to line, where an adequate power in guns would have destroyed his saps and barraged his retirement. In the circumstances, the farther the British pushed forward the worse their position became. In the end they had to be withdrawn. Their losses ran up to 2,741 men. It was a disaster.

The Turks also, however, had been heavily punished, as they had been in all the preceding battles, but to them immediately these losses were of less consequence. It was enough that they had brought the Relieving Force

The Force had by this time been, in fact, crippled by its casualties. At every turn the transport trouble cropped up.

In the interval the enemy, more especially after his reverse at Sheik Saad, had pressed his bombardment of Kut. News of the success at Sheik Saad had greatly raised the hopes and confidence of the besieged, but at the Serail, where General Townshend had fixed his headquarters, the obstacles before the Relieving Force were better appreciated, and the General took the precaution to cut down the rations by one-third. In the circumstances this was cheerfully accepted. Informed before the action at Hanna of its doubtful chances, he again cut the rations to one-half.

Three days later came the news of the Hanna repulse. Save at Headquarters, it was not yet realised that the first attempt at relief had failed. Nevertheless, common confidence in the Relief Expedition fell. The defences

attac

could

millst

direct

under

every

They

batte

from

into t

bomb

not b

one o

aeropl

raid t

enemy

were c

town,

a nun

crosses

ings u

up as

The p

hospita

later 1

bazaar

unhap

sified.

thrown

that t

the reli

ated by

tion of

made u

taking

necessa

out dr

ration v

ing the

Coin

of the town were stiffened. The boom of distant guns had told that help was at hand, but the sound, after drawing nearer, first continued in the same place, and then by degrees died away. To add to the depression, the rain came steadily down, turning the trenches into ditches and the narrow lanes of Kut into quagmires. The river too had begun to rise, and in places to overflow the bunds and pour across the flat country. Dugouts and trenches, British and Turkish alike, were flooded. The weather also was cold, and fuel becoming scarce, though all timber had been requisitioned, and was doled

out with strict economy, by half-pounds.

Evidently the question now was how long Kut could hold out. There was a conference at Headquarters on the state of supplies. As soon as the siege had begun the native population, and particularly the dealers, had made haste to hide all foodstuffs and live on the rations served out. It was manifest, however, both that covert dealing in foodstuffs went on and that there were many hoards, for very few of the native inhabitants showed traces of privation. A systematic search was accordingly set on foot, and resulted in unearthing various valuable finds of both grain and ghee, the clarified butter of the East. These seizures were mostly the stocks of traders who had done a thriving illicit business. General satisfaction and a certain surprise were felt when a communiqué was given out from Headquarters that there was still food enough to last for eighty-four days, not counting the battery bullocks, horses and mules.

A great help to the provisioning was the arrival by aeroplane of a set of millstones. In abandoning Kut the Turks had taken care to remove those in the only flour mill in the place. Millstones in Mesopotamia are now, as they have been for ages, as precious as they are scarce, for the country is devoid of stone. The dropping of these very welcome and friendly "bombs"

enabled the mill to be restarted.

Possibly it was this incident which suggested to the enemy the employment of aeroplanes as machines for ARER EAST

f distant guns sound, after me place, and he depression, trenches into to quagmires. es to overflow ry. Dugouts were flooded. oming scarce, and was doled

ng Kut could idquarters on ge had begun the dealers. l live on the owever, both d that there e inhabitants e search was 1 unearthing d ghee, the were mostly riving illicit tain surprise from Headto last for ery bullocks,

e arrival by adoning Kut in the only potamia are ious as they stone. The y "bombs"

ested to the nachines for

attack as well as for observation. If an aeroplane could carry a millstone why not a bomb as heavy as a millstone? Already the Germans, who were really directing the siege and had their quarters at Bagdad under the direction of General von der Goltz, had done everything in their power to add to its "frightfulness." They had established on the farther bank of the Tigris batteries of trench mortars, which they had revived from the wars of the seventeenth century, and lobbed into the town from across the river heavy cylindrical bombs filled with high explosive. This and the shelling not being deemed enough, they resorted to air raids, one of the earliest, if not the earliest, employment of aeroplanes for such a purpôse in the War. The first raid took place in the middle of February, and the enemy 'planes came over in three relays. The bombs were dropped, not along the defensive lines, but on the town, and the chief sufferers were the native population, a number of children among them. After that red crosses were painted conspicuously on the roofs of buildings used as hospitals, and empty shell cases were set up as alarm gongs. The Red Cross sign had no effect. The probabilities, indeed, were that the indication of hospital buildings did more harm than good, for in a later raid a bomb fell into the main hospital in the bazaar, killing and wounding more than thirty of the unhappy sick.

57

Coincidentally the ordinary bombardment was intensified, and more especially at night when shells were thrown into the town indiscriminately. It was evident that the enemy, informed that the operations for the relief of the place were to be renewed, was exasperated by the obstinacy of the garrison, and the prolongation of the blockade. But General Townshend had made up his mind for the present to sit tight, and was taking all the measures to hold out for weeks longer if necessary. He economised his corn partly by serving out dried potato meal, partly by mixing the bread ration with barley meal and atta, and partly by slaughtering the battery bullocks and horses, the latter a double

economy. Unfortunately, scurvy now made its appearance, and the Indian troops would not touch the ration of meat. For the feeding of the native population soup

kitchens were opened.

In the midst of these embarrassments came the news by wireless that reinforcements for the Relief Force were on their way from Egypt, and (February 17) the welcome intelligence of the fall of Erzerum, together with a message from the King paying tribute to the steadfastness of the besieged and exhorting them to hold on.

A day or two later the boom of guns could once more be heard from down the river, and hope revived when (February 21) officers received secret orders to be ready for a break out on the morrow. The morrow came and passed. Nothing happened. The roar of the guns remained distant. Rations were now further cut. It was known there must be another period of waiting.

This suspense lasted until March 7, when for the second time there were secret orders. That night the guns again thundered, but louder and nearer. Next day (March 8) the Turkish Commander sent in an officer under the white flag demanding surrender. Townshend

refused. He made another cut in the rations.

What had occurred was the Battle of Es Sinn. Those in authority had found out at last—in the school of experience—that the real point of attack was on the west side of the river. It was concluded that the attack ought to be made upon the line of redoubts, by this time extended to the Shatt-el-Hai. Now that was a serious undertaking, and the more serious because the Tigris was in full flood—higher than it had been for many a year—and movement over the country far from easy. The Relieving Force besides was, in the matter of munitions and supplies, living from hand to mouth.

But the decision was taken because it was believed that, despite these difficulties, a successful surprise might be brought off. The central point of support in the Turkish defences between the Tigris and the Shatt-el-Hai was a considerable work called the Dujailah that p as to t to the interval Accord daybre ments as had for mathe roa Anothe march, to cov setting

The m

asleep.

were in

redo

was

mair

swan

was

the i

a sor

the r

a sui

to he

and

built

broke

upon.

under

left t

which

the be

ensur

mislea

of all

Of

To

THE SIEGE AND FALL OF KUT

de its appearich the ration pulation soup

ARER EAST

ame the news Relief Force ruary 17) the rum, together ribute to the ting them to

ald once more revived when s to be ready ow came and of the guns ther cut. It waiting. or the second the guns

the the guns. Next day in an officer Townshend ns.

Sinn. Those he school of was on the ed that the of redoubts, . Now that rious because had been for itry far from the matter to mouth. was believed ful surprise of support ris and the the Dujailah redoubt. At this point the line of the Turkish defences was crossed by the bed of an ancient tributary of the main river, dry in the summer season, but a sinuous swamp during the wet months, and the Dujailah redoubt was situated at the point of one of the bends, and on the farther side, so that it was partly surrounded by a sort of natural ditch. Both the apparent security of the position and the difficulty of obtaining on the spot a supply of drinkable water had led the enemy so far to hold the redoubt lightly. If he could be surprised and the bend or peninsula on which the redoubt was built seized, his line west of the Tigris would be effectually broken and the siege of Kut would have to be raised.

To effect the surprise a night attack was determined upon. The main assault was to be direct, but a force under the command of General Kemball was on the left to carry out a turning movement, the alarm of which, falling upon the Turks' right rear at or about the beginning of the direct assault should, it was thought, ensure success.

Of course, to bring off a surprise it was essential to mislead the enemy. The troops told off, about 20,000 of all arms, were on the Tigris close to the Wadi. From that point, far enough away apparently to cause doubt as to their intentions, they were to strike across country to the Es Sinn line, a distance of some 15 miles. An interval of about nine hours was allowed for this march. According to the plan they were to arrive just before daybreak. It happened, however, that the arrangements for the assembly at the rendezvous did not work as had been expected, and that more than the allowed for margin of time was lost at starting. Further on the road the column in the darkness missed its way. Another hour was lost on that account. It was a long march, and apart from it many of the troops had had to cover a good distance to the rendezvous before setting out. In that wet season the going was heavy. The men were fatigued. At the halts they fell dead asleep, and were only aroused with difficulty. They were in no condition on arrival to fight a hard battle.

Having to make a detour, General Kemball's force, with the Cavalry Brigade, had of necessity to cover a greater distance. It proved unable to reach the point marked out for attack until after full daylight (March 9) being already two and a half hours behind time when it diverged from the column under the command of

Major-General Keary.

The Dujailah redoubt was found as anticipated to be held in no great strength. Time, however, was taken up in deploying the attacking troops and in waiting for the turning movement. The interval-some three hours—enabled the Turks to reinforce the menaced position. The turning movement too had not as a surprise succeeded. To the extreme fatigue of the troops was added, in the case of Keary's column, shortage of water. The assault on the Dujailah redoubt and adjacent positions was launched and persisted in during that day (March 9). There was a moment towards the end of this bloody conflict when the enemy, severely pressed, showed signs of wavering. Despite their fatigues the British troops (the Manchesters, and the 59th Rifles and part of the 37th) had fought with determination and had won a footing in the redoubt. But the airmen reported no evidences of a hostile retirement, and the risks of continuing the battle in face of the weariness of the troops and their sufferings from thirst were undoubtedly grave. They appeared to General Aylmer too grave. At nightfall therefore the attack was abandoned. It had been a costly reverse. The second attempt at relief had broken down.

Next day (March 10) General Townshend issued a communiqué. He had followed the policy of taking the garrison as far as possible into his confidence.

"We have now," he wrote, "stood a three months' siege in a manner which has called upon you the praise of our beloved King and our fellow countrymen in England, Scotland, Ireland and India, and all this after your brilliant battles of Kut-el-Amara and Ctesiphon, and your retirement to Kut, all of which feats of arms are famous. Since December 5, 1915, you have

I me are c am s heart prom those Do no freely I war out I the g your 1 our fl know Rat besieg battle bardn ances

rise ar

the hi

lasted

up. 7

lively

Thu

beginn

and as

it beca

suburb

while t

using t

and su

all.

spen

men

come

give

these

now

nevei

42

RER EAST

nball's force, y to cover a ch the point tht (March 9) d time when command of

iticipated to owever, was nd in waiting -some three he menaced d not as a igue of the mn, shortage redoubt and ed in during ent towards my, severely espite their ers, and the t with deterdoubt. But e retirement. face of the from thirst to General the attack verse. The

nd issued a p of taking lence. ree months' u the praise ntrymen in nd all this p and Ctesiwhich feats 5, you have

THE SIEGE AND FALL OF KUT

spent three months of cruel uncertainty, and to all men uncertainty is intolerable. On the top of this comes the second failure to relieve us. I ask you to give a little sympathy to me, who has commanded in these battles, and having come to you as a stranger now love my command with a depth of feeling I have never in my life known before. When I mention myself I mention also the Generals under me, whose names are distinguished in the Army as leaders of men. I am speaking to you as I did before, straight from the heart, and I ask your sympathy for my feelings, having promised you relief on certain dates on the promise of those ordered to relieve us. Not their fault no doubt. Do not think I blame them; they are giving their lives freely and deserve our gratitude and admiration. But I want you to help me as before. . . . In order to hold out I am killing a large number of horses so as to reduce the grain eaten every day, and I have had to reduce your ration. It is necessary to do this in order to keep our flag flying. I am determined to hold out and I know that you are with me heart and soul."

Rations still further reduced notwithstanding, the besieged "stuck it" without murmuring. After the battle of Es Sinn the enemy not only pressed his bombardment, but his air raids, and beyond these endurances were the inundations. The river continued to rise and went on rising until it reached and then passed the highest flood record. On March 18 the siege had lasted 100 days. Hopes of relief had not been given up. They were no longer, however, the subject of lively speculation, nor, indeed, of any speculation at

all.

Thus the month of March wore slowly away. At the beginning of April the supplies of grain at length failed and as vegetables to garnish the ration of horse meat it became necessary to cut the grass and herbs in the suburban gardens. This stuff was served boiled. Meanwhile the Turks were observed to be shifting heavy guns, using teams of men for haulage. On April 4 an intense and sustained gunfire was heard from down the river.

It was the roar of the battle at Sanna-i-yat—the third effort of relief.

The effort had been renewed because of the arrival from Egypt of the 13th Division, under the command of Sir Stanley Maude, and the qualities of that brilliant General as a tactician were in the attack on April \5 disclosed in the capture by his Division of five lines of trenches. There is here on the one side the Tigris and on the other the great Suweikiya swamp with between them a neck of firm land some two miles in width. The Hanna position was at the end of the neck farthest from Kut; the Sanna-i-yat position at the end of the neck nearest to Kut. The British attack was delivered on both sides of the Tigris, and it was entirely successful. The enemy, turned out of the maze at Hanna, and outflanked by the loss of his defences on the farther side of the river at the same time, found himself obliged to fall back. He attempted a stand midway at Falahiyeh, but was again routed by Maude's Division in a night attack, and forced to retire upon the Sanna-i-yat maze. He was followed up and (April 6) attacked by the 7th Division. The troops got in, and they might possibly have held on were it not that the Tigris that day broke over the bunds and swamped the trenches. During the next two days the floods suspended operations, but on the 9th the water had so far fallen as apparently to justify a renewal, and, as every day was now of consequence, the assault was resumed by the 13th Division, though the ground was still sodden and sticky. All the same the 18th carried the first line of the enemy's trenches. But they could get no farther. Their supports, indeed, found it impossible to advance over spaces already churned into deep mud, and part of the ground gained had to be given up.

On the face of it as well as in fact the situation was grave. It was calculated by General Townshend that his supplies, other than horse flesh, of which he had still a considerable supply, would last on the reduced scale until April 15, and that appeared to be the limit,

148

beca of the Lear dig i to ela a we Me and

office succe Troop aban count on the presse than line of at Sa side o

mire

across

to be

And by me a mis an ex many it is t but on to the that he thus r for two with w

On Aiessa that re (April "conso which. RER EAST

t—the third

f the arrival he command that brilliant on April \5 five lines of the Tigris swamp with wo miles in end of the position at ritish attack and it was out of the his defences time, found ted a stand by Maude's retire upon ed up and e troops got were it not bunds and wo days the h the water a renewal, the assault the ground ie the 13th nches. But rts, indeed, ces already ound gained

> tuation was ashend that aich he had the reduced be the limit,

THE SIEGE AND FALL OF KUT

because, though some pressed by hunger ate it, most of the Indian troops would not touch the horse meat. Learning that the Relief Force had been compelled to dig in and realising that that meant delay, he arranged to eke out his now fast vanishing stores until April 21—

a week longer.

Meanwhile Sir Percy Lake had come up from Basra, and it was decided at a consultation of the general officers on the spot, General Sir G. F. Gorringe having succeeded Sir F. Aylmer in the Command of the Relief Troops, that the attempt at relief ought not to be abandoned, notwithstanding the flooded state of the country. The fighting was accordingly renewed, and on the west bank of the river the enemy was (April 17) pressed back upon Beit Aiessa, four miles farther up than Sanna-i-yat, and his first and part of his second line of defences were captured. But in the position at Sanna-i-yat the Turks, the flooded river on the one side of them, the great swamp on the other, and a quagmire in front, held on, because though enfiladed from across the waterway they were not as at Hanna liable to be caught in a trap.

And now began belated attempts to reprovision Kut by means of aeroplanes dropping sacks of flour. It is a mistake to suppose that this expedient was not as an expedient successful. Many trips were made and many sacks dropped, two from each machine. A few, it is true, missed and tumbled into the Turkish lines, but only a few. The mistake lay in not having resorted to the expedient weeks earlier and keeping it up. Had that been done Kut might have held out. The flour thus received did enable the defence to be prolonged for two days. It was, however, a mere trifle compared

with what was needed.

On April 18 the Turks counter-attacked at Beit Aiessa and lost heavily. First the news was wirelessed that relief might be looked for in a few days. Then came (April 20) the further news that the Relief Force was "consolidating its positions." Depressing intelligence, which, as bad news usually does, leaked out, with the

result that next day (April 21) some natives attempted to desert the town but were caught crossing the Turkish lines and sent back. It was now clear that, failing relief, the end was not far off. The third attempt to raise the siege had met with no better fortune than the others.

Hope, nevertheless, was not yet entirely given up. A final effort to reprovision the besieged was to be made by Julnar, one of the steamers of the transport service. It was desperate work to run the blockade, for just below Kut on the farther side of the river, and commanding a sharp bend was Fort Megasis, armed with ordnance heavier than anything any river gunboat could carry. So desperate was the chance that it was certain Julnar, though one of the fastest steamers of the flotilla, could only get through, if at all, by the merest fluke. A Royal Navy crew, under Lieut. Firman, R.N., assisted by Lieut.-Commander Cowley, R.N.V.R., volunteered to take her. With none save these devoted men on board, and loaded with 270 tons of supplies, she set out (April 24) breasting in the darkness the current of the swollen and swirling river. It was a daring but a vain endeavour. As she attempted to dash past, her boilers at top pressure, the guns of the fort opened upon her, firing shot after shot. Firman fell, and Cowley at the wheel went down. Automatically and blindly the vessel, raked by shell, raced on, but it was a race to destruction. She raced on, foundering now at the same time, and, caught broadside on by the current, was swung on to a mudbank, her Captain stretched on deck in a pool of his own blood, her engineer dead at his post below.

On that same day in Kut the first half of the emergency ration was eaten, and men knew that it was at last the end. During the next two days the flour dropped by the aeroplanes, doled out in quarter rations, kept the besieged going. But on April 27 General Townshend went out to treat with the Turkish Commander, Khalil Pasha. He had received by wireless positive instructions to do so, under the impression that he might get more

150

favo

cond

ratio

blow

dum Men

dash

revo

valu

Gene

conv

appr

have

siege

vou

The

Gorr

Roya

mess

altho

what

reaso

Britis

up.

So

All

In

O

RER EAST

res attempted g the Turkish that, failing d attempt to tune than the

ely given up. d was to be the transport the blockade, the river, and egasis, armed river gunboat e that it was test steamers at all, by the under Lieut. nder Cowley, th none save with 270 tons asting in the wirling river. she attempted the guns of hot. Firman Automatically eed on, but it n, foundering ide on by the her Captain l, her engineer

he emergency t was at last flour dropped rations, kept al Townshend ander. Khalil re instructions ight get more

THE SIEGE AND FALL OF KUT

favourable terms. The only terms offered were unconditional surrender. The last of the emergency ration had been consumed.

On April 28 began the preparation for surrender: the blowing to pieces of guns, the smashing up of rifles, the dumping of ammunition into the river after darkness. Men put their swords under their feet and snapped them. dashed their field glasses to pieces, and threw their revolvers into cesspools. Everything likely to be of value to the enemy was made away with.

In the midst of this came through a message from General Lake. "The C.-in-C.," it ran, "desires me to convey to you and your brave and devoted troops his appreciation of the manner in which you together have undergone the sufferings and hardships of the siege, and of the high spirit of devotion to duty in which you have met the call of your Sovereign and Empire. The C.-in-C.'s sentiments are shared by myself, General Gorringe, and all the troops of the Tigris column. We can only express extreme disappointment and regret that our effort to relieve you should not have been crowned with success." The officers and men of the Royal Navy attached to the Tigris Corps sent also a message of regret.

All had done their utmost under the conditions, and, although it had not succeeded, that utmost had proved what might have been done had the conditions been

reasonable. They were not.

So on April 29, after 147 days, five long months, the British flag at Kut came down and the white flag went

CHAPTER IX

GA

of Garante enem have Suviations had If Garante St.

he di judgr enous

main

the s

reduc

very by th

not h

tunat

yet n In

allude

assigr

" first

Turki

as po

Cape

fiddle

dare-

South

the A

to tak

disclo

forme

unfor

point

defens

Tha

Ger

Ha

GALLIPOLI: THE SUMMER CAMPAIGN, 1915

Anzacs assigned a secondary rôle—Why a strategical error—Turkish efforts to destroy the Anzacs—Their failure—Enemy scheme for containing the force—Episodes of the fighting—The great Turkish attack of May 18–19—Its crushing defeat—Operations before Achi Baba—Cox's enterprise at Gurkha bluffs—General Hamilton decides upon siege tactics—Their disadvantages—Resumption of British attacks—Battle of June 4—Fronțal assault disastrous—General Hunter-Weston suggests new tactics—The battle of June 28—British victory—Success not followed up—Final enemy attempt to crush the Anzacs—Battle of June 29, another heavy Turkish reverse—General Hamilton's demand for reinforcements—Battle of July 12.

It is now advisable to resume the narrative of the Gallipoli Expedition as from the first battle for Krithia (May 6, 1915). The broad plan of General Hamilton's operations, it will be recalled, was an attack upon the enemy's defences on Achi Baba—this attack launched from the southern toe of the peninsula; and a menace in flank against the enemy's defences on Sari Bair—a menace maintained by the Australian and New Zealand forces from Kaba Tepe.

From the outset the fact had been manifest that an attack from the southern toe would be materially assisted by a flanking movement. When General Hamilton, was considering his future proceedings in March and the early part of April, one of the insistent problems was a dispersal of the enemy's strength. Upon that and upon rapidity in the development of the British attack everything, indeed, depended. Hardly less was it evident from a study of the natural features

error—Turkish my scheme for e great Turkish erations before neral Hamilton Resumption of lit disastrous—attle of June28 enemy attempt heavy Turkish

ements—Battle

ative of the for Krithia Hamilton's the upon the k launched da menace Sari Bair—New Zealand

of Gallipoli, and of the roads and railways then at the enemy's command, that an effective dispersal would have been a landing not only at Kaba Tepe but at Suvla. In March, at any rate, the enemy's communications between Suvla and Maidos were defective. Nor had he at that date any defensive works on Sari Bair. If General Hamilton then gave this matter of a landing at Suvla his serious attention, as presumably he did, he decided against such a movement because in his judgment the forces at his disposal were not numerous enough. Resolving upon the alternative plan of a main attack launched from the landing places round the southern toe, he had, as already recorded, been reduced to the necessity of undertaking a succession of very costly frontal assaults. The opportunity offered by the success of Koe's landing had been missed.

Had that, however, been the only defect in the dispositions, it would, though it cost many casualties, not have involved the Expedition in disaster. Unfortunately, there was another and a kindred oversight

vet more grave.

In his despatch dated August 26, 1915, the General alludes to the rôle which during May and June had been assigned to the Anzacs. This rôle, he explained, was "first to keep an open door leading to the vitals of the Turkish position; secondly, to hold up as large a body as possible of the enemy so as to lessen the strain at Cape Helles. Anzac, in fact, was cast to play second fiddle to Cape Helles, a part out of harmony with the dare-devil spirit animating these warriors from the South, and so it has come about that the defensive of the Australians and New Zealanders has always tended to take on the character of an attack."

That statement is worth careful consideration. It discloses the reasons for the military failure which

formed the sequel.

General Hamilton's plan, as events proved, was unfortunately wrong. The Anzac position was the point of effective attack from the outset. To assign a defensive rôle to a flanking movement was an error in

any event. By itself, the mere holding of a bit of the coast near Kaba Tepe meant nothing. If there was any purpose in landing there at all, it was precisely in order that this movement should "take on the character of an attack," and had the dare-devil spirit of the warriors from the South, a quality in war as precious as it is exceptional, been given free play from the beginning, no doubt can now be felt that these warriors from the South would have swept the Turks off Sari Bair and with moderate support might have pushed them back to Maidos. No doubt can now be felt on this point, because in the encounters between these daredevil warriors and the Turks, the latter were slaughtered time and again in a proportion not far short of ten to one. But, in place of using these fine troops with the boldness which both their value and the situation demanded, the commander of the Expedition, unhappily alike for himself and for it, divided the Anzac Corps, transferring a part of it, for a time, as already noted, to Cape Helles, and leaving the remainder meanwhile to dig in and hold on.

The justice of such conclusions will in due course become evident, not alone from the effort afterwards made to retrieve these errors—made, however, after an interval of months during which, by persistent fortification, the enemy had taken advantage of the misjudgment—but by the enemy's efforts meanwhile to destroy the Anzacs garrisoning the Kaba Tepe lines. The enemy was content merely with holding the attack from Cape Helles, for he had nothing vitally to fear from it; against the Anzacs, now reduced in strength, he, on the other hand, put forth all his energy. The proceeding ought to have opened the eyes of the British Headquarters. Unhappily, it does not appear to have had that effect until two months from this date. The awakening was

too late.

Sari Bair is a hilly mass, at its highest point over 900 feet above sea-level, and on all sides its declivities have been scored into deep gullies and ravines. The peculiarity of the spurs which lie between the ravines is

154

both mass with the grow rare. prese Achi

GA

their stand It exter had was be re

attac

ravir

was

some

of a The come point One the I and if the slope pied

the cand labor into ledge oppo oppo

the 1

Af

this

a bit of the f there was precisely in he character pirit of the as precious y from the iese warriors irks off Sari nave pushed v be felt on n these dareslaughtered ort of ten to ops with the he situation n, unhappily nzac Corps. dy noted, to neanwhile to

due course t afterwards ver, after an ent fortificanisjudgment destroy the te enemy was Cape Helles, against the the other reding ought eadquarters. I that effect akening was

oint over 900 divities have The peculiravines is both their length and their shape. Like the main mass itself, they have been scored by ages of weather with numerous gullies, and both the valleys between the spurs and these culs-de-sac on either hand are grown over with scrub and brushwood. Trees are rare. The general aspect of the country here at the present day is that of a rugged moorland. And as at Achi Baba, the formations having the same character, some of the larger spurs are broader at the end than at their juncture with the central knot. In several instances this juncture had been worn to a razor edge.

It was the broad end of one of the larger spurs, that extending to the south-west, on which the Anzacs had established themselves. The right of their position was bounded by a ravine. Their centre, which it will be recalled had been the scene of the earliest Turkish attacks, crossed the spur and crossed also a shorter ravine, that of the Salzi Beit. The left of the position was carried towards Fisherman's Hut along the foot of a spur running to the north-west.

The projections from the main mass of Sari Bair come down in successive levels and at some of these points look as if they had been abruptly broken off. One of these abrupt terminations was that named by the Anzacs Table Top Mountain, both from the flatness of the summit and the perpendicularity of the sides, and though the appearance was an illusion, it looked as if the top in places overhung and the cliffs in descending sloped inwards. Higher generally than the ground occupied by the Anzacs, these abrupt projections were for the Turks admirable observation posts.

After the costly failure of his initial infantry assaults the enemy laid himself out to smother the Australian and New Zealand force with his artillery. Enormous labour must have been involved in dragging his batteries into position up the steep slopes and over the rugged ledges, and it is unfortunate that he was allowed the opportunity of doing it, for with bolder tactics the opportunity might have been denied him. He put in this labour not now so much in the hope of driving the

and

Anz

Lon

ravi

Anz

the

nam the

bom

and

Quii

who

he r

of t

was

post

Anz

Hill. Hill

Aust

way

imm

befo

mac

forn

at tl

Hill.

enen

adjo Tabl

on t

losse

take

The

forti

Te

Anzacs into the sea as to ensure and support the work of walling them up—the next best thing. On that work his troops were engaged night and day. And in that respect, unfortunately, the transfer of part of the Anzac force to Cape Helles had played into his hands. All the Anzacs could do in the circumstances was to push their line, as they did, close up to that of the enemy. and interrupt his activities as far as possible by bombing. sniping and sap-driving. This went on with scarcely a break both night and day and all along the front. Attack provoked counter-attack, and incursion counterincursion. Deadly combats occurred at close quarters in half-completed diggings, where man fought with pick and shovel as well as with bomb and bayonet. The initiative of the "warriors from the South" was not to be denied, and the less to be denied since with few exceptions they had by far the best of it. They believed in fighting with the gloves off. The pushing up thus closely to the enemy line hampered, of course, the hostile bombardment.

Looking at the features of the country, the enemy's scheme of walling in was ably planned, and carried out with great perseverance and regardless of losses. On the extreme right, where it rested on the coast just north of Kaba Tepe, the Anzac line consisted of a post fortified and held by the Tasmanian contingent. The line then ran inland along what was called Holly Ridge, from the prickly scrub covering its slopes. On the farther side of the ravine here was another ridge marked by a few stunted pines. This ridge the Turks had promptly seized upon, since behind it was a stream of some value as a water supply. At a point rather less than a mile from the coast Holly Ridge and Pine Ridge joined, both being, as it were, fingers projecting from the southern end of the main spur. At the junction, where the opposing forces were in close contact and both on higher ground, the enemy, working day and night, and week after week, established the Lone Pine defence work, a maze of covered trenches and underground saps. He had a footing on the main spur here, ARER EAST

port the work ing. On that day. And in of part of the ato his hands. tances was to of the enemy, e by bombing, with scarcely ing the front. rsion counterclose quarters ight with pick ayonet. The th" was not ince with few They believed hing up thus f course, the

the enemy's d carried out f losses. On he coast just ted of a post ingent. The Holly Ridge, pes. On the ridge marked e Turks had a stream of it rather less d Pine Ridge jecting from the junction, contact and ing day and le Lone Pine and underin spur here,

and at all costs strove to keep it. Still following the Anzac line north there was at the inland end of the Lone Pine work another steep and narrow cul-de-sac ravine. The defences named Johnson's Jolly, and the Anzac position, Courtney's Post, ran along one edge of the depression; opposite was a projecting sub-spur named Mortar Ridge from the trench mortar batteries the enemy located there for the purpose of lobbing bombs across the hollow. At the head of the ravine, and where it was at once narrowest and steepest, was Quinn's Post, called after the gallant Major Quinn who had established it, and remained in command until he met a hero's end. Quinn's Post was in the centre of the Anzac front and at the point where the front was farthest from the coast-line. It was distinctly a post both of danger and of honour, for from here the Anzac front crossed the main spur and was overlooked from a higher part, called, from its shape, Battleship Hill. The enemy fortified the south slope of Battleship Hill with another maze of trenches named by the Australians the Chessboard. Quinn's Post barred the way along the main spur towards the coast. Fortunately, immediately to the left and on the north there was a bold hummock, Russell's Top, from which the ground before Quinn's Post could be swept by artillery and with machine-guns. Beyond Russell's Top the Anzac front, formed of No. 1, No. 2 and No. 3 Posts, crossed the ravine of the Salzi Beit and touched the coast again at the outlet of the Chailak Dere. North of Battleship Hill, and divided from it by the Salzi Beit ravine, the enemy held Rhododendron Spur, Table Top Mountain adjoining, Old Number 3 Post (a lower projection from Table Top Mountain facing towards the coast) and, on the farther side of the Chailak ravine, Bauchops Hill

To sum up, the enemy, though it cost him heavy losses to do it, threw up during May and June eight important besides smaller defensive works, constituting, taken together and as completed, an extensive system. They were the Lone Pine work, the Mortar Ridge fortifications, the Chessboard, the Battleship Hill

G

the

upo Wh

ene

up t

wou

whi

F

reas

rour of a

Lim

over

und

men

more

and

blaz

This

slack

was

presi the

desci

the 1

at sl brok

peare

timir

assau

first.

of sh

bette

There

futile

arriva

the o

defences, and the works on Rhododendron Spur, Table Top Mountain, Old No. 3 Post (converted into a powerful redoubt) and Bauchops Hill.

Quinn's men had pushed themselves to within a few feet of the Turkish entrenchments, and the Anzac line there ran along the very edge of the precipice with a

sheer drop of 200 feet into the ravine below.

Bomb-lobbing not having had the desired effect, it was decided on the night of May 9 to clear the enemy out with the bayonet. First, the hostile trench was swept by a sudden fire in enfilade. Then Quinn's men

went over the top. They were eager, and the work was quickly done. The sweep was clean.

This for the enemy was a nasty episode, for he was more anxious to hold up the Anzacs here than at any other point. Accordingly, at dawn (May 10) he pushed forward a heavy counter-attack. A massive column advanced along the main spur supported by a movement up the ravine. Nearing the lost trench line, the descending column had to wheel to left. This manœuvre exposed it to a raking fire from the Anzacs' guns on Russell's top. Their lost position was recovered, for it was evident that the enemy was prepared to pay any price for its recovery, but the two Turkish regiments forming the column were cut to pieces. Their total loss, according to the diary of a Turkish officer who was in this action, and whose notes were found at a later date, was 2,600 killed and wounded.

The miscellaneous fighting and the enemy's preparations went on after this as before. In a certain sense it was a continuous battle. It demanded on the part of the Anzacs, officers and men alike, a sleepless vigilance. Thus it was while in the fighting line on May 15 that Major-General W. T. Bridges, in command of the Australian Division, received the wound which proved fatal. Like the others he had not spared himself. He

was as able as he was devoted.

Such sacrifices, however regrettable, were not in vain. The enemy's wastage in this close quarters fighting was severe—too severe by far for his liking. Another effort

158

on Spur, Table into a powerful

o within a few the Anzac line recipice with a ow.

sired effect, it ear the enemy ile trench was n Quinn's men and the work

de, for he was re than at any 10) he pushed assive column by a movement e, the descending manœuvre reacs' guns on covered, for it ed to pay any kish regiments. Their total officer who was und at a later

emy's preparacertain sense d on the part pless vigilance. May 15 that mand of the which proved I himself. He

re not in vain.
rs fighting was
Another effort

therefore to crush the Anzacs had been determined upon, and this time it was to be no half and half affair. Whether the British command realised it or not, the enemy was perfectly well aware that if he could crumple up the Anzac force, the British enterprise at Cape Helles would not have the ghost of a chance. It was worth while, therefore, to make a resolute attempt.

From the reports of prisoners, which there was no reason not to accept as reliable, the Turkish force surrounding the position had been increased by the arrival of a further five regiments to 30,000 men, and General Liman von Sandars had himself for this operation taken over the command.

The attack, thus designed to wreck the whole British undertaking, began on May 18 by a sustained bombardment from every Turkish gun and howitzer, directed more particularly against the Anzac support trenches and lines of approach. At midnight the Turkish trenches blazed out in a fierce rifle and machine-gun fusillade. This went on for three hours. Then for a time the firing slackened. At four in the morning, however, there was another outburst, and the enemy troops having presumably by these demonstrations been worked up to the required pitch, a powerful Turkish column was descried in the first faint light of dawn moving against the right-centre, north of Lone Pine. The attack, met at short range, wavered, fell into confusion, and then broke. Another succeeded it. The probabilities appeared to be that the two had been intended to be concurrent, and against adjacent points, and that the timing had gone wrong. But the second column of assault was not allowed to shirk the onset like the first. Though it was beaten back also under the lash of shrapnel, and the storm of well-directed rifle bullets, its German officers rallied it and again it came on. No better fortune. The mass once more scurried to cover. There was a third rally. Brave, no doubt, but not less futile. A fourth rally followed, evidently after the arrival of reserves. The fourth assault withered like the others.

A further strong attack now developed to the northeast against the fourth section of the Anzac front. near the head of the little valley of the Sazli Beit. This assault proved not more prosperous. In the meanwhile the enemy had become pressing against Quinn's Post, and Courtney's Post adjoining. His attempt was.

if possible, to drive in between the two.

Such was the situation when it/became full daylight about 5 a.m. With the observation daylight offered the hostile heavy batteries began to lob shells into the Anzac trenches; 12-inch shells and 9-2-inch. Supported by this shelling, the wedge-driving attempt was renewed. and it was kept up during the next five hours. It was defeated finally by the punishing effects of a raking fire poured into its left flank. An hour later the battle was over. After the great effort it had died down.

The Anzac line at all points had held firm, and the enemy's losses in these mass attacks had been the heaviest he had yet sustained. In front of the Anzac trenches his dead lay everywhere. There were three thousand of them at least, and at least twice as many more wounded. By comparison the Anzac losses were surprisingly light—not more than 100 killed and 500 wounded. It seems at first sight an almost incredible disproportion, but it is no new experience to find the losses of a force in battle in inverse ratio to its energy.

Some curious incidents followed upon this crushing reverse. On May 20 the Turks, exhibiting red crescent and white flags, sent out a staff officer to arrange informally and verbally an armistice for the collection of the dead and wounded. Stretcher parties were already out on both sides. Nevertheless, the Turkish trenches were observed to be crowded with men, and the Intelligence Service reported the movement of

reinforcements behind the hostile lines.

In these circumstances the Anzac trenches were also manned, and General Birdwood deemed it prudent to notify the Turks that no collection of dead and wounded must take place after nightfall. He added that negotiaand o In centr

GA

tions

gener gun f lines behir divin had k and t forwa failed thoug guns again

Ho the b dead a sus May depar

Qui

aversi

the en

impra galleri Three with t was n hours was 1 large their the ri not to the 1 bayon

it kille

Major

RER EAST

to the north-Anzac front, e Sazli Beit. In the meanainst Quinn's attempt was,

full daylight light offered hells into the . Supported was renewed, ours. It was of a raking ter the battle d down. firm, and the ad been the of the Anzac e were three wice as many c losses were lled and 500

this crushing red crescent r to arrange the collection parties were the Turkish ith men, and novement of

ost incredible

e to find the

ratio to its

hes were also it prudent to and wounded that negotia-

GALLIPOLI: THE SUMMER CAMPAIGN, 1915

tions for an armistice must be opened in a regular manner and concluded before noon on the following day.

In the meantime, the Turks had continued to concentrate. Just before darkness fell they opened a general bombardment accompanied by rifle and machinegun fire. Then on the right of the Anzac front appeared lines of unarmed men holding up their hands. But behind were columns of attack, and it was readily divined both that the pretended armistice proposal had been a device to allow of an uninterrupted massing, and that the pretended surrenders were a ruse to steal forward without losses. The latter device, at any rate, failed to work. The attack had no heart in it. Neither, though both as regards rifle fire and that of machineguns the night was stormy, had a renewed attempt against Quinn's Post. For the time being evidently the enemy had had enough.

However, on merely sanitary grounds a clearance of the battlefield was desirable. Many of the Turkish dead had been lying about for a week. For that reason a suspension of hostilities was formally arranged for May 24. On this occasion there was no attempt to depart from the terms.

Quinn's Post continued to be the enemy's special aversion, and efforts to take it by assault having proved impracticable, it had been decided to blow it up. Four galleries were driven in from below the Turkish trenches. Three were detected, counter-mined, and destroyed with the men working in them. The fourth, however, was not found out, with the result that in the small hours of May 29 (3.30 a.m.) the centre of Quinn's Post was upheaved by the explosion. Simultaneously a large party of Turkish bombers came over the top of their own position and broke in. The subsections on the right and left had been isolated. But Quinn was not to be cleared out so easily. He led his battalion, the 15th Australians, in a counter-attack with the bayonet. The Post was re-seized and every Turk in it killed or captured. It was in this fight that the heroic Major at last fell.

Learning of the defeat of his enterprise, the enemy gathered in force, put down a stiff artillery barrage. and launched another assault, headed by a numerous bombing party. The 15th, however, were not to be They had got their blood up, and, in the vernacular, they gave the enemy "hell." And as before more than once the enfilading fire of the Anzac batteries helped to rip the attacking force to pieces. The shooting was what the Americans call "dead sure." For nearly two hours one hostile attempt followed another. Not one of them could get a footing. And there was again an apparently surprising disproportion in the casualties. On the side of the Anzacs in the whole affair they amounted to no more than 31 killed and 188 wounded. Those on the part of the Turks were increased by their own men. Bombers had been employed to bowl missiles over the heads of the Turkish first line as it came on. But, from nervousness or excitement, the bombers lobbed most into the Turkish first line itself, and did the greater part of the business of blowing it to rags.

Unquestionably the brilliant Anzac victory of May 18-19 had for the time saved the Gallipoli force as a whole, and pointed the way to yet another opportunity; not, indeed, so good an opportunity as that already missed, but one not to be despised. The severity of the Turkish reverse may be judged from one fact, but a fact which is conclusive. No further attempt to oust the Anzacs by an assault in force was made until the end of June.

In face of an event of this kind, the bolder course was to take the ball at the bound. The psychological moment had arrived for a counter-attack. The Anzacs were confident of their prowess, and they had good cause to be.

But to begin with, General Hamilton did not consider his line before Achi Baba too strongly held. His losses there had been heavy, and the risks attending a reverse in so confined a space were the gravest. Again, independently of that, the re-transfer of troops to the Anzac position would take time. There was the question too

GALL

of artill of the fleet, ar been, c equipm view w resourc of mov fully ta while in demand Finally dispos defensi Oppo

war w Expedi embari Neve if alloy the 29 Brigad of the to see above time c and th tactica bastio same. ment compa

and w

night

silentl

their

at the

fissure

these

For

RER EAST

, the enemy ery barrage, a numerous e not to be and, in the l." And as of the Anzac ce to pieces. " dead sure." npt followed ooting. And disproportion nzacs in the han 31 killed of the Turks pers had been of the Turkish ervousness or o the Turkish f the business

ory of May 18ce as a whole, ortunity; not, lready missed, of the Turkish t a fact which st the Anzacs end of June.

bolder course psychological The Anzacs hey had good

id not consider ld. His losses iding a reverse Again, inde-

s to the Anzac ie question too

GALLIPOLI: THE SUMMER CAMPAIGN, 1915

of artillery. Compared with the enemy's the equipment of the Anzacs in guns was light. True, there was the fleet, and the guns of the fleet were, or ought to have been, considered as to all intents part of the artillery equipment of the land force. It is doubtful if that view was taken. Nor is it certain, when the enemy's resources in guns were under review, if the difficulties of moving heavy pieces across a rugged country were fully taken into account. Further, General Hamilton, while in need of reinforcements, was not, though he had demanded them, certain when he would receive them. Finally, he was still, at this time, intent on his original dispositions, and had assigned to the Anzacs a definitely defensive rôle.

Opportunities, however, cannot thus be missed in war with impunity, and it was inevitable that the Expedition should become involved in yet deeper embarrassments.

Nevertheless, fortune seemed bent on proving kind if allowed. On the left of the line before Achi Baba the 29th Division had been strengthened by the 29th Brigade of Indian Infantry. The able officer in command of the Brigade, Major-General H. V. Cox, was quick to see the importance of the position along the bluffs above Y Beach. The position had been in the meantime converted by the enemy into a powerful bastion, and that circumstance ought to have demonstrated its tactical and strategical value. Efforts to capture the bastion by frontal attacks had been disastrous. All the same, Cox believed he saw a way by importing an element of brains into the business, of getting the bastion comparatively cheaply. He submitted his proposals, and was given leave to try.

For this service he selected the 6th Gurkhas. On the night of May 10 scouts belonging to that corps stole silently down to the level of the shore, and picking their way with the stealthiness of cats along the rocks at the bottom of the cliffs, crawled on all fours up the fissures and gullies. The enemy, on the appearance of these silent forms, took alarm, and indulged in a heavy

proved that it was feasible to get in.

Nothing more happened during the next two days. The Turks were left in undisturbed possession, and in the undisturbed confidence of having thoroughly beaten the reconnaissance. But the plans for the attack were being carried out. There was to be a bombardment from seaward by the cruisers Dublin and Talbot, a bombardment from the land side by the artillery of the 29th Division, and under cover of this latter a feint frontal assault by the Manchesters. But, of course, the real attack was that of the Gurkhas. While the Turks were busy on the land side, and kept off the tops of the bluffs by the naval cannonade, the Gurkhas again stole down to sea level in the darkness, and silently mustered under the bluffs on Y Beach. Then a double company once more crawled up the gullies. Amid the roar of the guns they were not heard. Suddenly they rushed out of their lurking places and charged into the startled enemy with their kukris, the deadly axe-knife they wield with uncanny dexterity. This leading company worked towards the left. Three more double companies, the whole force under the command of Lieut.-Colonel C. G. Bruce, were pushed up, each taking its place on the right of that preceding it. The bastion was cleared, and connected by newly thrown up trenches with the former position of the 29th Brigade. It was a very neat and cleanly cut piece of work.

General Hamilton in his despatch spoke of it as a brilliant little affair. Justly estimated, it was much more.

The General, however, was concerned for the time for the maintenance of his line. Referring to the

situation on May 11, he wrote:

"The moment lent itself to reflection, and during this breathing space I was able to realise we had now nearly reached the limit of what could be attained by mingling initiative with surprise. The enemy was as much in possession of my numbers and dispositions as I was in possession of their first line of defence; the opposing fortified fronts stretched from sea to Straits;

GALLIPOLI:

there was little s at Kaba Tepe for blood battalions. Advances must m of concerted attaline after full art soon bound to open. Consolidate selection of mack grouping of our must ere long for

There is hardly is not unhappily reached for man affair of Gurkha called—had show and blood battal wire. That kind not war. There getically employe work the enemy wire should have been attacked wh

Not apparently set about the disposing operations. the line into four with the 29th In 42nd (East Lanc the Naval Division commanded by G the French Exped General Bailloud,

Thus matters of and to the beginn the Allied troops steadily growing I the supplies and evermin, all comb siege warfare was ey had

days.

and in

beaten k were

rdment

a bomhe 29th

frontal

he real

ks were

e bluffs

e down

d under

ly once

hed out

startled

ey wield

worked

ies, the

el C. G.

on the

cleared,

vith the

a very

it as a

ch more.

he time

to the

during

nad now

ined by

tions as

ice; the

Straits;

was as

of the

there was little scope left now, either at Achi Baba or at Kaba Tepe for tactics which would fling flesh and blood battalions against lines of unbroken barbed wire. Advances must more and more tend to take the shape of concerted attacks on small sections of the enemy's line after full artillery preparation. Siege warfare was soon bound to supersede manœuvre battles in the open. Consolidation and fortification of our front, selection of machine-gun emplacements, and scientific grouping of our artillery under a centralised control, must ere long form the tactical basis of our plans."

There is hardly a statement in these reflections which

There is hardly a statement in these reflections which is not unhappily disputable. The limit had not been reached for manœuvre battles in the open. As the affair of Gurkha bluffs—they were from this date so called—had shown, there was no need for flinging flesh and blood battalions against unbroken lines of barbed wire. That kind of thing was merely rash, and it was not war. There was, with a naval force which, energetically employed, might have wrecked every defence work the enemy put up, no reason why lines of barbed wire should have remained unbroken, much less have

been attacked while in that state.

Not apparently taking that view, General Hamilton set about the disposition of his force for the contemplated siege operations. In order to organise in depth he formed the line into four sections: on the left the 29th Division, with the 29th Indian Brigade; on the left-centre the 42nd (East Lancashire) Division; on the right-centre the Naval Division; on the right the French, now commanded by General Gouraud. A second division of the French Expeditionary Corps, under the command of General Bailloud, had just been landed.

Thus matters drifted on through the month of May and to the beginning of June, the limited space in which the Allied troops before Achi Baba were confined, the steadily growing heat of the summer, the water problem, the supplies and transport problems, and not least, the vermin, all combining to prove how little practicable siege warfare was in such a situation. There were

sundry advances against "small sections of the enemy's line," but in truth they effected nothing and meant nothing. The sufferings and endurance of the troops, borne with the most patient spirit, were without fruit.

Observing no enterprise in the Kaba Tepe quarter, and freed from anxiety on that account—there can be little question that this was his main anxiety—the enemy harassed the troops before Achi Baba by counterattacks. They were not successful in taking positions, but it is quite clear that that did not signify. The object was to wear the Allies out.

Since a merely passive attitude was manifestly futile, General Hamilton determined upon a general attack

for June 4.

He had under his command, independently of the French, a total of 24,000 bayonets. Of these he proposed to employ 17,000 in the assault, and hold 7,000 as a reserve.

The dispositions of the troops from left to right were those already stated.

The object was to capture the enemy's defences from

the Kereves Dere to the Ægean.

Opening at 8 a.m., the Allied bombardment was kept up for two hours and a half. Then there was an interlude of half an hour, and a renewed cannonade lasting twenty minutes. At the end of that time a feint attack took place to draw the enemy's fire and disclose his machine-gun positions. That done, the Allied batteries re-opened, and pounded these positions and the hostile trenches for another half-hour.

The range was then lengthened, and at noon the Allied infantry from extreme right to extreme left went

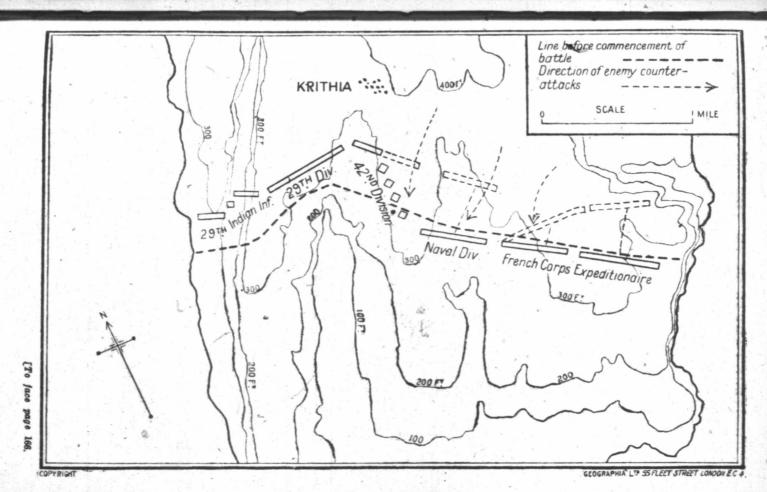
forward en masse.

The assault had varying fortunes.

On the right the French 2nd Division carried the "Haricot" redoubt, and the 1st Division a line of trenches. The French left was held.

The Anson battalion of the Naval Division got a footing in another redoubt, and the Division as a whole seized the Turkish first line of defence works.

EAST



On their left the Manchester Brigade of the 42nd Division having cleared the Turks out of the first line of defences within a few minutes, pushed on and attacked the second line 600 yards farther forward.

The stiffest resistance was offered to the 29th Division on the left. This was plainly in the enemy's estimation, and in fact, the point that mattered.

Nevertheless the 88th Brigade also took the first line of the hostile works.

Of the 29th Indian Brigade, the 14th Sikhs pushed forward despite very heavy losses, but the corps on their left flank was held up by a barbed-wire barricade, which the guns had, it turned out, left intact. Beyond this barricade and nearer the coast, some of the 6th Gurkhas went forward along the tops of the bluffs and seized a redoubt, but like the 14th Sikhs, they found themselves in the air. The Gurkhas had to retire.

Reinforcements were now pushed up towards the left with the intention of renewing the attack in that quarter. This disclosed a fault in the tactics of the battle. Instead of a dead level frontal attack the main pressure should from the first have been applied on the Allied left, and the enemy's defences in that quarter more especially hammered by the fleet. Of course the enemy had sited his trenches as far as possible so that his wire barricade should escape being cut. So much was to be expected.

Observing the movement of reinforcements towards the Allied left the enemy threw the weight of his counterattack against the Allied right.

The "Haricot" redoubt was lost, and the French, overborne by numbers, compelled to fall back.

In doing so they uncovered the right of the Naval Division. Attacked at once in front and flank that Division had in turn to give way. The enemy there also recovered his lost line, and forced the Division back upon its original position.

The right flank of the 42nd Division was now exposed. It held on tenaciously, but the losses under the cross fire by which it was raked were heavy.

To meet this "refused," but difficult.

In the hope fresh attack b was called for. he could not un stubbornly agai

For six hours the footing the their right "ref six in the afte French Corps of the order for t men received i majority of the Manchesters, ha

So closed this a reverse and a important victo was all the malment of the 29t

After this, fo arrival of a furt more settled do

On June 21, shis defences aloundertook an a about half a midespite repeated Turkish losses viced in the collessness. At a losses could not French losses we

During the ir plan of operation quarters. It has like lines again Hunter-Weston

GALLIPOLI: THE SUMMER CAMPAIGN, 1915

EAST

e 42nd

rst line

division nation,

rst line

pushed

rps on

ricade, Beyond

he 6th

s, they retire.

ds the

in that

e main on the

quarter

rse the

so that

much

owards ounter-

rench,

Naval

k that

there

n back

sposed.

e cross

bluffs

To meet this situation the right of the Division was "refused," but the situation became more and more difficult.

In the hope of restoring the fortunes of the day a fresh attack by the Naval Division and the French was called for. General Gouraud found, however, that he could not undertake it. His troops, who had fought stubbornly against odds, were too spent.

For six hours the 42nd Division held on, still keeping the footing they had won in the Turkish second line, their right "refused" to the first line. But at half-past six in the afternoon, when it finally was evident the French Corps could not forthwith co-operate further, the order for the 42nd to withdraw was issued. The men received it with rage, notwithstanding that the majority of the officers, including the Brigadier of the Manchesters, had fallen.

So closed this disastrous day. The battle had been a reverse and a costly reverse. It might have been an important victory. In the qualities of the troops there was all the making of success. The belated reinforcement of the 29th Division had achieved nothing.

After this, for a space of three weeks, pending the arrival of a further supply of shell, the operations once more settled down to siege warfare.

On June 21, since the enemy had been strengthening his defences along the Kereves Dere, the French Corps undertook an assault which resulted in the capture of about half a mile of these works, and they were held despite repeated counter-attacks. In this action the Turkish losses were extremely severe. Men were sacrificed in the counter-attacks with extraordinary ruthlessness. At a reasonable estimate the total of these losses could not have been less than 7,000 men. The French losses were 2,500.

During the interval since the battle of June 4, the plan of operations had been under discussion at head-quarters. It had become evident that to act upon the like lines again would give no better results. General Hunter-Weston now, therefore, suggested an attack with

169

the object of pressing the enemy back on the Allied left and turning his flank resting on the coast. Seeing that the operations were theoretically at all events of an amphibious character, partly naval and partly military, that was both tactically and strategically the hostile weak spot. And it was evident that the enemy was well aware of it, because he had here in the meantime thrown up five lines of trenches, whereas at the other extremity of his front on the Straits, he was content to rely upon two.

Still, though he had as it were been allowed to get in first, the proposal of General Hunter-Weston was

agreed to. The attack was fixed for June 28.

It proved successful. The five lines of trenches abutting upon the coast were carried, as well as a spur running out from the coast ridge beyond them. The British casualties in this action were not more than 1,750 killed and wounded.

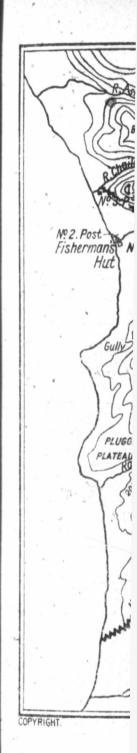
Then began on the part of the enemy a series of counter-attacks at this point, renewed day by day and often night by night. The Turkish losses were heavy.

These operations contiguous to the coast were the cause of the renewed enemy attempt against the Anzacs. The Overseas Corps had in the interim been left fulfilling its second-fiddle rôle, more troubled with lice than with Turks. Evidently, nevertheless, the enemy, after the action of June 28 before Achi Baba and its outcome, seems to have concluded, and not unnaturally, that dangerous intentions were afoot. His anxieties regarding the Anzacs were revived, and he made another attempt to get rid of them.

This time Enver Pasha came down from Constantinople

to see to it that the attempt was not abortive.

The attack was designed as a surprise, and in view of the deadly shooting of the Southern warriors was planned as a night affair. The enemy kept quiet until midnight (June 29). Then all along the line his trenches suddenly burst out into rifle fire, amid which his machineguns kept up an angry rattle. An hour and a half of that sort of thing, sufficient it was no doubt supposed



EAST

ied left ng that of an ilitary, hostile ny was cantime e other itent to

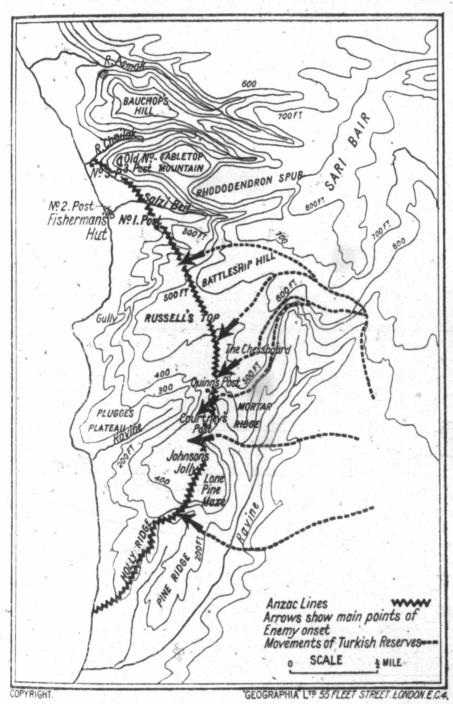
to get

renches a spur n. The re than

eries of lay and neavy. The the Anzacs. Fulfilling an with fter the utcome, ly, that regardanother

ntinople

in view iors was iet until trenches nachinea half of supposed



[To face page 170,

GALLIPOLI

to affect the Alless steady, ard darkness again held by the 76 manded by M Post and Con Nothing, how Light Horse, who the attace often proved was not equal against the Allewith no better Pasha went be

Early in M conclusion that its military side need two months had received at that of Gener Infantry, and 52nd (Lowlan line before Ac

His strengt mate, and the taken into acc led him on Ju by a further e between Kritl

On the Allie back until it right and in the were more falittle progress to slew round from sea to St.

Strategicall the enemy's counter-attacl The danger o

GALLIPOLI: THE SUMMER CAMPAIGN, 1915

to affect the Anzacs' herves, and render their shooting less steady, and a strong column came on through the darkness against the part of the front (right-centre) held by the 7th and 8th Australian Light Horse, commanded by Major-General Sir A. J. Godley. Quinn's Post and Courtney's Post were left severely alone. Nothing, however, was gained by the change. The Light Horse, who had been spoiling for the encounter, shot the attacking column to ribbons. Good as he has often proved himself to be behind defences, the Turk was not equal to work of this kind. A second attack against the Anzac left, down the Sulzi Beit ravine, met with no better fate. It may be inferred that Enver Pasha went back to Constantinople disillusioned.

Early in May General Hamilton had come to the conclusion that if the enterprise in Gallipoli was not on its military side to degenerate into a deadlock he would need two more army corps. By the end of June he had received as reinforcements another French division, that of General Bailloud, the 29th Brigade of Indian Infantry, and after an interval of several weeks, the 52nd (Lowland) Division. All were employed on the

line before Achi Baba.

His strength was still three brigades below his estimate, and there was the wastage in the meantime to be taken into account, but the arrival of the 52nd Division led him on July 12 to follow up the attack of June 28 by a further effort to oust the enemy from the positions

between Krithia and the Kereves valley.

On the Allied left the Turkish front had been pushed back until it was close upon Krithia, but on the Allied right and in the centre, where, in truth, the opportunities were more favourable to the defence, comparatively little progress had been made. The front had tended to slew round and now extended across the peninsula from sea to Straits laterally.

Strategically there was every advantage in turning the enemy's right provided that meanwhile a hostile counter-attack against the Allied right could be held. The danger of such a counter-attack, were it to break the Allied front, would be the uncovering of the landing places. Experience, however, had greatly discounted that probability. The enemy's repeated counter-attacks with the object of recovering the positions seized from him along the coast bluffs showed, too, that his concern lay in that direction. And that concern was well justified. There is just beyond Krithia, and between that village and the sea a broad rounded hill, 472 feet in height, the main hummock of the coast bluffs. The Indian troops were already established on its southern spur, and its capture would have outflanked the Achi Baba defences, for between this hill and Achi Baba (709 feet high) lies only a shallow depression. It would have been to the last degree perilous, not to say impossible, for the enemy to have thrown his weight into a counter-attack against the opposite extreme of the Allied line while he was thus exposed to a probably fatal manœuvre. The main hummock of the coast ridge was the key position.

But General Hamilton apparently still thought the defences of Achi Baba might be carried by a frontal

assault.

The object of this action, begun on July 12, was to seize the foremost system of the enemy's defences between the Kereves valley and the Krithia road, a distance of 2,000 yards. Manifestly, however, even if successful, nothing decisive could come of it.

The real attack was to be delivered by the French and by the recently arrived 52nd (Lowland) Division. Operations on the Allied left by the 29th Division were intended simply to be a diversion. This was a tactical

mistake.

The assault by the French and Scottish troops, delivered after a heavy bombardment, broke through the first two lines of the hostile trenches. The Scottish (155th Brigade), indeed, went right through the enemy defences, and finding no further obstacles in front of them charged forward up the long southern slope of the mountain, the Turks broken and in full retreat. The Scotsmen were arrested not by the enemy, but by

the barrage of Borderers, wh hurricane of a had to fall be plan of operate to time-table, it was mechan of the landings and opportuni Naturally, h

thus proved fa

propitious mo too, exposed t been cut by t enemy recove reserves had to the fighting r In the afterno forenoon—the thrown forwar the assault. allocated to tl gun and rifle between 200 a as a whole as the Gallipoli vanced one inc

During the his initial den attacks, and f the 157th Brig intermission for situation and cholds in the safternoon of J by the Naval through the ho charging home. They were cut blunder of this

nding ounted ttacks I from

EAST

oncern well tween 2 feet

The uthern Achi Baba would impos-

into a of the obably coast

ht the rontal

was to etween ince of essful,

French vision. n were actical

troops, hrough cottish enemy ont of ope of etreat. but by the barrage of the French guns. The 4th King's Own Borderers, who were leading, dashed right into this hurricane of shrapnel. They were cut to pieces, and had to fall back upon the Turkish second line. The plan of operations had been worked out in detail and to time-table. It had been too much worked out; it was mechanical, and like the similarly elaborated plan of the landings, allowed nothing for favourable accidents and opportunities.

Naturally, behind and beyond the barrage which had thus proved fatal to brave men, the enemy rallied. propitious moment had come and gone. Inevitably, too, exposed telephone wires to forward positions had been cut by the Turkish fire. Counter-attacking, the enemy recovered parts of his second line. Allied reserves had to be rushed up. From a brilliant beginning the fighting relapsed into confusion and uncertainty. In the afternoon—the battle had opened early in the forenoon—the 157th Brigade (Lowland Division) were thrown forward according to the original scheme of the assault. They carried the trenches which had been allocated to them to seize, but under heavy machine-There had been an advance of gun and rifle fire. between 200 and 400 yards along the front, taking it as a whole as far as the Krithia road. The aims of the Gallipoli Expedition, however, had not been advanced one inch.

During the night the enemy, having recovered from his initial demoralisation, delivered repeated counterattacks, and finally at daybreak pushed back part of the 157th Brigade, which had then been fighting without intermission for nearly twenty hours. To restore the situation and clear the Turk out of his recaptured footholds in the second line the Allied assault was on the afternoon of July 13 renewed. It was now supported by the Naval Division. These fresh troops also broke through the hostile front, and the Portsmouth Battalion, charging home, ran into the barrage of the French guns. They were cut up like the Borderers. That a sanguinary blunder of this kind could have taken place two days

running is surely a condemnation of unintelligent exactitude. Even though asked to take Achi Baba by the method of putting the cart before the horse the infantry were not allowed to do it if the "plans" had to be departed from

to be departed from.

The Allied casualties in this battle were 3,000 men killed and wounded. True the Turkish losses were much heavier, but the battle had no effect upon the fortunes of the Expedition, save to exhaust its resources. There could not have been a more completely Pyrrhic victory.

GALLIPOLI: TH

Final effort in Galli
of plan belate
Problems of s
weak point of
—Birdwood's
The Anzac "k
Operations of i
guards—Brillis
—The line adv
supports—The
Success of the
question of res
stroke—Renew
ordered, and
ported by Bali
—Enemy's su
—His force cut

So far the omilitary, had be had decided upenterprise, and additional division two division reinforcements the advance guarantee.

In view of deneral Hamilt with it. He rectives. Among reinforcements peninsula, and

EAST

Baba se the

men were in the urces. yrrhic

CHAPTER X

GALLIPOLI: THE CHANGE OF PLANS AND THE BATTLE FOR SARI BAIR

Final effort in Gallipoli decided upon—British reinforcements—Change of plan belated—Enemy's increased strength and confidence—Problems of supplies and water—New British dispositions—The weak point of the scheme—Battle before Achi Baba, August 7-9—Birdwood's scheme for the capture of Sari Bair—Its merits—The Anzac "break out"—Capture of the Lone Pine defences—Operations of the Right and Left assaulting columns and advance guards—Brilliant night attacks—Advance up the Sari Bair ravines—The line advanced to below Chanak Bair—Delay in pushing up supports—The landing of the 10th and 11th Divisions at Suvla—Success of the disbarkation—Crisis of the Sari Bair action—A question of reserves—Fatal hesitation—The enemy's bold counterstroke—Renewed British assault repulsed—Further advance ordered, and the summit gained—and lost—Third attack supported by Baldwin's column—Its late arrival—Advance checked—Enemy's supreme effort of August 10—Baldwin's right turned—His force cut up—Failure of the British plan.

So far the operations in Gallipoli, both naval and military, had been futile, but the British Government had decided upon one more effort before writing off the enterprise, and in June had resolved to send out three additional divisions of Regular troops, and the infantry of two divisions of Territorials. The whole of these reinforcements were to be in the Levant by August 10; the advance guard to reach Mudros a month earlier.

In view of this important accession to his forces, General Hamilton had to make up his mind what to do with it. He records that he considered various alternatives. Among them was a project for throwing all the reinforcements ashore on the southern toe of the peninsula, and fighting a way forward to the Narrows

by hammering at the Achi Baba defences. This was given up because the space available did not allow of the employment of such a mass. The project, indeed, was impracticable on the face of it. Another idea was to land the reinforcements on the Asiatic side of the Straits. The idea was unsound, and on examination proved to be unsound. Yet another notion was to land at Enos, or Ebrijie, at the head of the Gulf of Saros, and seize the neck of the Gallipoli peninsula at Bulair. It was abandoned because of Naval objections based on the difficulties of landing. The fourth project was to reinforce the Anzacs, and to initiate an offensive from that position, combined with a push on the front before Achi Baba and a landing at Suvla Bay. This fourth project was that determined upon.

Thus finally, and after much groping, the right plan was at the beginning of July perceived. In the interval, however, circumstances had changed. The enemy had taken the measure of the British attack. He knew his own weak and strong points perfectly, and he had been able to fortify himself. More than that, he had been able to an important extent to add to his numbers. The German offensive of 1915 against Russia, at this time in full swing, had freed the Turks not only from the fear of dangerous pressure in the Caucasus and Armenia, but from the apprehension of a Russian descent near Constantinople on the shores of the Black Sea, and the Turkish troops held at Constantinople to guard against that contingency had been set free for operations in Gallipoli. Furthermore, the news of the German advance into Russia had heightened the moral and re-established the confidence of the Turkish forces. In Mesopotamia the British had lost Kut; Syria appeared to be absolutely safe; there was as yet no stir among the Arabs. At no moment of the War, since its extension to Turkey, was there wider freedom to concentrate the strength of the Empire upon this threatened point at the Dardanelles.

Circumstances had decidedly changed. Opportunities had been lost which it was hardly reasonable to expect

would again p hit upon was vastly more disatical.

The proof of Turkish dispos into Gallipoli Achi Baba, bu of August the 110,000 rifles arms and serv 175,000 men. 75,000 rifles, enemy's defen carry on there he inclined to demand for the this fresh Briti he apparently for it, and it is blow was to fal

General Har which the Brit various scheme by 300 men on a concentration tion by the Fr coast opposite the Admiral an thinks for the The real matte enemy's streng the hampering shell against 1 bombardment of There were ser within range o Boghali, the ro Bay in the Na junction at the

GALLIPOLI: THE CHANGE OF PLANS

would again present themselves. The plan at length hit upon was right, but its execution had become vastly more difficult, and its success far more problematical.

The proof of the added difficulty is afforded by the Turkish dispositions. The new enemy troops drafted into Gallipoli were massed not against the Allies at Achi Baba, but against the Anzacs. At the beginning of August the estimated strength of the enemy was 110,000 rifles besides artillery, and the total of all arms and services could hardly have been less than 175,000 men. Of this force two-thirds, comprising 75,000 rifles, were opposed to the Australians. The enemy's defences before Achi Baba enabled him to carry on there with economy of his resources. Nor was he inclined to waste his resources where there was no demand for them. Whether or not he was informed of this fresh British effort, and judging from his measures he apparently was, he at any rate was fully prepared for it, and it is clear had accurately inferred where the

blow was to fall.

EAST

his was

llow of indeed,

dea was

of the

nination

was to

Gulf of

isula at

jections project

ffensive

ne front 7. This

tht plan nterval,

my had new his

ad been

ad been

umbers.

at this

ly from

sus and descent

ick Sea,

to guard erations

German

ral and

ces. In appeared

r among

xtension

rate the point at

rtunities

o expect

General Hamilton states that during the month in which the British reinforcements were arriving he had various schemes for hoodwinking the Turks—a landing by 300 men on the northern shore of the Gulf of Saros; a concentration of warships at Mitylene; a demonstration by the French naval squadron along the mainland coast opposite that island; inspections at Mitylene by the Admiral and himself, and other proceedings which he thinks for the most part bore fruit. It is doubtful. The real matters of concern were the dispersal of the enemy's strength from before the Anzac position and the hampering of the enemy's dispositions, not by wasting shell against his defences, but by a sustained naval bombardment of the nodal points of his communications. There were several of these points, and all were well within range of the naval guns—Karnabili, Kum Keui, Boghali, the road junction at the head of Kilia Leman Bay in the Narrows, Maidos, Eski Keui, and the road junction at the head of the Asmak valley. To have

177

made these points impassable and kept them impassable would have tied the Turkish defence into knots. Yet the movement of the enemy's troops, guns, munitions and other supplies does not seem to have been seriously

impeded.

There was all the more necessity for leaving nothing to chance if that could be avoided, because the British strength, even with the full reinforcements, did not exceed 95,000 rifles, and, fortified as the Turks now were, this force, inferior in numbers, was in truth being asked to undertake an exceptional feat of arms. The backbone of the whole enterprise was undoubtedly the Allied fleet, as it had been from the beginning, and it was not that the sailors did not do the work assigned to them with thoroughness and skill. They did. But the real support needed was more than that given in

the actual land fighting.

The British Headquarters were more concerned meanwhile with working out the plans of the proposed attack. Many of the problems of detail were far from easy. There was no base commodious enough to accommodate five more divisions, even less the artillery of two. The reinforcements had to be distributed between the islands of Mudros, Imbros, and Mitylene. They had to be put ashore at Anzac and at Suvla Bay with their material, munitions and stores. They had adequately to be supplied with water, for it was now the hottest period of the summer, and in the ravines and gullies of Gallipoli the temperature was tropical. An additional 1,750 water carts and 3,700 mules had to be provided and landed. To grapple with the water problem the measures taken were first the construction within the Anzac lines of a reservoir to hold 30,000 gallons, fitted with pumps, and connected with a system of distribution pipes and tanks; and next the collection from Egypt, India and elsewhere of camel tanks, pakhals (water skins), petrol tins, and milk cans, to hold 100,000 gallons more. A cargo of these was lost owing to the steamer on which they had been shipped coming into collision with another vessel, but enough were got together to GALLIP

hold 80,000 gal as a whole was a big affair ha landing places and under ho separate unit operation by part of the wo

By the tran Division, part Brigade, the Birdwood had 72 guns. The cruisers, four inadequate. Anzac took pl and in the qui

The attack I from Anzac, a at Suvla, were on August 6. taneous. As mistake. To I and to have landing at Suverlier.

For these of out were: Bef French infants 30,000 infants difficulties of Is but since the what General blow," it was a Taking the Arrifles, there was with the Suvla be left to face to one. Since line before Ac

passable s. Yet unitions eriously

nothing British did not ks now th being The IS. oubtedly ing, and assigned d. But given in

d meanl attack. m easy. nmodate vo. The e islands o be put material, y to be st period Gallipoli al 1,750 ided and lem the ithin the ns, fitted tribution n Egypt, s (water 0 gallons steamer collision gether to hold 80,000 gallons. However looked at, the undertaking as a whole was a gigantic business. It would have been a big affair had the landing places been adequate. The landing places were of necessity inadequate, improvised and under hostile fire, and the disbarkation of every separate unit of the force had to be schemed out as an operation by itself. There is no doubt this detailed part of the work was well done.

By the transfer to and landing at Anzac of the 10th Division, part of the 13th and the 29th Indian Infantry Brigade, the force under the command of General Birdwood had been increased to 37,000 infantry and 72 guns. The supporting naval force consisted of two cruisers, four monitors, and two destroyers. It was inadequate. The landing of the reinforcements at Anzac took place on the nights of August 4, 5 and 6, and in the quietest hours.

The attack before Achi Baba (a diversion), the attack from Anzac, and the landing of the 9th Army Corps at Suvla, were all timed in the programme to take place on August 6. They were to be, to all intents, simultaneous. As regards the landing at Suvla, this was a mistake. To have embarrassed the enemy's dispositions and to have thinned him out before Sari Bair, the landing at Suvla should have taken place at least a day

earlier.

For these operations the British dispositions marked out were: Before Achi Baba 23,000 British and 17,000 French infantry; at Anzac 37,000 infantry; at Suvla 30,000 infantry. Of course means of transport and difficulties of landing largely controlled this distribution, but since the force at Anzac was intended to deliver what General Hamilton described as "the knock-out blow," it was evidently not very strong for the purpose. Taking the Anzac and Suvla forces together as 67,000 rifles, there was a chance, but if anything went wrong with the Suvla operations, then General Birdwood would be left to face a hostile superiority of something like two to one. Since, too, the plans had been changed and the line before Achi Baba had become the Allied flanking

movement, the activity of the very considerable force there, 40,000 rifles in all, should have been more than a diversion. Now was the time to press the Achi Baba attack on sound strategical lines with all the vigour possible. A merely spasmodic assault at Achi Baba was a weak spot in the British scheme. It was clear that the enemy's primary object was to crush the Anzac offensive, and that the success or failure of that offensive must to no small extent depend upon preventing him by pressure elsewhere from giving effect to his design. The Allied force before Achi Baba was the main means of prevention, the force landed at Suvla only secondary. And this bad spot in the British scheme was the main cause of its failure. The enemy wisely had his greatest weight at the point of attack; the British commander his greatest effective weight elsewhere, and during part of the time passive. It was an attempt to snatch victory with one hand.

The operations on the front before Achi Baba need only be briefly dealt with. The assault of August 6 was directed against some 1,200 yards of hostile trenches on the British right and right-centre—the wrong point again. It was delivered at daybreak (3.50 a.m.) and by part of the 29th Division and the 42nd Division. The enemy was encountered in superior force. Despite

its signal bravery the assault failed.

On the following morning (August 7) the Turks counter-attacked, but on their side also achieved no success. The same afternoon the British offensive was resumed, this time in the centre of the line against Turkish defences between the Mallepe Dere and the Kanli Dere. The hottest of the fighting was in and around a vineyard just west of the Krithia road. The East Lancashires had captured this position in the first rush, and held on to it notwithstanding counter-attacks which followed one another at brief intervals. Up and down the enclosure over a length of not more than 600-feet the struggle swayed. One Turkish column after another came on, pressed back the East Lancashire men by weight of numbers, melted away, and



EAST

e force
te than
i Baba
vigour
i Baba
is clear
e Anzac
ffensive
ng him
design.
means
ondary.
ne main

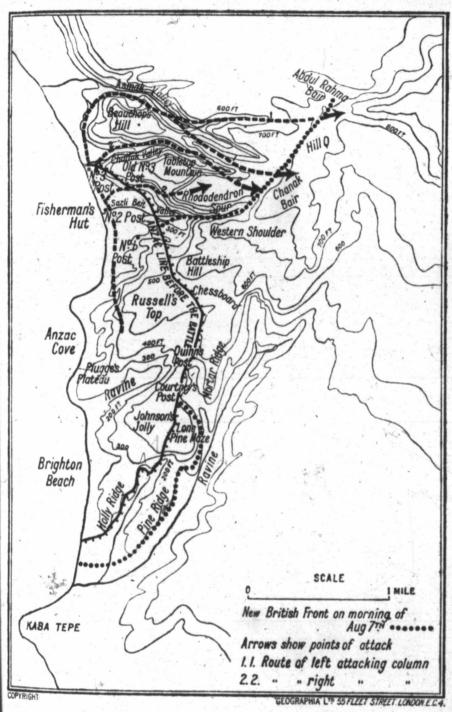
oa need ugust 6 trenches g point m.) and Division.
Despite

Turks

eved no

greatest mander ng part victory

against and the in and id. The the first reattacks Up and than 600-nn after ancashire ay, and



[To face page 180.

GALLIPO1

were chased ou thinned, and t threw forward far thrown fo Through the ni of these dauntl August 8 the e he was beaten. again. It was bayonet, and after forty-eigh were relieved. British line.

These compa before Achi Ba but it would b affected his dis not.

In the offens under the command the Turks' con and summit of the face of a na even had the proper hand and applied.

The details Birdwood, and and the nature were sound and

Part of the lst and 3rd L of the 40th Br and occupy th more especially

The New Ze two Light Hor 18th Division; were to move of of the massif, t

GALLIPOLI: THE CHANGE OF PLANS

were chased out. The ranks of the Fusiliers, too, were thinned, and the enemy, determined to oust them, threw forward a column double the depth of those so far thrown forward. But that also was wrecked. Through the night the vineyard remained in the hands of these dauntless British troops. On the morning of August 8 the enemy came on once more. Once more he was beaten. He tried again at night, and he failed again. It was a desperate encounter, bayonet against bayonet, and the Turk went down. On August 9, after forty-eight hours' fighting, the East Lancashires were relieved. The position remained part of the British line.

These comparatively limited attacks upon the front before Achi Baba had kept the enemy there occupied, but it would be going far to say that they materially affected his dispositions. It is clear that they did not.

In the offensive from the Anzac position the troops under the command of General Birdwood were to carry the Turks' confining defences, and to storm the ridges and summit of Sari Bair. That was a large order in the face of a numerically much stronger opposing force, even had the pressures on the Achi Baba front on the one hand and from Suvla Bay on the other been fully applied.

The details of this offensive were left to General Birdwood, and considering the force at his disposal, and the nature of the country to be covered, his tactics were sound and able.

Part of the force—the Australian Division with the 1st and 3rd Light Horse Brigades, and two battalions of the 40th Brigade—were to hold the Anzac position and occupy the enemy with attacks launched from it, more especially on the Anzac right.

The New Zealand and Australian Division, less the two Light Horse Brigades just mentioned; part of the 13th Division; and the 29th Brigade of Indian Infantry were to move out upon Sari Bair, with the highest ridge of the massif, that of the Chanuk Bair, as their objective.

The 29th British Brigade (less one battalion) and the

38th Brigade were held in reserve.

The general plan by which the operations of the first two parts of the force were to dovetail together was this. The attacks from the Anzac position were to be made on the right and centre drawing the strength of the enemy as far as possible in that direction, that is, to the south of the main Sari Bair massif. The missile troops coincidentally were to move out from the position to the north, and turning inland strike up the ravines leading to the summit from the west and north-west. This gave them the prospect of getting on the enemy's right flank. The attack up the ravines was to be made by night.

Obviously the offensive opened with an assault on the Lone Pine defences. That work had been heavily wired in, and the Turkish trenches were roofed with strong beams of pine, proof against any save the heaviest shells. They formed a maze at once intricate and dark, and they were connected up by blind saps with other

defences north, east and south.

This attack, schemed out in detail by Major-General Walker, commandant of the 1st Australian Division, and carried out by the 1st Australian Brigade (Brigadier-General N. M. Smyth) was in the circumstances a remarkable success. To reach the enemy works at all it was necessary for the Australians to race across the open exposed to fire not only in front but on both flanks. The barbed-wire entanglement had to be negotiated, and then it became a question of getting in and there was no way in save by demolishing the head cover. Very few troops have ever had to face such an attempt. Not merely, however, did these Australians refuse to waver under the converging fire poured in upon them, and not only did they steeplechase over the entanglement, but, though the hostile loopholes were spitting fire right and left, the spectacle was witnessed of bodies of men as with one impulse seizing and lifting the heavy beams and crashing them into the trenches beneath. A shower of bombs hurled through the openings thus

made, and the was all a matter of an hour afte 3rd and 4th Bathe labyrinth T the Turks as the upon which the at the first blove.

Of course, su sively, for, in f Australians had captured maze the first of a ser the next six day in between. I delivered with Australians she that of their fi apparently ove Brigade, muste some 25,000 of as to his losses. every Turkish-(upon the posit stuck it. The fatigue they e but their fire v end of the wee less terrible at to retake Lone

There can b at Lone Pine, startling surpri enemy's weight be no doubt it first stages of Other holding opposite to Ru was mainly ow to whether ther

GALLIPOLI: THE CHANGE OF PLANS

EAST

nd the

e first

er was

to be

gth of

hat is,

missile

osition

avines

n-west.

nemy's

e made

ult on

neavily

d with

eaviest

d dark,

1 other

General

ivision,

igadier-

emark-

it was

le open

otiated,

d there

cover.

ttempt.

fuse to

n them,

ntangle-

spitting

f bodies

e heavy

beneath.

ngs thus

flanks.

made, and the assailants were in with the bayonet. It was all a matter of minutes at the outside. In a quarter of an hour after they had gone over their own top, the 3rd and 4th Battalions of the Brigade were down amid the labyrinth Turk hunting. The 2nd Battalion caught the Turks as they bolted from the burrows. The work upon which the enemy had put in weeks of labour fell at the first blow.

Of course, such a defeat was not to be accepted passively, for, in fact, it broke the Turks' left front. Australians had not been at the work of organising the captured maze more than half an hour when there began the first of a series of reactions which were kept up during the next six days, with interludes of bombing and sniping in between. In resisting these assaults, some of them delivered with an almost frenzied determination, the Australians showed a valour not less unbeatable than that of their first onset. They were pitted against an apparently overwhelming weight of numbers, a mere Brigade, mustering 2,000 rifles to start with, against some 25,000 of the enemy, and an enemy utterly reckless as to his losses. But nothing could shift them, though every Turkish-German battery within range was focussed upon the position. Day and night these Australians stuck it. Their losses were heavy—inevitably; the fatigue they endured seemed beyond human powers: but their fire was as rapid, straight and deadly at the end of the week as at its beginning, and they were not less terrible at close quarters. The Turk was never able to retake Lone Pine.

There can be no doubt that this Australian attack at Lone Pine, the outcome of which must have been a startling surprise, had all the effect in diverting the enemy's weight it was intended to have, and there can be no doubt it contributed most materially to ease the first stages of the operations against Chanuk Bair. Other holding attacks delivered against German works opposite to Russell's Top served the like purpose. It was mainly owing to these and the enemy's doubt as to whether there was to be a break out on the Australian

protected overh

in front on the

strong entangler

as pretty a bit

On successive

Colne, focussing

pumped shell o

minutes had sl

there had been

bardment. Car

should begin ev

precisely at ha

that half-hour t

good sense to cl

Column (August

as customary, a

the New Zealar

amid the boom

through the sc

The shelling ov

The redoubt wa

the position was

Part struck acr

half a mile to th

They cleared ou

a much more ni

multiplied the

along the spur

of Table Top 1

impossibility, a

plateau forming

astonished than

put up a stiff fi

Old No. 3 Pc

The garrison

On the night

be wished for.

left or on the right, that the missile force got through with comparatively little opposition.

That force had been disposed in two columns, of assault, each preceded by a covering column or advance guard. The command was entrusted to Major-General Sir A. J. Godley.

The Right Assaulting Column was to move up towards Chanuk Bair by the Salzi Beit and Chailak ravines; the Left Assaulting Column to move up by the Aghyl ravine. The Salzi Beit runs south-west from the summit; the Chailak west; the Aghyl north-west. The whole movement was a converging one.

But to render it feasible the Turkish defences of Old No. 3 Post, and on Table Top Mountain, lying between the Salzi Beit and Chailak ravines, had first to be seized. That was the work assigned to the Right Covering Column. In carrying out this duty the Right Covering Column would, while opening up the two ravines, protect the flank of the Left Covering Column as it moved further north along the coast, in order to seize on the farther side of the Aghyl ravine the Damajelik Bair and by doing so bar the enemy's access to the Aghyl Dere from the direction of Suvla.

The Right Covering Column, which first got to work, consisted of the New Zealand Mounted Rifles Brigade; the Otago Mounted Rifles; the Maori Contingent; and the New Zealand Field Troop; Brigadier-General A. H. Russell, sponsor of Russell's Top, in command.

Old No. 3 Post might, clumsily handled, have proved a very ticklish bit, but Brigadier Russell did not intend to handle it clumsily. On the contrary he finished it off within ten minutes. The story of the ruse is well known, but will stand re-telling.

Until May 30 this seaward facing spur had been in the hands of the Anzacs. It was an important point tactically, because it commanded the entrances to the ravines on either side, and to a certain extent the beach in front, a quarter mile distant. Having captured it the enemy set out in his usual fashion to render it "impregnable." He converted it into a redoubt,

184

EAST

hrough

nns, of dvance General

owards avines; Aghyl ne sumt. The

of Old between e seized. overing ravines, n as it to seize majelik to the

o work, Brigade; nt; and al A. H.

proved t intend ished it is well

been in at point s to the ne beach tured it ender it redoubt,

GALLIPOLI: THE CHANGE OF PLANS

protected overhead by a covering of heavy beams, and in front on the south slope by two lines of fire trenches, strong entanglements, and various outworks, the whole as pretty a bit of German military engineering as could be wished for.

On successive nights, by arrangement, the cruiser Colne, focussing her searchlight on the redoubt, had pumped shell on to it for ten minutes; then for ten minutes had shut off. Next, for ten minutes more there had been a second turn of searchlight and bombardment. Care was taken that this performance should begin every evening at nine precisely, and end precisely at half-past. It was surmised that during that half-hour the Turks in the redoubt would have the good sense to clear out.

On the night of the attack by the Right Covering Column (August 6) the performance by *Colne* broke out as customary, and on time. While it was in progress the New Zealanders had moved forward and, unheard amid the boom of the cruiser's guns, had scrambled through the scrub on to the spur behind the work. The shelling over they rushed in. It was as expected. The redoubt was empty.

The garrison had betaken themselves through the saps to the outworks, and it is not hard to imagine their astonishment to find the New Zealanders coming after them the same way. Thus attacked from its keypoint the position was indefensible.

Old No. 3 Post taken, the Covering Column divided. Part struck across the Chailak ravine to Bauchops Hill half a mile to the north, and brought off another surprise. They cleared out an extensive maze of trenches, held by a much more numerous force. But terror and darkness multiplied the portent. The other detachment pushing along the spur from the redoubt scaled the declivities of Table Top Mountain. The feat was considered an impossibility, and the Turks holding the small circular plateau forming the top must have been hardly less astonished than their fellows in Old No. 3 Post. They put up a stiff fight but it was brief. Some 150, finding

themselves surrounded, laid down their arms. Table Top was an enemy depot, a kind of upper shelf reckoned exceptionally safe. The haul of rifles, ammunition,

equipment and stores was encouraging.

Russell had handled his troops with skill and daring, relying upon their initiative and resourcefulness. And those qualities were not least conspicuously displayed in an ugly bit of work presented by an entanglement obstructing the bed of the Chailak. The Otago Mounted Rifles were held up by this heavy and broad fencing, which the enemy posted to guard it were evidently ready to defend to the last. But the Maoris, helped by a party of New Zealand Engineers, were not long in finding a way round. The work of the Right Covering Column had now been done, well done, and with light losses.

The Left Covering Column, under the command of Brigadier Travers, was not less successful. It consisted of two battalions—the 4th South Wales Borderers and the 5th Wiltshires, with half the 72nd Field Company. To reach its objective, the Damajelik Bair, it had to execute a march of rather more than three miles over rugged country, and of course in the darkness. The prompt capture by Russell's force of Old No. 3 Post, however, cleared the way across the Chailak valley. On the farther side, passing between westward slope of Bauchop's Hill and the coast, the column came under the enemy's fire from the higher ground, but this occupation with the Left Covering Column had contributed to the successful surprise assault by Russell's men. Across the Aghyl the Left Column was deployed and launched against the Turkish trenches on Damajelik Bair with the bayonet. One line of defences was cleared after another in dashing style. This fighting went on coincidentally with that on Bauchop's Hill on the other side of the ravine, and the two positions were finally cleared very nearly at the same time—a little after one in the morning.

An hour earlier the Right Assaulting Column had entered the Salzi Beit and Chailak ravines, its immediate

GALLIPO

objective the oprotrusion linke the central sur seizure meant a

The Columncommand—was Brigade, a Con and an Indian I

The main at be delivered fr between the tralong the Salzi talion. That coreached the low side, by half-p alarmed, and rigof his fortified himself that th was already, thead of both va

The resistance talion was stiff, to carry the T fact, intended to Chailak ravine, the Otago Bat ravine was this the river obstruction but the Turks to It was a quarter pushing as far to move up it in

The Left As the real weight to Major-Gener in the affair of brigades—the 1 tralian—and lik an Indian Mou Zealand Engine

GALLIPOLI: THE CHANGE OF PLANS

objective the capture of Rhododendron Spur. That protrusion linked Table Top Mountain with the part of the central summit known as Chanuk Bair, and its seizure meant access to the main ridge.

The Column—Brigadier-General F. E. Johnson in command—was formed of the New Zealand Infantry Brigade, a Company of the New Zealand Engineers,

and an Indian Mountain Battery.

EAST

reckoned

nunition,

daring,

ss. And

lisplayed

nglement

Mounted

fencing,

evidently

elped by

long in

Covering

rith light

mand of

consisted

rers and company.

t had to niles over

ess. The

. 3 Post,

k valley.

I slope of

me under

but this

ell's men, oved and

Damajelik

nces was

s fighting

's Hill on

—a little

lumn had

mmediate

Table

The main attack upon Rhododendron Spur was to be delivered from the Chailak slope—the Spur rose between the two ravines—supported by a diversion along the Salzi Beit by the Canterbury Infantry Battalion. That corps, passing under Table Top Mountain, reached the lower slopes of the Spur, on the Salzi Beit side, by half-past one, but by this time the enemy, alarmed, and rightly alarmed, by the rapid loss of four of his fortified positions, had pretty plainly satisfied himself that the real danger lay in this quarter. He was already, therefore, reinforcing in all haste at the head of both valleys.

The resistance encountered by the Canterbury Battalion was stiff, and they were not strong enough alone to carry the Turkish entrenchments. Nor was it, in fact, intended that they should operate alone. In the Chailak ravine, meanwhile, the main body, pioneered by the Otago Battalion, found the going difficult. The ravine was thickly overgrown with scrub; the bed of the river obstructed by pitfalls; the Turks in force. But the Turks were less an obstacle than the brushwood. It was a quarter to six in the morning before the force, pushing as far as the Rhododendron Spur, was able to move up it in touch with the Canterbury men.

The Left Assaulting Column, however, represented the real weight of the attack. The command, entrusted to Major-General H. V. Cox, who had proved his merits in the affair of the Gurkha bluffs, was formed of two brigades—the 29th Indian Infantry and the 4th Australian—and like the Right Column, was accompanied by an Indian Mountain Battery and a Company of New Teeler I. Former and the strength of the column, was accompanied by an Indian Mountain Battery and a Company of New Teeler I. Former and I. Form

Zealand Engineers.

GALLIPOL

The orders of this force were to move up to and seize the main ridge by way of the Aghyl ravine.

It entered the ravine immediately after its advance guard, the Left Covering Column, and moving up took the enemy completely by surprise. The Turks ran,

throwing away their arms in their flight.

Half-way up the Aghyl valley forks. One branch, that to the right, led up to the part of the central ridge known as Hill Q; the other, to the left, to the part of the ridge known as Hill 305, from its height in metres. This last is the loftiest point. Hill Q and Hill 305 are

connected by a col.

The Indian Brigade struck along the ravine to the right; the Australian along the ravine to the left. In these higher ravines the resistance stiffened. At daybreak, however, the Australians had reached the head of the left-hand ravine, and the slope leading immediately to the summit (Hill 305); the Indian troops the head of the right-hand ravine and the slope just below Chanuk Bair, where there was a small upland farm. In that they had established themselves. On their right the 10th Gurkhas were in touch with Johnson's Force, who had entrenched on Rhododendron Spur, where it joined on to the central mass; on their left the 14th Sikhs were in touch with the Australians. The line was thus continuous.

In truth, considering the strength of the two columns, three brigades in all, these operations had been attended with remarkable success, and the more so seeing that the advance had been carried out by night through unknown country. It seems, however, to have been expected that they would have reached and seized the summits of the central ridge before daylight. In view of the fact that there had been no previous reconnaissance of the ground, this expectation was high, if not too high. The troops had done extremely well. What was necessary now was at all speed to push up reinforcements. Beyond doubt more than three brigades could not usefully be employed on the tops of the main ridge, not more than a mile and a quarter in length.

a counter-attack at once available

These were no 6). On the extre at Suvla. The l the attack on Sa tion, but in the the enemy by s sequence be at little opposition.

It is advisab of time rather tl in fact extended to the positions

At this time of Sari Bair no estimated by t Nor were their seaward side of of water—at th Ægean there is high. The hill I of the lake is a had also been c is the rise nan (53 metres), an Hill (50 metres Oglu Hill (100 some batteries Hill. Seemingl were judged sul bay and to resi to break out or

The 9th Arn (Irish) Divisio The Corps was F. Stopford. 1 served under South Africa.

EAST

nd seize

advance up took ks ran,

branch, al ridge part of metres. 305 are

to the eft. In At dayhe head immedipops the st below id farm. In their ohnson's on Spur, heir left tralians.

columns, attended ing that through ave been eized the In view s reconhigh, if ely well. push up brigades s of the in length.

GALLIPOLI: THE CHANGE OF PLANS

But the gaining of the ridge and the holding of it against a counter-attack was a question of supporting strength at once available.

These were not the only events of this night (August 6). On the extreme left the 9th Army Corps had landed at Suvla. The landing had been timed to coincide with the attack on Sari Bair, not only as part of that operation, but in the belief that the coincidence would take the enemy by surprise, and that there would in consequence be at Suvla but little opposition. There was little opposition.

It is advisable here to follow events in the order of time rather than in that of place, because the fighting in fact extended from the Lone Pine work on the south to the positions round Suvla Bay on the north.

At this time the Turks were reported to have north of Sari Bair no more than a comparatively feeble force, estimated by the Intelligence Service at 4,000 men. Nor were their defences there very complete. On the seaward side of the Salt Lake, and between that sheet of water—at this date as usual a mere marsh—and the Egean there is an isolated hill, Lala Baba, 49 metres high. The hill had been enringed with trenches. North of the lake is a stretch of sandhills. Some trenches had also been cut there. On the inland side of the lake is the rise named by the Australians Chocolate Hill (53 metres), and adjacent to it, running inland, Green Hill (50 metres), Scimitar Hill (70 metres), and Ismail The enemy had established Oglu Hill (100 metres). some batteries on Chocolate Hill and on Ismail Oglu Hill. Seemingly these various defences taken together were judged sufficient both to prevent a landing in the bay and to resist an attempt on the part of the Anzacs to break out on the north.

The 9th Army Corps had been formed of the 10th (Irish) Division and the 11th (Northern) Division. The Corps was under the command of Lieut.-General Sir F. Stopford. He was a soldier of experience and had served under Wolseley in Egypt and with Buller in South Africa.

For the purposes of this disbarkation the troops had been assembled at Imbros, the nearest island base, and, put on board destroyers and motor-lighters, were at nightfall (August 6) to leave Kephalos Bay, the anchorage at Imbros, and reach Nibrunesi Point by ten p.m. It will be recalled that the attack upon the Lone Pine maze had begun at six that evening, and that at ten the two covering columns of the assault upon Sari Bair were to break out.

The passage from Imbros and the landing were favoured by calm weather, and the operation of throwing the troops ashore greatly aided by the motor-lighters, now used for the first time. Each carried 500 men besides munitions and stores. As they were of light draft they could stand close in, and moving under their own steam at a speed of five knots, could rapidly transfer men from the destroyers, which owing to their deeper

draft had to lie farther off the land.

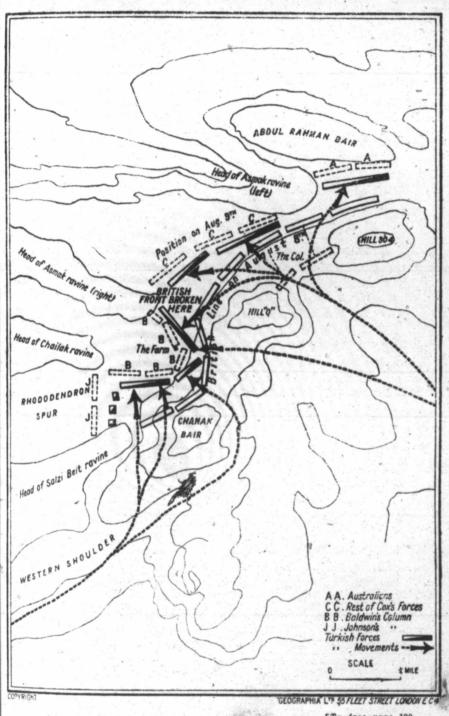
The operation of the landing, carefully worked out by the Staff, went well save for one mischance. Originally it had been intended to land all the troops on the sandy beach outside of and just south of the bay. This beach, about a mile in length, is backed by sandhills. It proved to be undefended, and the actual operation of landing at night was not visible from the enemy's posts. Possibly enough had the whole of the force been landed here the entire proceeding would have turned out a complete surprise. But, considering that, on the probabilities, there would be opposition, General Stopford urged the advisability of throwing one brigade, the 34th, ashore inside the bay on its north side in order to secure command of the inlet. To that proposal. General Hamilton, assented. It turned out, however, not merely that the water inside the bay was shallow, making it difficult to stand inshore, but that the enemy here proved to be on the alert, with the result that he was given the alarm from the outset. The motorlighters grounded some distance off the beach, and men had to wade ashore through water up to their necks and armpits. They were not only encumbered with their

R EAST

oops had base, and, were at inchorage ten p.m., one Pine at ten the Sari Bair

ing were throwing r-lighters, 500 men of light nder their y transfer eir deeper

orked out . Originps on the bay. This sandhills. operation e enemy's force been ve turned at, on the eral Stope brigade, le in order proposal. however, s shallow, the enemy ilt that he he motor-, and men necks and with their



[To face page 190.

GALLIP

accoutrement, trenches amon Baba post bel

Happily the outside the mishap. The Baba. While landing going attacked from Brigade—the As a Turkish out.

By the seizu of its entrance secured. The enemy still he north of the soperations wer attack upon his Turk showed s gorse, dry as tin was set on fire Fusiliers, and thill 10 with the was pushed for Dagh, with the shelling the bar

Owing to the by daybreak, arriving at day command of M

It has been s landing at Sucontrary, it was up to this time been comparat numerous had h

Thus affairs will return to t
In the words

GALLIPOLI: THE CHANGE OF PLANS

accoutrement, but under fire both from the Turkish trenches among the sandhills in front and from the Lala

Baba post behind.

Happily the 32nd and 33rd Brigades had got ashore outside the bay beyond Nibrunesi Point without mishap. The first proceeding was an assault on Lala Baba. While the Turks there were occupied with the landing going on across the bay they found themselves attacked from the rear by two battalions of the 32nd Brigade—the 9th West Yorkshires and the 6th Yorks. As a Turkish post Lala Baba was once for all snuffed out.

By the seizure of the Turkish defences on each side of its entrance, command of Suvla Bay had now been secured. The only point adjacent to the bay which the enemy still held was a low rise named Hill 10, just north of the Salt Lake. Against that point the first operations were directed. In opposition to the opening attack upon him by the troops of the 34th Brigade the Turk showed some disposition to rally. The scrub and gorse, dry as tinder after the heats of the summer months, was set on fire. Despite these fires the 9th Lancashire Fusiliers, and the 11th Manchesters drove the Turks off Hill 10 with the bayonet. Another part of the Brigade was pushed forward to seize the coast ridge, the Karakol Dagh, with the intention of preventing the enemy from shelling the bay from those heights.

Owing to these clearances, which had been effected by daybreak, six battalions of the 10th Division, arriving at daybreak (August 7) from Mitylene under the command of Major-General Hill, sailed in the bay.

It has been supposed that the actual operation of the landing at Suvla was confused and costly. On the contrary, it was the most successful operation of its kind up to this time carried out. In casualties its cost had been comparatively trifling. No body of troops as numerous had been thrown ashore in so brief an interval.

Thus affairs stood on the morning of August 7. We will return to the story of the assault upon Sari Bair.

assaulting columns and the two covering columns engaged in that operation had "performed a feat of arms without parallel." They had swept away the strong and elaborated defences of the enemy on the northern face of the Anzac line; they had in the night covered miles of wild and rugged country; they had climbed to a height of nearly 1,000 feet above sea level; they had encountered and had overcome dogged opposition. After seven hours of that exertion, and weighted with their equipment,. they were inevitably tired. But the exertion, severe as it was, proved less trying than the lack of water. The force had to be limited to a pint per man per day—a pint in twenty-four hours in face of work like that, in a barren land, and amid the heats of August in the Levant. Is it surprising that on the appearance of the pack mules bearing the priceless fluid, men, reduced to that state in which thirst becomes a physical agony, rushed out to lick with their parching tongues the moisture exuding through the waterskins?

So far as they had gone the operations had evidently astonished the enemy, and it is easy to imagine that between the loss of his walling-in defences and the landing of more Pritish forces at Suvla he realised that the crisis of the battle had now been reached. The issue at this moment—the dawn of August 7—trembled in the balance. The quality of the British troops and excellent tactics had prevailed, and victory might still have been snatched. In the circumstances, the Commander-in-Chief on each side had to take a decision. "At times," General Hamilton records in his despatch, "I had thought of throwing my reserves into this stubborn central battle, where probably they would have turned the scale. But each time the water troubles made me give up the idea." Water troubles or not it is clear that the General should have risked it. In place of throwing forward his reserves he relied upon the diverting pressure from Suvla. He hesitated. He hesitated for nearly two days-and he lost.

On the other side the enemy Commander-in-Chief had to decide whether or not he would occupy himself with the Suvl swing his wei and with the prudence, he also shrewdly columns on Sa that there and and won.

So far Gobrilliant result offset the motal already in the from this time

The first mi Bair to renew the main ridge and worst of a attempt could strength, preva of the main Battleship Hill were turned o have hampered ment. There w was initiated of less half a bat foot of the sl The attack ma strength of the was the less sp

Two hours a assault was or enable the assault was or enable the assault were at 11 a. part of the 3 palpable that the not prove enough and prove enough Russell's remained holding Post, Table

ins engaged ms without and elaborface of the iles of wild a height of ncountered seven hours equipment, 1, severe as rater. The per day—a e that, in a the Levant. f the pack eed to that ny, rushed

d evidently agine that as and the alised that

e moisture

The issue rembled in troops and might still, the Coma decision, a despatch, this stubwould have er troubles or not it is In place of the diverting esitated for

ler-in-Chief

with the Suvla diversion, or, chancing that for the time, swing his weight against the British centre. Skilfully and with the boldness which in war is often the truest prudence, he risked the Suvla attack, and doubtless also shrewdly inferring the condition of the assaulting columns on Sari Bair, made up his mind there and then that there and then fortune lay. He decided soundly—and won.

So far General Birdwood's tactics had yielded brilliant results. But because faulty strategy may offset the most admirable tactics—it had so proved already in the fighting before Achi Baba—matters from this time began to go wrong.

The first mistake was an order to the troops on Sari Bair to renew the attempt to seize the actual summit of the main ridge. Tired as they were, racked by thirst, and worst of all unsupported, it was inevitable that this attempt could not, in face of the enemy's increasing strength, prevail. The Turks' chief access to the summit of the main ridge was up its western shoulder from Battleship Hill. The guns of the cruisers and monitors were turned on to this access, but though they must have hampered, they did not arrest the hostile movement. There were not enough of them. The fresh assault was initiated on the left by the 4th Australian Brigade; less half a battalion left to hold their position at the foot of the slope, but reinforced by the 14th Sikhs. The attack made no headway, and while thinning the strength of the force, added to its fatigue; more haste was the less speed.

Two hours and a half later (at 9.30 a.m.) a general assault was ordered. It also met with a repulse. To enable the assaulting columns to hold on three battalions were at 11 a.m. sent up from reserve. They were part of the 39th Infantry Brigade. But as it was palpable that this comparatively slender support might not prove enough it was decided, if need arose, to draw upon Russell's force. The Right Covering Column had remained holding the captured positions—Old Number 3 Post, Table Top Mountain, and Bauchop's Hill.

Russell was ordered to hold these with two regiments of Mounted Rifles, so that the remainder of his force, two battalions, plus the Maoris, might be ready to move.

Meanwhile the troops under the crests of Sari Bair held on. But the same afternoon, on the arrival of the supports, they were re-grouped into two columns for a further advance. To Johnson's force were added the Auckland Mounted Rifles, two battalions of the 18th Division, and the Maoris. To Cox's force the 39th Infantry Brigade (less one battalion) but with the 6th South Lancashires attached.

The renewed attack was timed for 4.15 a.m., August 8. When the time came the men of the several battalions on the right, now rested, raced each other up the slope. The corps were the Wellington (N.Z.) Battalion; the 7th Gloucesters; the Auckland Mounted Rifles; the 8th Welsh Pioneers, and the Maoris. The rush was led by Lieut-Colonel W. G. Malone, and no fire on the part of the enemy could stop it. The crest of Chanuk Bair was gained. From observation posts in the rear figures were seen through the glasses and in the first light of the breaking day made out on the skyline. They were British.

To the left of Johnson's force the 39th Infantry Brigade and the 29th Indian Brigade moved up at the same time, part against Hill Q, part against the col. Some footing was gained on the spurs, but the enemy's fire here checked a further advance.

The 4th Australian Brigade unfortunately also met with a check. It had been judged advisable to reach the apex of Hill 305 by and from a spur on its northern side called the Abdul Rahman Bair. The Turks at this point, however, were in strong force and well supplied with machine-guns. Since the southern slopes of Sari Bair are precipitous—the axis or backbone of the mass runs east to west—the enemy knew that if hemmed in at both ends he was entripped. The eastern end, Hill 305, was his avenue of escape, just as the western end was his main avenue of reinforcement. On hill 305, therefore, he was carefully entrenched, and he had

a superior stre assault the Au of these daun It was a strugg of desperation. had to retire to ravine. Encou been extravag these terrible for a succession c meant to finish chance offered. Massed colum smashed. The grew too hot ravine became dead. The defe

one inch.

At the other Johnson's forc footing. Chant concentrated fi the thinnest s affording any r who were supp never able to c themselves exp bullets. Yet th corps, including wounded. See into groups, the by corporals or by privates, an carried on. The act of mapping yet all through and he made r orders were to s

During the at slackened. The

regiments his force, to move. Sari Bair val of the mns for a dded the the 18th the 89th h the 6th

15 a.m.,
n of the aced each Vellington Auckland and the el W. G. could stop l. From n through aking day

Infantry up at the t the col. e enemy's

also met e to reach s northern rks at this il supplied es of Sari f the mass f hemmed stern end, ne western On hill and he had a superior strength ready for a counter-attack. In the assault the Australians lost heavily. More than 1,000 of these dauntless warriors were killed and wounded. It was a struggle that appeared to reach the very limits of desperation. Finally, numbers told, and the Brigade had to retire to its former line at the head of the Asma ravine. Encouraged by this success, for though it had been extravagantly bought it was something to force these terrible fellows to retire at all, the enemy launched a succession of massed counter-attacks. He plainly meant to finish with these Australians while the apparent chance offered. But it was now the Australians' turn. Massed column after massed column of Turks was smashed. The men of the Brigade shot until their rifles grew too hot to touch; the bottom and sides of the ravine became choked with Turkish wounded and dead. The defenders of the position could not be shifted one inch.

At the other end of the main ridge in the meantime Johnson's force had been struggling to maintain its footing. Chanuk Bair was subjected to a deadly hostile concentrated fire. The surface was covered with but the thinnest sprinkling of soil, and to dig trenches affording any real cover was difficult. The Gloucesters, who were supporting the Wellington Battalion, were never able to dig deeper than six inches. They found themselves exposed to a gruelling hail of shells and bullets. Yet they held on, though every officer of the corps, including the sergeants, had been either killed or wounded. Seemingly without leadership and broken into groups, the command was spontaneously taken over by corporals or lance-corporals, or, by common consent, by privates, and in face of counter-attacks they still carried on. The gallant Malone had fallen while in the act of mapping out the line to be held. Others had gone, yet all through that afternoon no efforts of the enemy, and he made many, could drive the line back. The orders were to stop there, and stop there the line did.

During the afternoon and towards sunset the battle slackened. The enemy, heavily trounced, was showing

signs of wear. Hence the decision again to renew the British assault at midnight. For this assault the ground gained on Chanuk Bair was to be used as a pivot, for swinging the rest of the line forward on to the ridge. And to assist that operation the forces already so far engaged were to be further supported by a third column consisting of five battalions—two from the 38th Brigade; two from the 29th Brigade; and one from the 40th Brigade. The command of this column was given to Brigadier-General A. H. Baldwin, of the 38th Brigade.

Baldwin's column had been assembled in the Chailak ravine, and was to move up that defile and deliver the main attack in the form of an assault on Hill Q. The forces of Johnson and Cox were to co-operate on its

right and left respectively.

It was a good scheme, but unhappily, through accident, it went wrong. The same difficulties which had beset Johnson's column beset Baldwin's—the rugged character of the Chailak valley, and finding the way over such country in the dark. It was not until 5.15 a.m. (August 9) that Baldwin's force reached the head of the ravine and the farm below the last slope towards Chanuk Bair. This was hours behind time, and the men were parched and tired.

The hitch was fatal. In the interim, relying upon the arrival of Baldwin's force, the 29th Indian Infantry Brigade had been thrown forward. Their immediate objective was the col between Hill Q and Hill 305. Part of the 6th Gurkhas gained the crest, and some of the 6th South Lancashires. The enemy broke, and the attacking troops pressed him down the reverse slope. In front of the attacking troops appeared a bird's-eye view of the waters of the Dardanelles, the Narrows, and the Asiatic shore. This dashing onset was led by Major C. G. L. Allanson of the Gurkhas. But the triumph was short-lived. The appearance of these British troops on the southern slope was the signal for an opening by batteries of heavy guns ready trained on this spot. The enemy saw, too, that the attacking force was not numerous. It was just daybreak, and Baldwin's men were still toi Recovering for rallied. They back in a cou and Lancashir down the rev back upon the

But though battalions had Baldwin the Rhododendror 10th Hampshi 6th East Lanc up the slope This was the n northern slope advantage. East Lancashi but there it end to counter-atta were swept do the farm. Be Lancashires th

Baldwin's a attention once kept its footin Effort after effect effort failed.

Save for the of the main ri August 9 was to say exactly The subsequen worsted in deta total casualties 8,500 men. T Lone Pine, who with sustained in the attacks searly hours of

GALLIPOLI: THE CHANGE OF PLANS

were still toiling up the head on the Chailak ravine. Recovering from their momentary panic the Turks rallied. They were in far greater strength, and they came back in a counter-attack. The thin line of Gurkhas and Lancashires was pressed up to the col, over it, and down the reverse (northern) side. They were forced

back upon their original positions.

But though outnumbered this small force of two weak battalions had fought well, and their resistance had given Baldwin the opportunity of deploying his column on Rhododendron Spur. He at once threw forward the 10th Hampshires together with two companies of the 6th East Lancashire Regiment. Those troops advanced up the slope towards Chanuk Bair with the bayonet. This was the moment when the enemy, coming down the northern slope of the adjacent col, was pressing his The assault of the Hampshires and the East Lancashires reached the top of the main ridge, but there it encountered a powerful Turkish force moving to counter-attack. It could not hold. Baldwin's men were swept down the declivity and obliged to dig in on the farm. Between them and the Gurkhas and South Lancashires there was driven in a hostile wedge.

Baldwin's attack checked, the enemy turned his attention once more to Johnson's force, which still kept its footing at the western end of the main rise. Effort after effort was made to shift it, and effort after

effort failed.

Save for the limited footing at the western extremity of the main ridge the British line on the morning of August 9 was at the foot of the northern slope, that is to say exactly where it was at daybreak on August 7. The subsequent attacks had been made and had been worsted in detail. And they had been very costly. The total casualties up to and including August 9 had reached 8,500 men. These of course included the fighting at Lone Pine, where all the while the struggle had gone on with sustained fury. Most, however, had been incurred in the attacks since August 6 on the main ridge. In the early hours of August 10 Johnson's men had to be

R EAST

enew the e ground pivot, for he ridge. ly so far d column Brigade: the 40th given to Brigade. e Chailak eliver the Q. The

accident, had beset character over such i. (August he ravine nuk Bair. e parched

te on its

upon the Infantry mmediate Hill 305. d some of e, and the erse slope. bird's-eye crows, and l by Major e triumph tish troops pening by this spot. e was not win's men

followed him ba

plunged once m

a roaring mêlée

throat and clos

was given. Th

though they we

mercy by John

men maddened

sweep of machi

by hundreds a

frenzied by the

half dead wit

slaughtered in scene of unrest

became soaked

and dying, fr

perished in th

the memories

it, the episode

explosions wer

Baldwin and

Cooper fell, an

officers. Balc

enemy's attacl

so utterly brol

all haste to be

by flying lead.

not the crisis

against the 4t as others had

was an attacl

holding the D

fortune. Its

trepidity of L

corps he comn

life. In this

added to the I

heavier, as inc

operations, bu

Coincidenta

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

relieved. They had been fighting straight ahead for three days and three nights—seventy-two hours—with hardly a pause, and that on the top of a long march and a long climb. Such stamina borders on the phenomenal. They were replaced by the 6th Loyal North Lancashires and the 5th Wiltshires.

In the interval the enemy had been massing for a supreme effort to clear the British off this foothold on the summit. At daybreak on August 10, accordingly, he attacked with the infantry of an entire division, stiffened by three extra battalions. The North Lancashires, with nothing save shallow trenches for protection—if they could be called trenches—were overwhelmed; the Wiltshires, who were behind time on coming up, were caught exposed, and swept away by the avalanche.

The right of Baldwin's position on the farm, held by the Hampshires, had now been exposed. It was driven in and with heavy losses. The situation of Baldwin's force had in fact become precarious. Disaster was averted for the time being by the naval guns and the field artillery. Both the ships and the land batteries focussed on Battleship Hill and this western end of the crest, for a strong force of the enemy was moving up that way. As the Turks topped the higher ground they were met by this blast of fire. And its effect was the more deadly owing to the machine-guns of the New Zealanders of Johnson's column now in reserve. They got in at close range upon men advancing in close order. The carnage was appalling, and the attack smashed.

But while Baldwin was occupied with this struggle on his right, the enemy, topping the crest to the northeast, descended in mass on his left. His line there was broken and some of his troops driven down the ravine. Baldwin himself with his staff and the centre of his line on the farm held their ground. It was a fight to the death. Repulsed, the Turks came on again and again, "Allah" their battle-cry. The troops on the left, rallied at the foot of the hill by Staff-Captain Street, who was supervising the transport of food and water,

198

R EAST

head for rs—with arch and nomenal. ncashires

ng for a thold on ordingly, division, rth Lanfor proere over-time on ay by the

, held by as driven Baldwin's ster was and the batteries n end of s moving er ground effect was the New ve. They ose order. ashed. truggle on he norththere was he ravine. of his line th to the nd again,

the left,

in Street,

nd water,

followed him back to the farm, and under his leadership plunged once more into the conflict. It had now become a roaring mêlée in which men gripped each other by the throat and closed with butt and bayonet. No quarter was given. Though their ranks were ripped by shell; though they were fired into without cessation and without mercy by Johnson's Force from the British right, its men maddened by the spectacle; though under the sweep of machine-guns and the hail of rifle shot they fell by hundreds and in heaps, the Turks fought like men frenzied by the lust of blood. English lads, tired, and half dead with thirst but fighting to the last, were slaughtered in whole companies like cattle. It was a scene of unrestrained devilry. The ground of the farm became soaked in human blood, amid which lay the dead and dying, frequently locked together as they had perished in the last grip; mixed up inextricably. In the memories of the men who witnessed and survived it, the episode and its roar of agony and tornado of explosions were branded for ever as with a stamp of fire. Baldwin and his staff fell where they stood. General Cooper fell, and General Cayley, and other commanding Baldwin's column was shattered, but the enemy's attack had in the effort been at the same time so utterly broken that the ragged remnant of it had in all haste to be withdrawn across the summit, still chased by flying lead.

Coincidentally with this conflict, the climax, though not the crisis of the battle, there was another onset against the 4th Australian Brigade, an onset beaten off, as others had been, with heavy enemy losses, and there was an attack against the 4th South Wales Borderers holding the Damajelik Bair. This last had equally bad fortune. Its defeat was due to the unshakable intrepidity of Lieut.-Colonel Gillespie, worthy of the fine corps he commanded. He paid for the victory with his life. In this fighting of August 10 another 3,500 were added to the British casualties. Those of the enemy were heavier, as indeed they had been at every stage of these operations, but he had frustrated the British plan.

CHAPTER XI

THE TRAGEDY OF SUVLA

Causes of the delay in the advance at Suvla—A question of guns—The water muddle—Sufferings of the troops—and inaction—Incomplete co-operation—General Hamilton intervenes—Opportunities lost—British attack of August 9 on Tekke Tepe forestalled and repulsed—Suvla enterprise already a failure—British attack on Anafarta ridge defeated (August 10)—Rapid increase of enemy's strength—Attack of August 12 on Keretch Tepe Sirt—General Stopford retires—Heavy British losses—General Hamilton asks for 50,000 further reinforcements—They are refused—Transfer of the 2nd Mounted Division from Egypt—Battle for Ismail Oglu Hill, August 21—A British reverse—Reasons for the failure—Cox's flanking operations north of the Anzac front—The last fight of the campaign.

While it is true that on August 10 not a Turk had been left on the British side of Sari Bair who was not, to quote the words of General Hamilton, either dead, wounded or a prisoner, it was none the less true that in its main purpose, the seizure of the summit, the action had failed. It had been a costly battle. Some 12,000 British and, including the losses in the Lone Pine fighting, more than 20,000 of the enemy had fallen. But for the time, at all events, the enemy could afford his loss, severe as it had been. He had defeated the British design, and he felt himself to be secure.

In these circumstances the landing at Suvla had missed its real objective. The aim of that operation had been to prevent the enemy from swinging his weight against the British centre, but to prevent that it was imperative at once to bring the strength of the Suvla corps to bear as an integral part of the battle; its left wing, in fact. At the moment of their landing the 9th Army Corps were, as compared with the Turks

confronting the landing had under the same ti would almost correcur. It may New Army who Stopford judge good his footing when time, already to the land to the lan

One cause, at of General Stop the main battle unless his infield guns. By ashore two Hig of the R.F.A. ment in the tin Naval men who disbarkation of appears to have considered it a

Those positi To stiffen the at north of Suvla battalions of th the command A Beach. To t ties were oppos The six battalic But from C B and then acros Salt Lake from C Beach to H spit, they cam Chocolate Hill. records, that th And there can battle was con more battalion on August 7 fr

THE TRAGEDY OF SUVLA

confronting them, in overwhelming force; and the landing had undoubtedly taken the enemy by surprise. At the same time, it was evident that this opportunity would almost certainly be brief, and if missed, would not recur. It may be that since his troops were men of the New Army who had never been in action before, General Stopford judged it best in the first instance to make good his footing. Whatever the causes time was lost when time, already too short, was priceless.

One cause, at any rate, is not in doubt. In the opinion of General Stopford operations by his troops as part of the main battle could not effectively be embarked upon unless his infantry were sufficiently supported by field guns. By daybreak on August 7 there had been got ashore two Highland mountain batteries, and one battery of the R.F.A. This of itself was a remarkable achievement in the time, and every credit for it is due to the Naval men who carried it out. While waiting for the disbarkation of his artillery, General Stopford's concern appears to have been to make sure of the positions he considered it advisable to seize and hold.

of guns-

inaction es—Oppor-

e forestalled

itish attack

of enemy's

milton asks

d—Transfer for Ismail

the failure

t-The last

Furk had

was not,

ner dead, ie that in

he action

ne 12,000

ine fight-

his loss,

e British

uvla had

operation

nging his

vent that

e battle;

r landing

he Turks

But for

Those positions included the Keretch Tepe Sirt. To stiffen the attack of the 34th Brigade in that direction, north of Suvla Bay, General Stopford wished the six battalions of the 10th Division who had arrived under the command of Brigadier-General Hill to land at To that proposal, however, the Naval authorities were opposed, probably because of the shoal water. The six battalions were therefore put ashore at C Beach. But from C Beach they were marched to Lala Baba, and then across the narrow spit of land dividing the Salt Lake from the sea to Hill 10. The distance from C Beach to Hill 10 is about six miles. Crossing the spit, they came under the fire of the enemy's guns on Chocolate Hill. There is no doubt, as General Hamilton records, that this move caused "loss, delay, and fatigue." And there can be no doubt that as far as the main battle was concerned it was a mistaken move. Three more battalions of the 10th Division, arriving early on August 7 from Mudros, were put ashore at A Beach,

201

and there was landed there another battalion of the 31st Brigade which it had been intended to put shore at C Beach.

There were now to the north of the Salt Lake the 31st Brigade (of the 10th Division) and the 32nd and 34th Brigades (of the 11th Division). These three brigades comprised the chief strength of the Army

SUVLA

BABA

Landing Place B

Landina

Place C

BAYLonding

Place 7

Corps under General Stopford's command.

It has already been mentioned that inland from the Salt Lake there runs a line of low hills, the axis or chine of this rise being east and west, parallel that is to say with the main axis of Sari Bair. And between these low hills on the one side and the much loftier mass of Sari Bair on the other is a valley along which runs, from the Salt Lake, a road leading to the village of Biyuk (Great) Anafarta, and then on to Boghali and Maidos. On the other (northern) side of the low hills lies a second valley, the Topalin Mazar Dere, along which is also a road leading to Anafarta Sagir (or Little Anafarta) and from that village strikes along the peninsula towards Bulair. The two villages of Great and Little Anafarta are connected by a cross road over the ridge. To the north of this second valley rises Tekke Tepe, a mass similar to Sari Bair, and of nearly the same elevation. Hence the aspect of the country, looking at it from the west, is that of the two higher masses, one to the north and one to the south, with the lower (Anafarta) ridge between them, and in the foregound the Salt Lake, to the north-east of it a patch of flat land about a mile square.

General Stopford had thrown the larger part of his force towards the entrance of the second valley. It was essential, of course, to secure the intervening ridge, and that operation had been entrusted to General Hammersley with the 11th Division. The Anafarta ridge as it runs inland rises, and its culminating point is at the eastern end—the hill named by the Turks the Ismail Oglu. This was the important position on the rise, for it commanded both Great and Little Anafarta, the cross road and the roads in the valleys.

EAST

of the

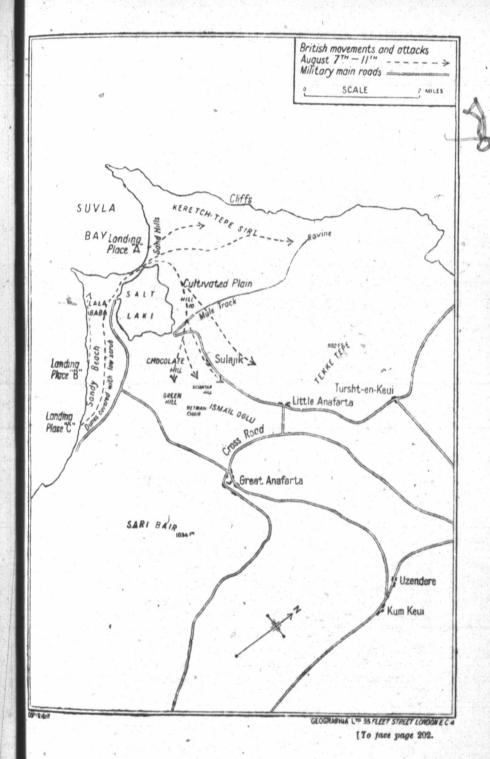
ake the 2nd and se three e Army

rom the axis or hat is to en these mass of ch runs, illage of hali and ow hills ng which r Little e penineat and over the s Tekke arly the country,

o higher th, with

d in the

rt of his lley. It ng ridge, General Anafarta ng point e Turks sition on d Little valleys.



troops had not

water had been

plainly would

making use of

does not appea

it should have

The troops rem

the landing pla

tributed by ho

cans and other

to be carried or

tion of the wa

Some of the lig

water to be ser

Water was the

in certain insta

wait. If so d

injuries of that

or to dragging

much of the r

was the situat

fighting line—

support being

especially anxio

of the disbarka

the pack mule

Rightly the pa

after the infant

object of landir

doubly acute.

of delay. Unt

relieved the tro

knowing the in

continuance o

Commanders se

in which their i

to get his gun

General Stopfo

as sufficient.

And in part c

Hammersley gained a footing on the ridge at its western end (Chocolate Hill), but found the enemy already strongly posted and could make no further headway. Chocolate Hill had been carried in a rush by the 6th Lincolns and the 6th Border Regiment, who alike, though "raw" troops, displayed great steadiness and gallantry.

In the meantime the 10th Division, under the command of General Sir B. Mahon, had been pushing the attack upon Keretch Tepe Sirt. The weight of the fighting here fell upon the 31st Brigade, formed of the 6th Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers, the 6th Royal Irish (Munster) Fusiliers, and the 6th Royal Dublin Fusiliers. But here too, the enemy, in part a force of gendarmes, put up a stiff opposition. The ground over which an . advance had to be made was rugged and difficult, but the Irishmen, though this was their first experience of battle, fought like veterans. A footing on the ridge was secured.

Concerning these operations of August 7 it has to be observed, to begin with, that the two attacks were in opposite directions, one to the south and one to the north of Hill 10, a procedure on the face of it somewhat singular. Next they had no direct or immediate relationship with the attack then going on against Sari Bair. They appear to have been conceived, for the time being at any rate, on a semi-independent footing.

The great difficulty that arose was that of water. These troops, now campaigning for the first time, had come from Mitylene and Mudros; they had been landed either the night before or at dawn on that day; they had most of them faced a longish march; finally, they had been through hours of fighting. It was hard work, and it was all the harder because of the August heats.

On the night of August 7 the sun sank, as it does in the Levant in the height of summer, in a riot of gorgeous colour, and the hills faded from a fiery red to a glorious blue, contrasting with the rainbow hues of the firmament. But to men at once jaded and tortured by thirst this grandiose spectacle made no appeal.

Arrangements for the distribution of water to the

204

R EAST

s western already headway. the 6th e, though gallantry. command he attack e fighting the 6th val Irish Fusiliers. endarmes. which an icult, but erience of ridge was

has to be s were in ne to the somewhat ediate reainst Sari , for the it footing. of water. time, had en landed ay; they ally, they ard work, ust heats. s it does iot of gorred to a v hues of d tortured opeal. er to the troops had not worked well. As a stand-by a supply of water had been brought on the ships in tanks, but that plainly would not go far, and reliance was placed on making use of the wells in the Suvla Bay area. does not appear to have been done, though of course it should have been among the first measures taken. The troops remained dependent upon water brought to the landing places in the lighters, and from them distributed by hose pipes into petrol tins, pakhals, milk cans and other vessels. North of Suvla Bay this had to be carried out under the enemy's fire. The distribution of the water was both hazardous and irregular. Some of the lighters grounded too far off shore for the water to be served, and men had to swim out to them. Water was the common craving. It has been said that in certain instances the hose was cut by men unable to wait. If so demoralisation had already set in, but injuries of that kind may also have been due to shot, or to dragging the pipes over stones. In any event much of the precious fluid ran to waste. So urgent was the situation that, to supply the troops in the fighting line—though, his opinion regarding artillery support being what it was, General Stopford was especially anxious to land the artillery horses—this part of the disbarkation was put off in order to send ashore the pack mules to carry water up from the beach. Rightly the pack mules should have gone immediately after the infantry in any case. Their detention with the object of landing artillery had made the water difficulty doubly acute.

And in part certainly this water difficulty was the cause of delay. Until their sufferings from thirst had been relieved the troops could not go on. General Stopford, knowing the importance of time, issued orders for a continuance of the advance. Both the Divisional Commanders sent back word to say that, in the condition in which their men were, they could not move. Unable to get his guns ashore, as he believed was necessary, General Stopford apparently accepted these objections

as sufficient.

"It was," General Hamilton has stated, "lack of artillery support which finally decided him (General Stopford) to acquiesce in a policy of going slow, which, by the time it reached the troops, became translated into a period of inaction. The Divisional Generals were in fact informed that 'in view of the inadequate artillery support,' General Stopford did not wish them to make frontal attacks on entrenched positions, but desired them, as far as possible, to try to turn any trenches that were met with. Within the terms of this instruction lies the root of our failure to make use of the precious daylight hours of the 8th of August."

"Normally," General Hamilton goes on to observe, "it may be correct to say that in modern warfare infantry cannot be expected to advance without artillery preparation. But in a landing on a hostile shore the order has to be inverted. The infantry must advance and seize a suitable position to cover the landing, and provide the artillery positions for the main thrust. The very existence of the force; its facilities for munitions and supplies; its power to reinforce, must absolutely depend on the infantry being able instantly to make good sufficient ground without the aid of artillery other than can be supplied for the purpose by floating batteries."

"This is not a condition which should take the commander of a covering force by surprise. It is one already foreseen. Driving power was required, and even a certain ruthlessness to brush aside pleas for a respite for tired troops. The one fatal error was inertia.

And inertia prevailed."

Undoubtedly General Stopford's judgment regarding artillery support was in the circumstances inapplicable, and it illustrates one of the weaknesses which all along had marked the Gallipoli operations—the tendency to overlook their amphibious character. Interdependence of the land forces and the fleet was the secret of whatever effectiveness the Expedition might have. But interdependence means departure from recognised rules of both naval and military procedure, and there was

reluctance to cought to have bilities. There land defences, it. That increforces and agluctance on the rely upon the upon.

Having, par artillery and p naval guns as a backbone of his or none-got t become, Gener the moment sa Divisional Com Commanders of a very open ruthlessness to tired troops " To have force said half-madd while in that rapidly have exhaustion, m any strong er helplessly.

This going s
of the failure
The cause was
military co-ope
cruisers and n
those against
this instance
enemy the full
or no underwat
sound militar
assured succes
General Birdwe

ER EAST

"lack of (General ow, which, translated Generals nadequate wish them tions, but

tions, but turn any ms of this ake use of gust."

o observe, n warfare without a hostile ntry must the landthe main s facilities reinforce, being able out the aid ourpose by

take the It is one aired, and cleas for a vas inertia.

regarding applicable, all along indency to dependence if whatever But interd rules of there was

reluctance to enter upon such departures where there ought to have been keenness in studying all the possibilities. There was reluctance to pit ships against land defences, because the theory in favour was against it. That increased the weight thrown upon the land forces and aggravated their losses. There was reluctance on the part of the military commanders to rely upon the Fleet as it ought to have been relied

Having, partly owing to his views concerning field artillery and partly to his reluctance to rely upon the naval guns as a substitute—they ought to have been the backbone of his activities from first to last, field artillery or none-got the water problem into the tangle it had become, General Stopford had in truth no choice for the moment save to go slow. It is easy to blame his Divisional Commanders, but the protests of the Divisional Commanders on this point were justified. And it is a very open question indeed whether "a certain ruthlessness to brush away the pleas for a respite for tired troops" would not have made matters worse. To have forced men parched with thirst—it may be said half-maddened by thirst—to yet further exertions while in that state, and reduce them, as they would rapidly have been reduced, to the very extreme of exhaustion, must have exposed them in the event of any strong enemy counter-attack to be slaughtered helplessly.

This going slow was not, however, the cause or root of the failure; it was no more than a consequence. The cause was the incompleteness of the naval and military co-operation. It was trifling to assign only cruisers and monitors to support such operations as those against Sari Bair and the Suvla landing. In this instance against the numerical strength of the enemy the full support of the Fleet, underwater attack or no underwater attack, was the course that, joined to sound military dispositions, might reasonably have assured success. In the absence of that full support General Birdwood, hero as he was, had imposed upon him

a task humanly impossible, and 12,000 brave men fell in trying to do the impossible. In the absence of that full support many more brave men fell at Suvla. Some ships were saved but the Expedition to Gallipoli was wrecked, and the whole trend of events in Western

Asia and Eastern Europe changed.

Not receiving from the Suvla force the aid he had reckoned upon, and knowing that the struggle for Sari Bair had reached its decisive hour, General Hamilton in the early morning of August 8 sent an officer of his Staff to Suvla to report on the situation. Arriving from the Commandant's post at Anzac this officer informed the General by telegraph that the Turks were withdrawing their guns. There was no hostile gunfire, and but little hostile rifle fire. To all appearances the enemy was weak, and there was good ground for accepting the appearances as reflecting the reality. The water tangle had by this time been taken in hand and was being straightened out. But General Stopford's opinion concerning the need for landing his guns before venturing upon further operations of importance seems to have remained unmodified.

In the circumstances, leaving General W. P. Braithwaite, the Chief of his Staff, to carry on at Headquarters in the interim, General Hamilton went himself to Suvla. He had begun to feel, as he afterwards declared, that all was not well. He reached General Stopford's headquarters on board the British warship, Jonquil, lying off the bay, at five in the afternoon of August 8.

What there took place may be related in General Hamilton's own words. "General Stopford," he wrote, "informed me that the General Officer commanding 11th Division was confident of success in an attack he was to make at dawn next morning (the 9th). I felt no such confidence. Beyond a small advance by a part of the 11th Division between the Chocolate Hills and Ismail Oglu Tepe, and some further progress along the Keretch Tepe Sirt ridge by the 10th Division, the day of the 8th had been lost. The commander of the 11th Division had, it seems, ordered strong patrols to be

pushed forward in advance whi fighting; but, done in this respalready gone to forcements whi aerial sources, when I urged the little Division of hills, I was met the morning wer rested, watered manders disliked General Stopfor hands.

"So it came
I could not, m
purpose into the
ashore. The C
He declared hir
advance. The r
Commanders ha
could see my w
more pleased th

"Accompanie Lieut.-Colonel A Staff, I landed and peaceful, a Division, Majorthe sands were the high ground t in force by the en that it was a pi (6 p.m.), to get of being very much now, but this wa orders or get the brigade, the 32nd more or less co General Staff (

THE TRAGEDY OF SUVLA

pushed forward so as to make good all the strong positions in advance which could be occupied without serious fighting; but, as he afterwards reported, 'little was done in this respect.' Thus a priceless twelve hours had already gone to help the chances of the Turkish reinforcements which were, I knew, both from naval and aerial sources, actually on the march for Suvla. But when I urged that even now, at the eleventh hour, the 11th Division should make a concerted attack upon the hills, I was met by a non possumus. The objections of the morning were no longer valid; the men were now well rested, watered, and fed. But the divisional commanders disliked the idea of an advance by night, and General Stopford did not care, it seemed, to force their hands.

"So it came about that I was driven to see whether I could not, myself, put concentration of effort and purpose into the direction of the large number of men ashore. The Corps Commander made no objection. He declared himself to be as eager as I could be to advance. The representations made by the Divisional Commanders had seemed to him insuperable. If I could see my way to get over them no one would be

more pleased than himself.

"Accompanied by Commodore Roger Keyes and Lieut.-Colonel Aspinall, of the Headquarters General Staff, I landed on the beach, where all seemed quiet and peaceful, and saw the Commander of the 11th Division, Major-General Hammersley. I warned him the sands were running out fast, and that by dawn the high ground to his front might very likely be occupied in force by the enemy. He saw the danger, but declared that it was a physical impossibility, at so late an hour (6 p.m.), to get out orders for a night attack, the troops being very much scattered. There was no other difficulty now, but this was insuperable; he could not recast his orders or get them round to his troops in time. But one brigade, the 32nd, was, so General Hammersley admitted, more or less concentrated and ready to move. The General Staff Officer of the Division, Colonel Neil

209

men fell ce of that

R EAST

la. Some lipoli was Western

d he had uggle for Hamilton cer of his Arriving nis officer

urks were e gunfire. ances the or accept-

ity. The hand and Stopford's ins before nportance

P. Braithdquarters to Suvla. ared, that Stopford's Jonquil,

ugust 8. n General he wrote, nmanding attack he n). I felt nce by a plate Hills ress along on, the day

the 11th

ols to be

Malcolm, a soldier of experience on whose opinion I set much value, was consulted. He agreed that the 32nd Brigade was now in a position to act. I therefore issued a direct order that, even if it were only the 32nd Brigade, the advance should begin at the earliest possible moment, so that a portion at least of the 11th Division should anticipate the Turkish reinforcements on the height and dig themselves in there on some good tactical

point.

"In taking upon myself the serious responsibility of thus dealing with a detail of divisional tactics, I was careful to limit the scope of the interference. Beyond directing that the one brigade which was ready to move at once should try and make good the heights before the enemy got on to them, I did nothing and said nothing calculated to modify or in any way to affect the attack already planned for the morning. Out of the thirteen battalions which were to have advanced against the heights at dawn, four were now to anticipate that movement by trying to make good the key of the enemy's position at once and under cover of darkness.

"I have not been able to get a clear and coherent account of the doings of the 32nd Brigade; but I have established the fact that it did not actually commence its advance until 4 a.m. on the 9th of August. The reason given is that the units of the Brigade were scattered. In General Stopford's despatch he says that 'One company of the East Yorks Pioneer Battalion succeeded in getting to the top of the hill north of Anafarta, but the rest of the battalion and of the Brigade were attacked from both flanks during their advance and fell back on a line north and south of Sulajik. Very few of the leading company or of the Royal Engineers who accompanied it got back, and that evening the strength of the battalion was nine officers and 380 men."

The hill Tekke Tepe, north of Little Anafarta, is 700 feet high, and from this position, could it have been taken and held, the whole of the lower intervening ridge, including Ismail Oglu and the cross road, and

the road from have been comm that field artille than naval gunn would have bee had been able to inflicted on the hour and a half and with a large however, had als in the meantime success. "It s has stated, "to started at 4 a.m on the 8th, they heights in front

Watching the General Hamilt Turkish gun and forestalled.

"This," he rec failed; our los enfilading shrapi tive and demora along our line. attack just as it The 33rd Brigac in its attempt to leading troops look over on to t here. Then the this was the res some say, an or the result was e fell back the ste talion Border Re Regiment, on ei Scrub fires on H our troops. Wh attacks from the

THE TRAGEDY OF SUVLA

pinion I set at the 32nd efore issued and Brigade, ble moment, sion should the height

ER EAST

onsibility of ctics, I was e. Beyond s ready to the heights ing and said to affect the Out of the nced against icipate that key of the of darkness. nd coherent but I have 7 commence ugust. The rigade were ch he says ioneer Bathill north of and of the luring their d south of

farta, is 700; have been intervening s road, and

or of the

n was nine

back, and

the road from Little Anafarta towards Bulair would have been commanded by the British batteries, assuming that field artillery was more effective for that purpose than naval gunnery, though of course the two combined would have been the most effective. But the enemy had been able to move up his reinforcements. He had inflicted on the 32nd Brigade a costly reverse. An hour and a half later the British assault was renewed. and with a larger body of troops. The Turkish forces, however, had also and to a greater extent been stiffened in the meantime and the renewed attack had no better success. "It seems reasonable," General Hamilton has stated, "to suppose that had the complete Division started at 4 a.m. on the 9th, or better still at 10 p.m. on the 8th, they would have made good the whole of the heights in front of them." Most probably they would.

Watching the renewed attack at dawn on the 9th General Hamilton realised from the volume of the Turkish gun and rifle fire that the movement had been

forestalled.

"This," he recorded, "was a bad moment. Our attack failed; our losses were very serious. The enemy's enfilading shrapnel fire seemed to be especially destructive and demoralising, the shell bursting low and all along our line. Time after time it threw back our attack just as it seemed upon the point of making good. The 33rd Brigade at first made most hopeful progress in its attempt to seize Ismail Oglu Tepe. Some of the leading troops gained the summit, and were able to look over on to the other side. Many Turks were killed here. Then the centre seemed to give way. Whether this was the result of the shrapnel fire or whether, as some say, an order to retire came up from the rear, the result was equally fatal to success. As the centre fell back the steady, gallant behaviour of the 6th Battalion Border Regiment, and the 6th Battalion Lincoln Regiment, on either flank was especially noteworthy. Scrub fires on Hill 70 did much to harass and hamper our troops. When the 32nd Brigade fell back before attacks from the slopes of the hill north of Anafarta

Sagir and from the direction of Abrijka they took up the line north and south through Sulajik. Here their left was protected by two battalions of the 34th Brigade, which came up to their support. The line was later on prolonged by the remainder of the 34th Brigade and two battalions of the 159th Brigade of the 53rd Division. Their right was connected with the Chocolate Hills by the 33rd Brigade on the position to which they had returned after their repulse from the upper slopes of Ismail Oglu Tepe.

"Some of the units which took part in this engagement acquitted themselves very bravely. I regret I have not had sufficient detail given me to enable me to mention them by name. The Divisional Commander speaks with appreciation of one freshly-landed battalion of the 53rd Division, a Hereford battalion, presumably the 1/1st Herefordshire, which attacked with impetuosity and courage between Hetman Chair and Kaslar Chair, about Azmak Dere, on the extreme right of his line."

A tragic story, for in fact it marked the failure of the Suvla enterprise. But General Hamilton determined to make another effort. During the night of August 8 the 53rd (Territorial) Division had arrived and disbarked. He ordered it up to Suvla. The Division was without artillery.

Accordingly, on August 10 a third attack was delivered on the Anafarta ridge. It was to be made by the 58rd Division, General Lindley in command, with the 11th Division in support. Notable as was alike the gallantry of the men and the devotion of their officers, the attack failed. It meant hard climbing as well as hard fighting, and the enemy had yet further strengthened himself. In the interval since August 7 he had trebled his numbers.

The whole British force at Suvla, from near the Asmak Dere to the Keretch Tepe Sirt, now found itself obliged to entrench. Here, too, the campaign looked like degenerating into immobility.

The succeeding operations may be briefly told. On August 11 the 54th (Territorial) Division landed. On August 12 Sir Ian Hamilton proposed to General Stopford that th out a night man attack the ma Tepe, and Tekke Salt Lake, know and cultivated. enemy held this for the 54th Div The 163rd Brig effected the cle fighting that Co of the 1/5 Norfe falling back, fo the pursuit reac the lower slopes who were wound back during th Colonel and the News of this littl and some 250 m They had entere of the hills and

THE

The projected was given up. on the enemy's Tepe Sirt.

The plan of the bythe warships by three batterians a battery of heat along the ridge. Brigade) supposed with great gallathe entire heigh and divided from the coast. The enemy swept the sirt with his fir Inniskillings holds.

ER EAST

y took up Here their h Brigade, as later on igade and I Division. olate Hills in they had slopes of

ngagement
I have not
to mention
der speaks
attalion of
mably the
mpetuosity
slar Chair,
his line."
ilure of the
determined
f August 8
I and disivision was

as delivered by the 53rd h the 11th he gallantry the attack and fighting, hed himself. his numbers. In near the found itself he looked like

riefly told. anded. On to General Stopford that the newly arrived Division should carry out a night march in order at dawn on August 13 to attack the massif north of Little Anafarta-Kavak Tepe, and Tekke Tepe. The flat tract north-east of the Salt Lake, known as Kuchuk Anafarta Ova, is enclosed and cultivated. There was reason to believe that the enemy held this bit of country, and to open the way for the 54th Division it was necessary to clear him out. The 163rd Brigade, sent forward for that purpose, effected the clearance. It was in the course of this fighting that Colonel Sir H. Beauchamp, in command of the 1/5 Norfolks, finding the Turks in front of him falling back, followed them up. From the flat fields the pursuit reached the broken and wooded ground on the lower slopes of the massif. Men of the battalion who were wounded or fell out owing to thirst straggled back during the night to camp. They had left the Colonel and the rest of the battalion still pushing on. News of this little force, 17 officers, including the Colonel, and some 250 men, was awaited, but none was received. They had entered the forest of scrub covering the slopes of the hills and had totally disappeared.

The projected night march by the 54th Division was given up. In place of it an attack was made on the enemy's position on the summit of Keretch

Tepe Sirt.

The plan of this assault provided for a bombardment by the warships Grampus and Foxhound from the sea, and by three batteries of guns from the land side, one of them a battery of heavies. The 10th Division were to attack along the ridge, part of the 54th Division (the 162nd Brigade) supporting on their right. The charge, led with great gallantry by the 6th Royal Dublins, cleared the entire height. But at the farther end of this ridge, and divided from it only by a small and not very deep ravine, is another and yet higher ridge also in line with the coast. On and from this higher ground the enemy swept the forward point of the Keretch Tepe Sirt with his fire. The 5th Irish Fusiliers, and the 5th Inniskillings holding the trenches, here met with heavy

losses. Reinforcements were sent forward. Before they could arrive the forward trenches had had to be evacuated.

On August 15 General Stopford gave up the command of the 9th Army Corps. The infantry strength of the four divisions composing it had been reduced by losses and hardship to less than 30,000 rifles. Losses in battle and through wastage totalled over 18,000 men. Major-General H. B. de Lisle, appointed to the temporary command, received orders as soon as possible to get the Corps once more into fighting trim with a view to a renewed attack upon Ismail Oglu Tepe and the Anafarta Spur.

General Hamilton estimated that he needed a further 50,000 men as reinforcements with munitions to correspond. He was told that he could have neither. With these additional forces his judgment was that "it seemed, humanly speaking, a certainty that if this help could be sent at once we could still clear a passage for our Fleet to Constantinople." The opinion implies that the military operations were the primary feature. It was the other way about.

The reason given for the refusal, he states, "was one which prevented further insistence." There was nothing for it, therefore, save to go on with the means he had at hand. The reinforcements received were the 2nd Mounted Division from Egypt, for this service in Gallipoli organised as dismounted troops. They were landed in the Suvla area, and there too was transferred the 29th Division from the lines before Achi Baba. These various preparations occupied the interval until August 21. The plan was an attack upon Ismail Oglu

Tepe.
This was the last of the greater battles fought in the Gallipoli campaign. The scheme of tactics was entrusted to General de Lisle.

The assault upon Ismail Oglu Hill was to be made by the 29th Division and the 11th Division. On the left of the line there was to be a holding attack by the 58rd and 54th Divisions extending from Sulajik to the Keretch Tepe S sound one. Bet had there also k British right, b many of the bat highly tried. I upon them for a

In a very rem Hill constitutes level of the mor forms a part is a above the lower 130 feet, the dif broken, like the by steep ravines with thick holl tracks. In ever hardy dwarf tre of the Ismail O To the west, hor called Green Hil attack had to b Hill over this e of Ismail Oglu concealed amor

It will be see opportunity to surprise. Not of force; he had and his defences

open lower leve

Viewed from ridge presented Hetman Chair, the other, Scimi the two lay a towards its her On the higher and round its he in the form re ER EAST

. Before had to be

gth of the d by losses Losses in 3,000 men. of the temas possible im with a Tepe and

d a further to corresher. With it seemed, help could ge for our aplies that eature. It

"was one ras nothing ans he had e the 2nd service in They were transferred achi Baba. erval until smail Oglu

ight in the s entrusted

oe made by On the ack by the ajik to the Keretch Tepe Sirt. It was a simple scheme and a sound one. Better, of course, it would have been had there also been an attack thrown forward on the British right, but General Hamilton considered that many of the battalions of the 9th Corps had been too highly tried. It was too soon, he thought, to call upon them for a fresh effort.

In a very remarkable sense of the term Ismail Oglu Hill constitutes a natural fortress. The rise from the level of the more westerly part of the ridge of which it forms a part is abrupt, and while the difference in level above the lower section of the chine is not more than 130 feet, the difference presents itself as almost a cliff, broken, like the rest of such formations in Gallipoli, by steep ravines. These are choked for the most part with thick hollyoak scrub, leaving only very narrow tracks. In every spot where it could get a hold this hardy dwarf tree had rooted itself, so that the mass of the Ismail Oglu Hill appeared to be covered by it. To the west, however, along the lower part of the chine called Green Hill, the ground is open and bare, and the attack had to be made along the chine from Chocolate Hill over this exposed expanse. On the higher ground of Ismail Oglu which is comparatively flat-topped, and concealed among the scrub, the enemy had over the open lower level an unrivalled field of fire.

It will be seen how unfortunate had been loss of the opportunity to seize such a formidable position by surprise. Not only was the enemy now in much stronger force; he had had time firmly to entrench himself, and his defences were skilful.

Viewed from Chocolate Hill, the higher part of the ridge presented itself as two abrupt spurs, one, the Hetman Chair, extending towards the south-west; the other, Scimitar Hill, projecting westward. Between the two lay a ravine or depression rapidly narrowing towards its head, and shaped therefore like a funnel. On the higher ground along both sides of this ravine and round its head the Turks had laid out entrenchments in the form roughly of a horse-shoe. The ravine, in

short, had been converted as far as that could be done into a trap. In case, however, of these defences being captured the enemy had laid out a second line farther up the ridge and on ground which commanded the access from the head of the ravine. This second line of trenches formed a semi-circle, so that a deadly converging fire could be poured into any troops gaining the plateau by way of the depression.

A frontal assault upon such defences, strongly held and by a confident enemy, was about as impossible an operation as could well be imagined, and one which, while there were a thousand chances to one against its success, must in any event be extravagantly costly. The only feasible proceeding was to turn these dispositions by an attack in flank. How far that was provided for, and its results, will appear from what took place.

The British assault was fixed for the afternoon of August 21, and fixed for the afternoon upon the calculation that the light of the westering sun would dazzle the enemy's observers and marksmen. The sunlight on an August afternoon in Gallipoli is glaring, and here it shot right up the valley. In those conditions towards the end of the day the westward slopes of Ismail Oglu showed up with a glow like dull fire, and the defences were then best revealed.

No doubt the attack had to be regulated upon a cut and dried programme as to date and time on account of the warships which were to take part in it, but there is always a risk in counting upon weather. It happened on this particular afternoon that the landscape was veiled in a luminous heat haze. The mist was dense enough to obscure the view of Ismail Oglu in any detail from the British lines; it was not dense enough to hide objects silhouetted against the western sky. Indeed, by taking the dazzle off the view westward, it vastly improved visibility from the Turkish viewpoint.

The enemy's front stretching across the higher part of the spur, relatively narrow, was to be subjected to begin with to a concentrated and intensive fire. Under ER EAST

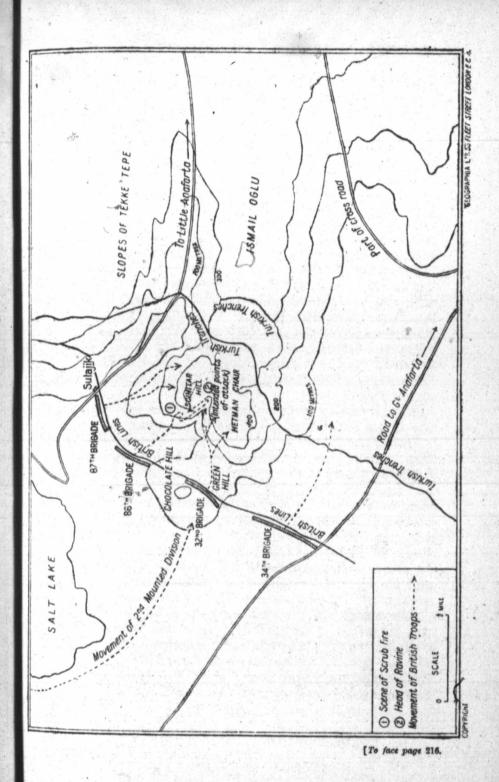
ld be done ences being line farther anded the second line a deadly ops gaining

ongly held impossible one which, against its tly costly. ese disposit was prowhat took

ternoon of he calculauld dazzle e sunlight aring, and conditions s of Ismail , and the

ipon a cut in account but there happened scape was was dense any detail gh to hide Indeed, it vastly

igher part bjected to e. Under



the conditions the fire both of the ships and of the land batteries was somewhat haphazard. General Hamilton had wished to postpone the attack, but "for various reasons this," he relates, "was not possible." What the reasons were he does not say, but manifestly, by parity of reasoning if conditions of light were so important to success, they were, being adverse, just as weighty a factor against success.

At 3 in the afternoon the assault was launched by an

advance of the 11th Division on the right.

It was intended more immediately to gain a footing

both on Hetman Chair and on Scimitar Hill.

From the southern face of the former spur lines of Turkish trenches extended on the lower level across the valley of the Azmak, barring the way towards Great Anafarta. The 34th Brigade of the 11th Division took these trenches in the first rush and with little loss.

On the left the 87th Brigade of the 29th Division swarmed up the northern slopes of Scimitar Hill from the valley leading to Little Anafarta, and won a footing

on the ridge.

At the two extremes, therefore, of the line of attack

the battle had begun well. So far so good.

But in the centre, where the main weight of the assault was thrown, the operations went wrong. Suspecting probably that the ravine was a trap, General de Lisle had intended the assault here to avoid it. The troops were to gain the higher level of the ridge, if possible, by making their way on the left up the westward slopes of Scimitar Hill; on the right, up the north-westward slopes of Hetman Chair. These points of attack were on either side just outside the declivities of the ravine, and to a certain extent were "dead ground," that is, ground not fully exposed to the enemy's fire.

The attack up the westward slopes of Scimitar Hill was entrusted to the 86th Brigade of the 29th Division, co-operating with the 87th. But whether by the accident of shell fire, or by hostile design—and more probably by design—no sooner had the 87th Brigade gained a footing on the plateau than the dwarf oak scrub on all

the upper p blaze. It wa sending up advance of t an impenetra the right, w themselves in shot at from theless, the le Unable, howe poured into t the ravine b were compe that is, the There, finally which afforde Coincidenta

missing direct dash across the left, and of Hetman attempted ad When this n 33rd Brigade, out the original lost direction of the plan b

The result Brigade on to the left led to assault in the had each been

Looking at fact that the it was decide hitherto held advance roun mile and a h manœuvre w magnificent si

THE TRAGEDY OF SUVLA

R EAST

f the land

Hamilton

or various What

festly, by

so impor-

as weighty

hed by an

a footing

ir lines of

across the

erds Great

rision took

n Division

Hill from

e of attack

the assault

Suspecting al de Lisle

The troops

ossible, by

d slopes of

1-westward

ttack were

," that is,

mitar Hill

h Division, he accident

e probably

e gained a

crub on all

loss.

the upper part of the westward slopes burst into a blaze. It was as dry as a bone, and burned furiously. sending up an enormous volume of smoke. To the advance of the 86th Brigade this wall of fire presented an impenetrable bar. In trying to work round it to the right, which was to the windward, they found themselves in the ravine. There, of course, they were shot at from both sides; ambushed, in fact. Nevertheless, the leading troops reached the head of the ravine. Unable, however, to keep their footing in face of the fire poured into them, they had to retire, and retreat down the ravine being even more deadly than the ascent, were compelled to work along the nearer slope, that is, the slope of Scimitar Hill facing south-west. There, finally, they established themselves on a ledge which afforded some cover.

Coincidentally the 32nd Brigade of the 11th Division, missing direction owing to the poor visibility in the dash across Green Hill, had moved too far towards the left, and instead of striking the north-western slope of Hetman Chair, also entered the ravine. Their attempted advance up it was repulsed with serious loss. When this mistake in direction became known, the 33rd Brigade, held in reserve, was sent forward to carry out the original plan of assault. They, too, it is said, lost direction in the like manner. At all events this part of the plan broke down in execution.

The result was that neither the success of the 34th Brigade on the right nor that of the 87th Brigade on the left led to anything. With the defeat of the frontal assault in the centre the bodies of troops on the wings had each been left in a dangerous situation.

Looking at the way the battle was going, and the fact that the 11th Division had not gained its objective, it was decided to bring up the 2nd Mounted Division, hitherto held in reserve at Lala Baba. They had to advance round the south of the Salt Lake and for a mile and a half under heavy bursts of shrapnel. The manœuvre was executed in open order, and with a magnificent steadiness. "The advance of these English

yeomen," General Hamilton records, "was a sight calculated to send a thrill of pride through anyone. Such superb martial spectacles are rare in modern war. Here and there a shell would take toll of a cluster; there they lay; the others moved steadily on; not a man

hung back or hurried."

They reached the positions held by the foremost battalions at nightfall; pushed up the ravine favoured by the failing light, and, gaining the top, carried the Turkish trenches on a small rise forming the centre of the enemy's first defences. It was supposed that the plateau had at length been won, but farther on and on yet higher ground there was the semi-circle of Turkish entrenchments. The captured knoll commanded by this semi-circle would in daylight have been untenable. It was judged that, fatigued and thirsty as the men were, a retirement was the best course. The yeomanry fell back upon the line from which the attack had been launched. The British losses in this disastrous action were nearly 5,000 men. They fell most heavily on the 29th Division.

Subsidiary to the operations just recorded, and coincidentally with them, an assault was made under the command of Major-General Cox with a mixed column of Anzac, Irish, Welsh, and Indian troops upon the Turkish positions along the south side of the Great

Anafarta valley. The column consisted of—

Two battalions of the New Zealand Mounted Rifles;

Two battalions of the 29th (Irish) Brigade;

The 4th South Wales Borderers; The 29th Indian Infantry Brigade.

The attack had three objectives: on the left to stiffen the junction of the 11th Division with the Anzac line; in the centre to seize the well at Kabak Kuyu, the source of the Azmak, and a valuable acquisition, while its loss would be a bad one for the enemy; on the right to clear out the Turkish entrenchments to the north-east of Hill 60.

Cox, to achieve these aims, formed his force into three sections, the Irish and Welsh on the left, the Indians in

the centre, were under

The troop outposts, an Indian Brig right the er stiff and swa the Kaiajik superior for where Russe of August 6 valley, the of the first essayed repe bomb and b of life, they but could 1 Anzacs once shift. Rein they grimly

So affairs: ing and snip was ejected. in conjuncti and resource Germans, m operation th the 4th and Mounted Rif Irish Brigade the Gallipoli were on the Mounted Ri held by ma reached and The enemy however, he had swept hi his defences.

done within

ER EAST

h anyone. odern war. a cluster; not a man

foremost avoured by he Turkish he enemy's le plateau nd on yet of Turkish landed by untenable. men were, manry fell had been ous action vily on the

rded, and ade under red column upon the the Great

d Rifles;

t to stiffen inzac line; Kuyu, the tion, while in the right north-east

into three Indians in

THE TRAGEDY OF SUVLA

the centre, and the Anzacs on the right. The Anzacs were under the command of Russell.

The troops on the left drove the Turks out of a line of outposts, and effected the linking up as intended; the Indian Brigade seized the Kabak Kuyu well; on the right the enemy resisted stubbornly, and there was a stiff and swaying fight, in which the summit of Hill 60, the Kaiajik Aghala, was finally won and held against superior forces. This hill lies just beyond Hill 40, where Russell's men established themselves on the night of August 6. Since it commanded the Great Anafarta valley, the position was of tactical importance, indeed of the first importance. Having lost it the Turks essayed repeatedly to retake it, and tried both with bomb and bayonet. In part, and at a reckless sacrifice of life, they succeeded. They regained the summit, but could not regain the southern face. There the Anzacs once more proved that they were terrors to shift. Reinforced by the 18th Australians, just landed, they grimly defied every effort to oust them.

So affairs remained for about a week, the usual bombing and sniping on either side. Then at last the enemy was ejected. The renewed attack was planned by Cox in conjunction with Russell, both past-masters in ruse and resource. It was known that the Turks, or Turko-Germans, meant here to fight to the death. For the operation there were assigned three Anzac brigades, the 4th and 5th Australians, and the New Zealand Mounted Rifles, plus the 5th Connaught Rangers of the Irish Brigade. It proved as bitter a struggle as any in the Gallipoli campaign. In the advance the Irishmen were on the left, the Australians on the right, the Mounted Rifles in the centre. The Australians were held by machine-gun fire; but the New Zealanders reached and cleared the nearer area of the summit. The enemy disputed the ground inch by inch. While, however, he was so engaged, the Connaught Rangers had swept him out of his trenches on the left and turned his defences. It was an extraordinary feat, for it was all done within five minutes. The dash of the Irishmen had

State for V losses like

peninsula.

replied in

unthinkab

with the

he was reca

been simply irresistible. No sooner was the loss realised than the hostile reserves were massed for a counter-attack. There were only 250 of the Rangers, and they were assailed by six times their number. Odds or no odds, they refused to give way. The unequal fight went on for hours, and it was not until midnight—the attack had begun at five in the afternoon—that the heroic remnant of the Rangers was at length outbombed.

The interval had given time for reinforcements to be brought up. The fight on the left had also helped the New Zealanders to keep their grip on the summit. For twenty-four hours longer they were incessantly counter-attacked, and remained immovable. When this resistance had told on the enemy's confidence, and tried his wind, the 10th Australian Light Horse pounced upon him again on the left, and again ousted him. This time the ejection was final. Hill 60 had been won.

The character of this combat may be judged from the fact that the Turkish losses were as heavy as those sustained by the British in the much more extensive battle of August 21; if not heavier. The summit and slopes of Hill 60 were thickly strewn and in places heaped with Turkish dead. On the side of the attack the casualties numbered 1,000, the killed about a fifth of the total. If the main weight had been thrown into these flanking operations instead of into the frontal assault the action of August 21 would in all probability have been a victory.

To all intents this combat for Hill 60 was the last fight. From the end of August the campaign simply petered out. General Hamilton still believed in success; but the British Government had ceased to believe. They had decided to write the Expedition off.

On the spot the decision was forecasted by the non-arrival of drafts and munitions. The stream of each dried up. With the coming of the autumn sickness had begun to take a heavy toll. On October 11 General Hamilton received from Lord Kitchener, Secretary of

RER EAST

s the loss assed for a he Rangers, eir number. The unequal midnight rnoon—that s at length

ments to be helped the the summit, incessantly able. When fidence, and orse pounced ousted him.

O had been

ged from the vy as those re extensive The summit nd in places f the attack bout a fifth thrown into the frontal l probability

was the last baign simply d in success; lieve. They

by the noneam of each mn sickness r 11 General Secretary of

THE TRAGEDY OF SUVLA

State for War, a cablegram asking for his estimate of the losses likely to be involved in an evacuation of the peninsula. "On the 12th October," he writes, "I replied in terms showing that such a step was to me unthinkable." In plain terms, he declined to comply with the requisition. Four days later (October 16) he was recalled.

CHAPTER XII

GALLIPOLI: THE EVACUATION

General Munro's report on the Gallipoli situation—Glaring military disadvantages—Evacuation resolved upon—Winter hardships of the troops—Birdwood's plan for abandonment in three stages—Suvla first evacuated—Success of the scheme—The withdrawal from the Anzac lines—Turkish suspicions at Achi Baba—French Corps Expeditionaire withdrawn—Final abandonment on night of January 8, 1916—The enemy outwitted—Episodes of the embarkation—No losses—The Gallipoli enterprise and its results.

AFTER an interval of twelve days the command of the Mediterranean Expeditionary Force was transferred to General Sir C. C. Munro.

That distinguished officer was instructed to report upon the military situation in the Gallipoli Peninsula; to form an opinion as to whether on military grounds the peninsula ought to be evacuated, or yet another attempt made to carry it; and finally to estimate the military forces needed to capture the peninsula, to keep the Dardanelles open in that event, and eventually to take Constantinople.

He proceeded to Imbros, where the Headquarters of the Expeditionary Force had been established, and from that place sailed to Gallipoli to pursue his inquiries.

He found the positions occupied by the British forces in his opinion unique in military history. "The mere fringe of the coastline had," he reported," been secured. The piers and beaches upon which they depended for all requirements of personnel and material were exposed to registered and observed artillery fire. Our entrenchments were dominated almost throughout by the Turks. The possible artillery positions were insufficient and

defective. The every possible rout depth; the on the weather. and deployment The Turks, on observation, an had been given tages by all thengineer."

others. To be peninsula was possible to with from the shell-by the disease there was, in cearlier battles, command of the attaching to it as infantry haproceeding was

Weighing thi General Munro enough in view strengthened b Expeditionary an economy of t diversion of the prosecution of e Egypt, or both.

He did not the by the Exped expected. Nor the position we of an advance impracticable. troops locked uto a more useful was urgent.

GALLIPOLI: THE EVACUATION

defective. The Force, in short, held a line possessing every possible military defect. The position was without depth; the communications insecure and dependent on the weather. No means existed for the concealment and deployment of fresh troops destined for the offensive. The Turks, on the other hand, enjoyed full powers of observation, and abundant artillery positions, and they had been given the time to supplement natural advantages by all the devices at the disposal of the field engineer."

These were grave considerations. But there were others. To begin with, since every corner on the peninsula was exposed to the hostile fire, it was not possible to withdraw any of the troops on the peninsula from the shell-swept area. The troops were enervated by the diseases endemic in the Levant in summer; there was, in consequence of the losses sustained in earlier battles, a dearth of officers competent to take command of the men; the augmentation of the Force by attaching to it yeomanry and mounted brigades acting as infantry had not tended to create efficiency; the proceeding was a makeshift.

Weighing this situation and the state of the Force, General Munro concluded that the Turks—it was clear enough in view of the natural advantages of their position strengthened by field works—could hold the British Expeditionary Force with comparatively few troops, an economy of their resources which, combined with this diversion of the British resources, must favour the prosecution of enemy designs against Bagdad, or against

Egypt, or both.

He did not think an advance from the positions held by the Expeditionary troops could reasonably be expected. Nor even were it made did he consider that the position would be materially bettered. The idea of an advance upon Constantinople he dismissed as impracticable. In brief, his judgment was that the troops locked up on the peninsula should be diverted to a more useful theatre of war, and that the diversion was urgent.

inquiries.
ish forces
The mere
a secured.
ended for

ng military ardships of

ee stages-

withdrawal

ba—French t on night

des of the

its results.

nd of the

ferred to

to report

eninsula;

grounds

mate the

, to keep

itually to

uarters of

hed, and

another

e exposed entrenchhe Turks.

cient and

225

In these circumstances evacuation was decided upon. It had been determined at the same time to send part of the British forces in the Levant to Salonica. Accordingly, General Munro having been invested with the command of those forces, exclusive of the British troops in Egypt, they were divided into the Salonica Army under the immediate command of General Sir Bryan Mahon, and the Dardanelles Army under the immediate command of General Sir W. Birdwood.

The latter had his headquarters at Mudros.

Winter set in on the peninsula of Gallipoli with heavy storms. A gale which began on November 21. and blew for twenty-four hours, reaching at its height the velocity of a hurricane, was accompanied by torrential rain. The downpour turned all the watercourses and brooks into raging torrents, which coming down from the hills in spate swept everything before them. Trenches, particularly in the Suvla area, were flooded out; the floods spread over the flat expanses and cut off communications. In the trenches, dugouts, and billets, very rough and temporary shelters for the most part, the troops were drenched to the skin by the rain, and their stores soaked by muddy flood water. To the storm of rain succeeded a heavy downfall of snow, still accompanied by a high wind, bitterly cold. The cold speedily changed the aspect of the country to one of frozen wintriness. Wet followed by cold sent up the rate of sickness with a bound. In the early days of December 10,000 men had to be shipped off, invalided.

Meanwhile, with the aid of General Birdwood, a plan for evacuation was being worked out. It was happily on the lines of plain common sense. The proposal of General Munro was to carry out the abandonment in

three stages.

The first stage was to withdraw troops, animals, and supplies not needed for a long campaign; the second to withdraw men, guns, animals and stores except those required for a defensive during a given period, due allowance being made for contingencies; the third to

complete the vector behind, if necessary the time wants

Very wisely the evacuation that if that man harm, and th His decision vas possible. E more effective

The actual General Birdy Wemyss. "O records, "Lieu skill and promr This tribute wa literal sense of and soul of A Many a time wearing, like h and a hat, and them. Where though he dete thing thorough with his "lad a born leader. of the Anzacs f he scrapped th did it now. Fo

The evacuation of the surplus of to seaward.

a" live " man

Then came

cided upon.
co send part
a. Accordd with the
the British
he Salonica
General Sir
under the
Birdwood.

lipoli with vember 21. t its height by torrenratercourses ming down efore them. ere flooded panses and ugouts, and ers for the he skin by flood water. v downfall nd, bitterly ect of the et followed bound. In be shipped

ood, a plan was happily proposal of donment in

nimals, and ne second to scept those period, due he third to complete the withdrawal as rapidly as possible, leaving behind, if necessary, guns, animals and stores not for the time wanted.

Very wisely, General Munro resolved not to cover the evacuation with any feint of attack. He considered that if that manœuvre failed of its purpose it would do harm, and the probabilities were that it would fail. His decision was to depart from the normal as little as possible. Beyond question that course was by far the more effective ruse.

The actual work of evacuation was entrusted to General Birdwood in association with Rear-Admiral Wemyss. "On receipt of his orders," General Munro records, "Lieut.-General Birdwood proceeded with the skill and promptitude characteristic of all he undertakes." This tribute was well deserved. For months, in the most literal sense of the words, Birdwood had been the life and soul of Anzac. He was no stickler for ceremony. Many a time he had been seen in foremost positions wearing, like his men, nothing more than shirt, trousers, and a hat, and outwardly not to be distinguished from them. Where snipers abounded this was sensible. But though he detested parade, Birdwood was above everything thorough. If he kept in the closest daily touch with his "lads," who were devoted to him, he was a born leader, and neither the discipline nor the moral of the Anzacs for a moment wavered. In every instance he scrapped the frills and got at the business. And he did it now. Fortunately, Wemyss was at the same time a" live" man on the Naval side.

The evacuation of the Suvla positions was the initial step. This proceeding by itself could afford the enemy no clue to its intentions. It did not of necessity indicate abandonment of the Gallipoli enterprise. And it afforded the less clue because it was carried out on the lines already noted. From December 10 to December 18 the surplus of the force at Suvla ebbed away, as it were, to seaward.

Then came the final move; a test of the method. Corps behind the lines were to be withdrawn to the

embarkation beaches first. The lines meanwhile were to be lightly held, but since the distance of some of these points from the beaches was considerable, it was evidently desirable in case of attack to break a hostile rush. With that object intermediate positions had been prepared; one a line to the south of the Salt Lake, extending from the lake to the sea and covering B and C beaches; the other a line to the north of the Salt Lake extending from Hill 10 to the Karakol Dagh on the coast, and covering A Beach.

The final withdrawal was to take place on the night of December 19-20. The night proved calm, and the full moon was happily veiled by a haze. Just light enough to see close at hand and obviate the possible confusion of total darkness; dark enough to cover movement even

at a moderate distance.

The covering ships had taken up their positions,

ready to open if the enemy indicated activity.

At half-past one in the morning began the withdrawal and embarkation of corps in the rear. The embarkation proceeded with perfect smoothness. When it had gone far enough the men in the front trenches left them. They were not molested. Every gun, vehicle and animal was embarked. Only a small stock of supplies had to be left behind. Those who were last to leave set fire to them.

The final evacuation of the Anzac position had gone on concurrently with that at Suvla. It was equally without a hitch. Owing, however, to the roughness of the ground, and the gradient of the ravines leading down to the shore, 4 field guns, 2 howitzers (5-inch), a 4.7 naval gun, 2 Hotchkiss "pom-poms," and an "archie" had to be left behind, but destroyed, of course. Some supply carts had also to be left—stripped of their wheels, and 56 mules. The supplies left were fired.

The first effect of the evacuation of Suvla and Anzac was to arouse enemy suspicions either that the force before Achi Baba might be increased, or that position also evacuated. And the enemy, having been presumably outwitted by the evacuations already carried

out, took memovements.
guns not only
front, but on
object was to
toe of the per
tration he coguns ranged
had now be
therefore not
the enemy
men and art
for the Allie
supplies or t
with the who

Yet at the Cabinet at I foothold. T this Expediti temerity whi the changed realised, and Sir Charles M tion. Betwe Anzac and tl position at curiously en valuable, the there ensued same time v sonnel" to sa

Already the been evacuate most of the F Royal Naval

Here again was no atter attack; and embarkations the longer ni

RER EAST

anwhile were e of some of erable, it was eak a hostile positions had of the Salt and covering north of the Carakol Dagh

n the night of , and the full light enough ble confusion ovement even

eir positions, vity.

ne withdrawal embarkation n it had gone them. They and animal lies had to be t fire to them. ion had gone was equally he roughness vines leading zers (5-inch), ms," and an destroyed, of left-stripped olies left were

da and Anzac hat the force that position ing been preready carried

GALLIPOLI: THE EVACUATION

out, took measures to prevent either of these possible movements. He increased the number of his heavy guns not only on the Gallipoli side on the Achi Baba front, but on the Asiatic shore of the Dardanelles. The object was to keep the landing places round the southern toe of the peninsula under heavy shell fire. This concentration he could afford, since both his troops and his guns ranged against the British at Suvla and Anzac had now been released. It had become important therefore not to delay this part of the evacuation, for the enemy was in superior strength both as regards men and artillery, and if he could render it impossible for the Allied force before Achi Baba either to receive supplies or to withdraw he might compel its surrender with the whole of its equipment and material.

Yet at the last moment apparently there was in the Cabinet at Home some hesitancy as to giving up this foothold. The influences which had originally suggested this Expedition were not yet dead. Evidently with that temerity which jumps to conclusions upon half-truths, the changed conditions on the spot were not properly realised, and even the clearly expressed opinion of Sir Charles Munro did not in some minds carry conviction. Between the final evacuation of Suvla and Anzac and the receipt of orders to withdraw from the position at Cape Helles, which seems in London, curiously enough, to have been esteemed the more valuable, though its intrinsic value by itself was nil, there ensued a delay of eight days. The orders at the same time were "without unduly exposing the personnel" to save all the equipment and animals.

Already the French troops employed in this area had been evacuated with the exception of 4,000 men, and most of the French section of the line taken over by the Royal Naval Division and the 86th Brigade.

Here again the same procedure was adopted. There was no attempt to cover the withdrawal by a feint attack; and surplusage was got rid of in night-time embarkations whenever the weather had permitted, the longer nights favouring. In the day-time nothing

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

out of the ordinary was to be observed. To keep down the enemy's heavy gun fire the ships of the Fleet opened a counter-bombardment against these hostile batteries, which were now, it was noted, liberally supplied with German shells. Subject to such preliminaries, the final withdrawal was to take place once more in a single night; corps behind the lines got off first; the lines meanwhile to be held much as usual; and the troops to move from them down to the beaches assigned without occupying any intermediate position unless attacked. The distances were mostly short.

In the meanwhile and in anticipation of orders, General Birdwood had worked out all his arrangements

in detail.

The first step was the evacuation of the remainder of the French troops. They were in readiness withdrawn from the line on the night of January 1-2, and were to be embarked by the French warships and transports. The wind on the following night when the men and animals were to put off proved strong, and embarkation in boats not being easy some British destroyers were requisitioned to assist. The proceedings too having to be conducted in darkness and a choppy sea, a French battleship ran down and sank one of the horse transports. However, this part of the embarkation was got through without further loss.

It was then decided to fix the final withdrawal for the night of January 8. A complete shipment of the heavy guns, though ordered from London, and this weighty stuff had to go first if at all, would by inability to reply to the hostile fire have given away the intended evacuation altogether. Seven of such guns, one British and six French, were therefore retained, and at the

finish destroyed.

The further preparations included, as a precaution, lines of trenches covering the several beaches. Between the front lines and the departure places there were already existing three lines of trenches, all strongly wired. These could be held if need were. To leave nothing to chance, however, a line of posts was laid out

from de Trot on the Æges if he essayed defences, and

At each em officers. The hands of Capt

There were enemy suspice heavy gunfired line, but the Dardane but the defermain reply was Two Turkish the Turkish An attack wand was rapid

These signs not shown or British troop day dawned so over the sea meteorological last for the notation.

Everything embarkations and the men an hour before would, if una three in the n

The embar in three trip from the su the second m the third the beaches, the l and those of repairs to pies in the first t RER EAST

keep down elect opened le batteries, applied with es, the final in a single ; the lines the troops signed with-

of orders, rrangements

emainder of withdrawn d were to be transports. ne men and embarkation royers were too having a, a French transports. got through

hdrawal for nent of the n, and this by inability he intended one British and at the

precaution, between there were all strongly To leave was laid out from de Trott's battery on the Straits to Gully Beach on the Ægean. To reach the beaches the enemy, if he essayed it, would have to penetrate four lines of defences, and the trenches covering the beaches as well.

At each embarkation place there was a staff of naval officers. The Naval arrangements were put into the

hands of Captain C. M. Staveley, R.N.

There were not wanting evidences of a deepening of enemy suspicions. On January 7 an exceptionally heavy gunfire was directed against the right of the Allied line, both from in front and in flank from across the Dardanelles. It resulted in but few casualties, but the defences were severely knocked about. The main reply was from the ships of the supporting squadron. Two Turkish mines were sprung in the centre, where the Turkish trenches were observed to be crowded. An attack was delivered, but it had no "go" in it, and was rapidly repulsed.

These signs of activity, whatever their object, were not shown on the following day—the last which any British troops were to pass on the peninsula. The day dawned sunny and calm. A light breeze was wafted over the sea from the south. The calm spell, so the meteorological expert with the Force predicted, would

last for the next twenty-four hours.

Everything for the last move was ready. The embarkations were to begin soon after darkness fell, and the men in the front line to withdraw a quarter of an hour before midnight. It was calculated that they would, if unattacked, reach the landing places about

three in the morning.

The embarkation had been arranged to take place in three trips; the first comprising men withdrawn from the support line immediately after nightfall; the second most of the men left to hold the front line; the third the rearguards of the trenches covering the beaches, the Naval and Military beach working parties, and those of the Royal Engineers left ashore to execute repairs to piers if damaged. The body of men included in the first trip was larger than that included in the

The evac

Not a man

successful b

mind "that

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

second, and these again more numerous than those included in the third.

Just after nightfall, about seven o'clock, the wind veered from south to south-west and began to freshen, and it continued to rise until close upon midnight.

By that time the sea had become choppy.

Notwithstanding these conditions, the first trip was carried out without mishap. The second trip, entered upon at half-past eleven, and including the embarkation of guns as well as men, was kept well up to schedule time. At half-past three in the morning the last of the men in the third trip left shore. The history of the Gallipoli

Expedition had been closed.

There were but two incidents worthy of note. One was the reported presence of an enemy submarine; the report was correct enough, for *Prince George*, having 2,000 troops on board, was struck on the way to Mudros by a torpedo. The torpedo failed to explode. The other incident was the grounding of a lighter at Gully Beach stranded owing to the heavy seas, which had already washed away the pier at W Beach. As the vessel could not be refloated the men on her, 160 in number, had to be re-landed, marched to W Beach and embarked there.

All this had taken place apparently without the enemy having taken the alarm. But as the last parties left the shore stores and supplies left behind broke out at one point after another into flame. They had been fired by time fuses. The night became illuminated by these flares. In the midst of them two magazines of munitions and explosives, which it had been impracticable to remove, went up one after another in quick succession with a roar. They had been fired in the same way.

Then it became evident that the enemy had been roused. Red lights soared up above the Turkish lines. At the same time the enemy's heavy guns boomed out. His shells were seen to be falling upon the landing places. They continued to fall as the warships and transports stood off. This bombardment of nothing in particular

went on for three hours.

282

withdrawal/creducing the It was a sag that it cont ranks, which displayed.
So closed in its inception

failed less f judgment. 1 out some of The British around then had nobly up it is that th bears at all t than in war. ment before i of destructiv the men who and supreme imperative. reliance upon and devotion the soldiers a well be inser monians we li

Was the ca By no means greater than 100,000 of th Added to the it was a fata the Turkish I losses, doubly

RER EAST

than those

k, the wind a to freshen, a midnight.

rst trip was trip, entered embarkation shedule time. f the men in the Gallipoli

note. One submarine; sorge, having y to Mudros plode. The ter at Gully which had sh. As the her, 160 in I Beach and

without the last parties d broke out by had been minated by nagazines of appracticable k succession me way.

y had been arkish lines. Doomed out. I ding places. I transports a particular

GALLIPOLI: THE EVACUATION

The evacuation had been completely successful. Not a man had been lost. The withdrawal had been successful because General Munro had made up his mind "that no risks should be taken in prolonging the withdrawal of personnel at the final stage with a view to reducing the quantity of stores left"—and burned. It was a sagacious course, and there can be no doubt that it contributed to the justified confidence of all ranks, which in turn affirmed the perfect discipline displayed.

So closed this enterprise, ill-advised and ill-timed in its inception, unfortunate in its course. It had failed less from natural difficulties than from misjudgment. But against its gloomy background stand out some of the noblest examples of human courage. The British dead who fell in Gallipoli and sleep there. around them its desolate ravines and barren hills, had nobly upheld the valour of their race. The pity of it is that these deeds were turned to naught. Error bears at all times a bitter fruit, but none more bitter than in war. The error here was that which put equipment before men, not seeing that the greater perfection of destructive equipment heightens the qualities of the men who handle it; renders the element of ability and supreme ability in direction more than ever imperative. The British Empire was built up by reliance upon men. No more shining examples of duty and devotion could illumine a dark page than those of the soldiers and sailors over whose resting places might well be inscribed the epitaph, "Go tell the Lacedæmonians we lie here in obedience to their laws."

Was the campaign wholly without political results? By no means. The Turkish losses in Gallipoli were greater than those in the Balkan War. More than 100,000 of the best troops of the Empire had fallen. Added to the disastrous campaigns in the Caucasus it was a fatal blow. If the Balkan War had shaken the Turkish Empire to its foundations these combined losses, doubly severe, dried up the springs of its vitality.

CHAPTER XIII

THE SALONICA AND EGYPTIAN CAMPAIGNS OF 1916

Strategical reasons for the Allied occupation of Salonica—Belated attempt to aid Serbia—The rôle of Bulgaria—German influences at Athens—Proposed Allied junction with the Serbian army impracticable—Organisation of the Salonica position—Repulse of the Bulgarians—Situation at the beginning of 1916—Surrender of the Struma pass—Enforcement of Greek demobilisation—Formation of a Greek Provisional Government in Macedonia and the islands—Abdication of Constantine—The Allied autumn offensive of 1916—Capture of Kamakchalan and Monastir—Political and strategical consequences—The Senussi of Sollum—His hostility—War declared against him—Operations on the Western Egyptian frontier—Action at Beit Hussein—Battle of Gebel Medwa—Defeat of the Senussi's forces at Halazin—British advance upon Sollum and reoccupation of that place—The exploit of the Armoured Car Detachment—Close of the Western Egyptian campaign—Renewal of enemy attacks in Sinai—The second German-Turkish Expedition—Battle at Mahemdia.

EARLY in October, 1915, the 10th Division, under the command of Sir B. Mahon, withdrawn from Suvla, had been ordered to and had landed at Salonica. There two divisions of the French Eastern Expeditionary Force had preceded them. A third French division shortly afterwards arrived. The French troops were commanded by General Sarrail, an officer who had proved his brilliant ability in the operations round Verdun.

Events in the Balkans had dictated this step. After having, unaided, repelled two attacks by Austria, the Serbians and Montenegrins found themselves in the autumn of 1915 called upon to face, not merely a combined German-Austrian offensive, but an attack by Bulgaria. Born fighters as their peoples were, this

SALONICA

ordeal was t

The close East the da enough it h alliance was regards the course taken sised the im Certainly st can justly b of the Russi which, leavi had compelle Provinces. Allied states alliance as States, or to The latter as at Berlin and policy of the that the Wa and Serbia. Greece suppo of Rumania matic situati hand. Thou supposed to that would ha of the Serbia

The Allied Constantine to and the Ser proceedings, Austrian arm Allied Experuling clique to throw off the British I had been le

SALONICA AND EGYPTIAN CAMPAIGNS, 1916

ordeal was too much for minor States already severely tried in the crucible of war.

The close of 1915 was for the Allied Powers in the East the darkest hour of the conflict. Even if early enough it had been perceived that the Serbo-Greek alliance was the keystone of the political arch, both as regards the Balkans and the Levant as a whole, the course taken by the war in Russia had suddenly emphasised the importance of rendering aid to the Serbians. Certainly statesmen neither in London nor at Paris can justly be accused of failing to foresee the conduct of the Russian Minister of War, General Soukomlinoff. which, leaving the Russian armies without munitions, had compelled them to evacuate Poland and the Baltic Provinces. On the other hand, it had been open to Allied statesmen either to look upon the Serbo-Greek alliance as a compact merely concerning two minor States, or to view it as having a much wider ambit. The latter assuredly was the view which prevailed alike at Berlin and at Vienna and the view which guided the policy of the Central Powers. It was by no accident that the War broke out as a quarrel between Austria and Serbia. With this compact between Serbia and Greece supported and affirmed, and the eventual adhesion of Rumania assured, the Allied Powers held the diplomatic situation in the Balkans in the hollow of their Though Bulgaria had entered into a treaty. supposed to be secret, with Germany and Austria, that would have mattered little given the united support of the Serbians and the Greeks.

The Allied Powers, however, had allowed King Constantine to treat the compact with Serbia as naught, and the Serbians had been left in isolation. Those proceedings, added to the advance of the German and Austrian armies in Russia and the non-success of the Allied Expedition to Gallipoli, had encouraged the ruling clique in Bulgaria, headed by Tsar Ferdinand, to throw off disguise. An attempt had been made by the British Foreign Office, in whose hands the matter had been left, to secure Bulgarian neutrality. But

of 1916

onica-Belated man influences Serbian army sition—Repulse 916—Surrender emobilisation-Macedonia and Allied autumn nd Monastirssi of Sollumns on the Wes-Battle of Gebel [alazin—British ce—The exploit estern Egyptian i-The second

n, under the from Suvla, nica. There expeditionary nch division troops were er who had tions round

step. After Austria, the elves in the erely a comattack by s were, this there was between the Court at Athens and that at Sofia a close understanding, and the hesitant attitude of the Allied Powers towards Constantine doomed British negotiations at Sofia to futility. When, at length, action could no longer be postponed if the Serbians were not finally to be crushed, the Allied forces in the Levant were locked up in Gallipoli. Their treaty rights gave France, Great Britain, and Russia, as Guardian Powers, authority to land troops upon Greek territory should it be threatened. Evidently by a defeat of Serbia it might be. They availed themselves therefore of their authority to send troops to Salonica.

The instructions to the Salonica force were to advance into Serbia and open up communication with the Serbian army, and there was apparently an agreement with the Greek Government that if such a junction proved to be impracticable the Allied troops were to be withdrawn. The junction intended did prove to be impracticable, and on several grounds. In the first place, the arrival of the Allied troops at Salonica was for such a purpose belated. By that time, after a resistance which for sheer heroism has never been surpassed, the Serbians had been overwhelmed. During two months they had struggled against impossible odds. The aid of the greater Allied Powers was not forthcoming until the last stage of this unequal conflict. By then those of the Serbians who had survived it—scorning to lay down their arms—the fathers with their boys by their side—were tramping the long miles over the mountains towards the Adriatic amid the rigours of a Balkan winter. They were all that was left of the flower and manhood of their nation.

The proposed junction with the Serbians again was impracticable because the three French divisions told off to effect it were totally insufficient. The single weak British Division transferred to Salonica had assigned to it the duty of covering the French right while the operation of pushing up the valley of the Vardar was being carried out. But the chief function of the Bulgarians in this Balkan campaign had been to thrust in

between the Vardar is long forces at least question.

Here once mistake had upon the Exp troops into S have been de have saved th intrigues at A was now con Dardanelles had arisen fro of the Turks plea put forwa that it would and timely s have done mo the issue of measure. No been given t having to cro the sea. It w overcome by n was utterly u the main prol Expedition to problem. It themselves to Turkish troop of an expedit though a vig might have cl

But though Salonica had strategically. the great port attention it re

let Serbia go.

id that at it attitude e doomed When, at ned if the the Allied oli. Their nd Russia. oops upon idently by themselves Salonica. to advance with the agreement a junction were to be ove to be the first lonica was e, after a ever been d. During impossible es was not al conflict. survived ne fathers nping the e Adriatic y were all eir nation. again was isions told ingle weak d assigned while the

Tardar was

f the Bul-

o thrust in

between the Serbians and Salonica. The line of the Vardar is long, and to attempt to hold it against hostile forces at least three times as numerous was out of the question.

question. Here once more there had been uncertainty. If a mistake had been made in embarking prematurely upon the Expedition to Gallipoli in place of throwing troops into Serbia by way of Salonica, which might have been done at the outset of the war and might have saved the Serbo-Greek compact, discouraging the intrigues at Athens at the same time, another mistake was now committed in withdrawing so much of the Dardanelles Force to Egypt. Both these mistakes had arisen from an exaggerated estimate of the capacity of the Turks to attack that Protectorate. The original plea put forward for the Expedition to Gallipoli had been that it would divert such a Turkish attack. Adequate and timely support of the Serbians; however, would have done more to limit Turkish resources, and to hasten the issue of the Eastern compaigns than any other measure. No sufficient consideration seems to have been given to the difficulty confronting any force having to cross the Sinai desert without command of the sea. It was supposed that this difficulty might be overcome by means of rail transit. But Turkey, isolated, was utterly unequal to any enterprise of the kind, and the main problem clearly was to isolate Turkey. The Expedition to Gallipoli was the wrong way of attacking the problem. It was the worst possible strategy. Allowing themselves to be impressed by reports of the 250,000 Turkish troops massed at Damascus for the purposes of an expedition against Egypt, the British Cabinet, though a vigorous effort even at the eleventh hour might have changed the situation in the Balkans, had let Serbia go.

But though belated, the landing of an Allied force at Salonica had important results both politically and strategically. It prevented hostile troops from seizing the great port; by occupying and diverting the enemy's attention it rendered feasible the re-equipment of what

aggression, t opposed to Central Euro nated and k factitious. I blackguardisi capital.

SALONICA

While imn part of the from Salonica front from K realised that which that I merely be in In the circur Serbians, be become secon frontier of Gr

The first o the command and preparat An enemy thi the Greek G depended up confronted Go any save a c from Salonica repair. There the hills from but it was a For the rest speaking, cha swamps, the roads just un and hugger-m was written establish a fo an important to employ the the spot as co

was left of the Serbian army, transferred for that purpose from the mainland to Corfu; not least, it altered radically the situation which from this time confronted the predominant pro-German clique at Athens. To all intents the free Constitution of Greece, set up under the ægis of the Guardian Powers, had been suspended. If in name still a Constitutional ruler, Constantine had become, in fact, absolute. The Greek Ministry had been reduced to his puppets. There had appeared the political phenomenon, already familiar in the history of Prussia during the first half of the nineteenth century, of a nominal Cabinet possessing only the shadow of authority, and of a secret and unavowed Court Council exercising all the actual functions of Government.

And the manner in which those functions were exercised left not the slightest doubt as to the Secret Council's Under the mask of neutrality, neutral rights being insisted upon to the uttermost, there were maintained and encouraged hidden bases for German submarine warfare; there was an active and unchecked smuggling of arms, munitions, and military stores across from Greece to the North African coast in preparation of an Arab rising and an attack upon Egypt from the west; the Greek army had been mobilised, ostensibly as a measure of national security, but the real purpose was the less in doubt because, though kept on a supposed war footing, the Greek troops were rendered as far as possible valueless. They were ill-supplied; their pay was in arrear, or not forthcoming; their discipline neglected. They were allowed to become more and more ragged and dirty, and their arms out of condition. The authority of officers was undermined both by propaganda and by false or exaggerated reports destructive of moral; the officers, uncertain and bewildered, lost selfrespect. And coincidentally with this deliberate erosion, a strange procedure on the part of a king bred to the profession of arms, there were formed at Athens and elsewhere the clubs of so-called Nationalists or Volunteers, the advertised object to protect the country from

for that least, it his time ique at Greece, ers, had hal ruler, he Greek here had familiar f of the ossessing eret and hal func-

ere exer-Council's al rights re mainnan subnchecked es across eparation from the stensibly l purpose supposed as far as their pay discipline nore and condition. by propaructive of lost selfe erosion, ed to the hens and olunteers, try from aggression, the actual design to overawe the majority opposed to the casting of Greek nationality into the Central European melting pot. This movement, originated and kept up by a corruption fund, was purely factitious. It was an organisation of all the idle blackguardism of the populace, more especially in the capital.

While immediately after their landing in October part of the British 10th Division were sent forward from Salonica to relieve the French troops holding the front from Kosturino to Lake Doiran, it was speedily realised that a movement up the valley of the Vardar, which that relief had been intended to assist, would merely be incurring a strategic risk for no useful end. In the circumstances, the task of linking up with the Serbians, besides being already impracticable, had become secondary to that of watching the northern frontier of Greece.

The first duty which fell to the British troops under the command of General Mahon was that of organisation, and preparation for the landing of reinforcements. An enemy thrust at Salonica was to be anticipated, and the Greek Government could not for a moment be depended upon. Assuredly the state of things which confronted General Mahon might well have discouraged any save a determined commander. There is a road from Salonica north-east to Seres, but it was in bad repair. There is a railway which serpentines through the hills from Salonica northwards to Lake Doiran, but it was a single track only, and in bad repair also. For the rest, the surrounding country was, broadly speaking, chaos, marked by undrained and festering swamps, the breeding places of malaria; the ordinary roads just unpaved tracks. A depth of official neglect and hugger-mugger only to be met with in the Levant was written large upon the landscape. In order to establish a fortified base large enough to accommodate an important force, it was advisable in the meanwhile to employ the French and British divisions already on the spot as covering troops, and very wisely Sir Charles

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

Munro, with his habitual caution, promptly so decided. It may have disappointed, and doubtless did disappoint, the public expectations of an advance into Serbia, but it assured larger and still practicable things. It was the

first step towards making good past errors.

Not only had roads to be made and swamps to be drained, but accommodation had to be provided alike for the troops expected, for stores, and for sick and wounded. Order had to be evolved, and by hard work the face of the area occupied was steadily changed. To this activity General Munro in his despatches paid a well-earned tribute. The first Allied divisions sent to Salonica in the hope of pushing up the valley of the Vardar had been dispatched so hurriedly that they were not only destitute of a full transport equipment, but most of the units were without first line transport. Operations as a fully equipped force being out of the question, they had to be converted into mobile columns, that is on a semi-guerilla footing. That was done with remarkable expedition. At the same time, the prospective landing of reinforcements at Salonica had to be provided for. The storage space available in the port was inadequate; the lack of roads a great handicap; but by the resolution of General Mahon and his staff these obstacles were bit by bit overcome, and the clean, smartly attired British officers and men introduced into the life of the city a new energising element.

Nor were such preparations taken in hand a moment too soon. The main Allied reinforcements were landed at the beginning of December, their disbarkation much facilitated by the work already got through. This was fortunate, for two reasons. To begin with, in the attempt to push forward into Serbia in light order, and despite the Balkan winter, the covering troops had suffered acutely from cold. It is well known that between the coastal region forming their southern glacis and the Macedonian highlands representing the tumbled plateau north of the main mountain range, the difference in temperature during the winter months is extreme. The winter climate of the coastal zone is

SALONICA

comparatively Often in the Fahrenheit, or intelligence lef force was beir for the purpo and cutting th Troops with It proved too l too late to att ment. The br 6, 7, and 8, fell the 'Allied ri Bulgarians, th means easy I was not furthe

With appar announced from by the German out by the beg press down the in face alike of difficulties of winter, the actime the Allied This was a hear not merely be route between because of the Athens.

The general 1916 was this of Seres and I Wars, were or hands was the the gorge of the Gulf began the extending acronorth-west to the series of the series of

decided. sappoint, rbia, but t was the

R EAST

ips to be ded alike sick and ard work changed. ches paid as sent to ev of the they were nent, but transport. ut of the columns, done with rospective provided port was handicap; I his staff the clean, ntroduced

a moment ere landed tion much This was h, in the ght order, troops had

southern enting the ain range, ter months tal zone is

nown that

comparatively mild; that of the highlands very severe. Often in the highlands the temperature falls to zero Fahrenheit, or below it. But besides these severities, intelligence left it certain that a large German-Bulgarian force was being concentrated in the Strumnitza valley for the purpose of making a thrust towards Salonica and cutting the communications of the Allied Covering Troops with that place. The thrust was anticipated. It proved too late to cut in as had been intended, but not too late to attack the Covering Force during its retirement. The brunt of this three days' battle, on December 6, 7, and 8, fell upon the British troops, who were holding the Allied right. Repulsing a superior force Bulgarians, they extricated themselves from a by no means easy position with inconsiderable losses. So decided had been the repulse inflicted, that their retreat was not further opposed.

With apparently no slight confidence it had been announced from Berlin that Salonica would be occupied by the German-Bulgarian troops, and the Allies driven out by the beginning of January, 1916. The attempt to press down the Vardar was made, and it failed. And in face alike of the Allied reinforcements, and of the difficulties of active campaigning in the Balkans in winter, the attempt was bound to fail. From that time the Allied grip upon the Salonica position solidified. This was a heavy blow to German and Austrian schemes, not merely because Salonica is the main commercial route between Central Europe and the Levant, but because of the check imposed upon the intrigues at Athens.

The general situation during the earlier months of 1916 was this. On the extreme right the districts of Seres and Drama, added to Greece after the Balkan Wars, were occupied by Greek troops, and in their hands was the pass through the mountains formed by the gorge of the Struma. At Stavros on the Strymon Gulf began the fortified lines of the British position, extending across the neck of the Chalkidike peninsula north-west to the Galiko river, and then to Lake Doiran.

24

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

At Lake Doiran began the French lines which were continued as far as the Vardar, and covered its lower

reaches on the west.

In the meanwhile, and as the re-equipment of the Serbian army proceeded, the political situation in Greece became more acute. The activities of the so-called Nationalists grew more openly terrorist. The political agitation in the Greek army, too, went on, and that once brilliant force showed itself increasingly demoralised and dissatisfied. In May, when General G. F. Milne took over the command of the British contingent of the Salonica army, occurred the episode of the surrender of the Struma Pass by the Greek troops holding it, the irruption of the Bulgarians into the eastern districts of Grecian Macedonia, and the withdrawal of the Greek forces there after one army corps had, so it was reported, taken service with the Central Powers. These events, added to the massing in Thessaly of troops supposed to be supporters of Constantine, the accumulation of munitions and stores in that province, and the difficulties placed in the way of the transport of the re-armed Serbians over Greek territory, moved the Guardian Powers at length to insist upon a Greek demobilisation. The demand, met by dilatory tactics, had to be enforced by an ultimatum. French troops landed at Athens to give effect to the requirement of the Allied Powers that the Greek telegraphs and railways should be placed under their control, and the clubs disarmed, were attacked. The demobilisation was enforced in July. One immediate effect of this more decided attitude of the Great Allied Powers had been in June a revolt of the northern provinces and the islands from the Athens Government, and the formation of a Provisional Authority. At the same time, steps were initiated for raising in the seceding territories a Greek army of 80,000 men. Constantine, by these various measures, was rendered powerless. In December he abdicated, and the Crown Prince of Greece being excluded from the succession by the act of abdication, the King was replaced on the throne by his second son,

SALONICA

Prince Alexai from Corfu to The politic

greater part c their rear no the Serbians, the comman offensive ope had arisen. Bulgarian me supported for lished himself and fortified

north of Lake

Westwards Monastir. Af Vardar, it is place in line w passes betwee the Kamakch eminence with the road and the south, and by a détour of cable, owing t lightest of mil the capture of would be able the very elab enemy across t taking of Kam flank attack.

was, in fact, th In conformit beginning of south and wes series of attac prevent the tr sector. A join

capture of Mo

ER EAST

which were

ent of the tuation in es of the orist. The went on, ncreasingly en General the British the episode reek troops s into the the witharmy corps the Central in Thessaly constantine, es in that way of the k territory, sist upon a by dilatory m. French equirement graphs and ontrol, and nobilisation of this more s had been es and the e formation time, steps erritories a by these n December reece being abdication, second son,

SALONICA AND EGYPTIAN CAMPAIGNS, 1916

Prince Alexander. The Serbian troops were transported from Corfu to Salonica.

The political difficulties, however, had consumed the greater part of the summer, and it was not until August, their rear now freed from menace, that, reinforced by the Serbians, 70,000 strong, the combined force under the command of General Sarrail could enter upon offensive operations. In the interim fresh obstacles had arisen. The British right was now exposed to a Bulgarian menace, and the enemy by a powerfully supported forward movement on the west had established himself in the bend of the Cerna, and had seized and fortified the commanding height of Kamakchalan, north of Lake Ostrova.

Westwards from Salonica a line of railway runs to Monastir. After crossing just above the delta of the Vardar, it is carried through Vodena and from that place in line with the one practicable road of the region, passes between the northern end of Lake Ostrova and the Kamakchalan mountain. The latter, a flat-topped eminence with precipitous and cliff-like sides, dominates the road and railway, the lake and all the country to the south, and there is no other way to Monastir save by a détour of the lake over stiff hilly country impracticable, owing to the absence of roads, for all save the lightest of military transport. On the other hand, by the capture of this dominating position the Allied forces would be able to assault with some prospect of success the very elaborate trench system established by the enemy across the Cerna valley south of Monastir. taking of Kamakchalan would afford the purchase for a flank attack. The plan of General Sarrail was by the capture of Monastir to turn the enemy's right, and it was, in fact, the feasible plan in the circumstances.

In conformity with that plan the British forces at the beginning of August took over the French positions south and west of Lake Doiran, and entered upon a series of attacks upon the Bulgarian line designed to prevent the transfer of hostile forces to the Monastir sector. A joint Anglo-French offensive against the

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

centre of the enemy's front, launched on August 10, won some notable successes. While the French captured Hill 227 and La Tortue, the British took the features of the main range named by the troops Kidney Hill and Horseshoe Hill. These captures, while weakening the enemy's centre, strengthened ours, and obliged the Bulgarians here to stiffen their forces. It enabled the British force to be employed to hold the Allied centre as well as the right as they had been doing, and it will be seen that the effect was at once to add to the troops available for the proposed main movement, while diminishing those the enemy could dispose of to resist it. Of course coincidentally with the extension of the length of the British line the Bulgarian counter-pressure on the east from Demir Hissar and Seres was increased, and was met by a succession of operations across the Struma. Thanks to the British superiority in guns among other things, these activities were decidedly successful. Armoured motor cars were effectively employed, and the Royal Flying Corps proved a valuable co-operation. A number of villages were captured and held against strong Bulgarian counter-attacks, very expensive to the enemy. These operations, ably directed by Lieut.-General C. J. Briggs, further occupied a not inconsiderable part of the hostile strength.

Into the details of the main operations it is beyond present scope to enter, except to say that by a feat of daring which has rarely been surpassed the Serbians, who fought magnificently, took Kamakchalan by storm, swarming up the chimneys and gullies of its seemingly unscalable sides, and notwithstanding a desperate defence, sweeping it bare of the enemy. Kamakchalan taken, they drove the Bulgarians over the valley beyond, and winning a firm footing on the massif east of Monastir contributed materially to the fortunate outcome of the attack by the French which broke through the maze of trenches on the flat and led to the retaking of Monastir. Beyond this the offensive was not pushed, for in truth its chief immediate purpose had been achieved. Through Monastir lies the main

SALONICA

landward rou capture of Mo same time it the Italians f

It will hat events in the events and connection.
Egypt, both had been fed until the close bility of that was secondar Salonica itself of Germany those interest thence had determined the secondar second

But while during the wh and so long a made, it wou established c encouragemen Africa had no

West of the the coast, the between 500 extends a serie east to north mark the nat the boundless sand dunes to called in maps and the oases of the Senus being more re way, the Senu of the Egypt sisted chiefly for keeping t

h captured
features of
y Hill and
kening the
bliged the
nabled the
lied centre

the troops ent, while to resist it. the length ressure on increased, across the y in guns

and it will

decidedly ctively ema valuable ptured and

acks, very bly directed ipied a not

by a feat
he Serbians,
chalan by
allies of its
standing a
the enemy.
arians over
ting on the
ially to the
rench which
flat and led
the offensive
iate purpose
es the main

landward route from Macedonia into Greece. By the capture of Monastir that route had been closed. At the same time it had become practicable to co-operate with the Italians from Valona.

It will have been gathered from this outline of events in the Balkans that there was between those events and the campaigns in Egypt an underlying connection. During 1916 there were campaigns in Egypt, both in Sinai and west of the Nile. The latter had been fed by traffic through Greece, and it was not until the closing of the Monastir route that the possibility of that traffic was cut off. The taking of Monastir was secondary only in importance to the occupation of Salonica itself. Cutting the landward communication of Germany with Greece, it dried up at their source those interests, avowed and unavowed, which from thence had derived vitality.

But while possibilities remained open, as they did during the whole of 1915 and part of the following year, and so long as fat though speculative profits were to be made, it would have been altogether foreign to the established characteristics of the Levant if material encouragement for a so-called Holy War in Northern

Africa had not been forthcoming.

West of the Nile valley, its northern slopes close to the coast, there is a vast plateau, ranging in height between 500 and 600 feet. Along its southern edge extends a series of oases running very nearly from southeast to north-west. These dispersed spots of fertility mark the natural boundary between the plateau and the boundless waterless and trackless inland sea of sand dunes to the south—the Libyan Desert as it is called in maps. The Arab tribes inhabiting the plateau and the oases acknowledge in a loose way the authority of the Senussi of Sollum, that authority, however, being more religious than political. Equally in a loose way, the Senussi of Sollum was politically a dependent of the Egyptian Government. The suzerainty consisted chiefly of imposing on the Senussi responsibility for keeping the tribes under his authority in order.

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST.

That his fanaticism and that of his followers should be played upon, and that he should be stirred up by presents of arms and munitions, gifts these tribesmen of the desert cannot resist, to declare a Jehad against the Infidel, was not one of the possibilities merely, but one of the probabilities. Signs of unrest began to appear as early as May, 1915. They proved to be due to the intrigues of Nuri Bey, a half-brother of Enver Pasha, and those of Gaafer Pasha. Nuri had been sent to Tripoli to open up negotiations with the Senussi, but he appears to have met with little success, for he had nothing to offer at Sollum save promises and persuasions. In due course, however, there arrived Gaafer Pasha, who backed the promises with arms and money. Gaafer was a German turned Moslem. Then affairs began to wear a different look. Outwardly and for some months the Senussi remained friendly, but in November, 1915, a succession of incidents on the frontier and on the coast left it certain that preparations had been made for war, and accordingly war was declared.

To reach Sollum from the Nile there are two routes: that along the narrow fringe of coast country north of the plateau, and that through the oases. In the Behera province of Egypt is an Arab population of some 120,000 who acknowledge the Senussi's religious headship. In order to prevent these tribesmen from raiding the cultivated country between the plateau and the Nile, it was judged the best course for the time being to draw in and concentrate the frontier posts, secure the nearer oases, and wait for the opportunity to strike at Sollum by sea. The town lies in the innermost recess of a bay surrounded on both sides by lofty hills. It had been occupied by a small British garrison of 109 men, but in view of the attitude of the tribesmen the garrison was on November 23 withdrawn by sea. Meanwhile, for frontier operations there was formed at Alexandria a force consisting of a Composite Mounted Brigade and a Composite Infantry Brigade; the former (Brigadier-General Tyndale Briscoe in command) made up of three regiments of yeomanry, one regiment of the Australian

Light Horse, the latter four battalio Middlesex, a Service equiwas given to including caoases.

Various br place. Amor on December disperse a bo naissance. I column was three squadi Battery, R.I wireless car. 1,200 strong They had ta slopes of a dr ing from the had crossed, outflanking to For a time t in support o Horse on the enabled the combat was

Another by Senussi's me they number manded by G tration within base at Matr two columns screened by of the moun distributed p work round (left) column

should be y presents the desert he Infidel. one of the ar as early e intrigues and those Tripoli to he appears nothing to asions. In asha, who y. Gaafer s began to me months nber, 1915,

n the coast

made for

wo routes: v north of the Behera me 120,000 headship. aiding the I the Nile, e being to secure the o strike at st recess of ls. It had f 109 men, he garrison Meanwhile, Alexandria d Brigade (Brigadierup of three Australian

Light Horse, and a battery of the Royal Horse Artillery, the latter—under Brigadier-General Lord Lucan—of four battalions (1/6th Royal Scots, 2/7th and 2/8th Middlesex, and 15th Sikhs). Both brigades had the Service equipment of mobile troops. The command was given to Major-General A. Wallace. Other troops, including camelry, were dispatched to occupy the oases.

Various brushes with the forces of the Senussi took place. Among the sharpest was that near Beit Hussein on December 13. A small flying column was sent out to disperse a body of tribesmen reported by aerial reconnaissance. Led by Lieut.-Colonel J. R. Gordon, the column was formed of 350 men of the 15th Sikhs: three squadrons of the 2nd Yeomanry; the Notts Battery, R.H.A.; six naval armoured cars, and one wireless car. The opposing force was found to be some 1,200 strong with machine-guns and two field pieces. They had taken up a position, well chosen, along the slopes of a dry watercourse, the Wadi Shaifa. Retreating from that position and waiting until the British had crossed, they suddenly turned, and attempted by outflanking to drive Gordon's men back into the ravine. For a time the situation looked critical, but the arrival in support of two squadrons of the Australian Light Horse on the outside of the hostile arc broke it, and enabled the British charging home to roll it up. This combat was characteristic of the campaign.

Another but more severe reverse was inflicted on the Senussi's men on December 25, more severe because they numbered this time some 5,000 and were commanded by Gaafer Pasha. On the report of the concentration within striking distance of the British advanced base at Matruh, General Wallace formed his force into two columns, the right consisting of the infantry screened by horse (the Royal Bucks Hussars) the left of the mounted men only. The guns (R.H.A.) were distributed part to each column, and the plan was to work round the enemy's right flank, the more mobile (left) column driving the hostile troops, mostly Senussi

regulars, on to the British infantry. The action took

place at Gebel Medwa, on the coast.

On the appearance of the British force the enemy retired towards the northern edge of the plateau and took up a position on a crest, beyond which, leading down to sea level, were various broad gullies. An assault upon the rising ground, the main position, was delivered by the Sikhs and New Zealanders. In the meanwhile, the Mounted Column; having ridden round to the south-west and defeated a body of horse covering the enemy's flank, pushed north towards the coast along the depression known as the Wadi Majid. The object, of course, was to cut off the enemy's retreat, for part of the British infantry column, the crest having been won, were engaged in driving the hostile force down the gullies coastwards. Gaafer's men, seeing the danger of being entrapped, thereupon broke into small detachments, and in that manner most slipped away westward along the coast route before the British horse could close the exit. But they lost heavily, and were obliged to abandon a large amount of ammunition, besides many camels and herds of cattle, their chief means of subsistence.

A third battle took place on January 22. The hostile forces, regathered, again advanced towards Matruh, accompanied on this expedition by a number of German and Turkish officers and by the Grand Senussi in person, evidently to give faith to his followers and the assurance that with the Prophet among them they must be victorious. Like the others, the purpose of this expedition was to break through and ravage the cultivated lands, the old practice of the Bedouin. No. action was taken on the British side until the arrival from Alexandria of a battalion of the South African Infantry Brigade. During the interval the enemy had encamped at Halazen, 25 miles south-west of Matruh. Hostile movements were reported by aerial reconnaissance, which had altered the conditions of desert campaigning radically.

The British force was again formed into two columns,

SALONICA

left under th under the co of the 2/8t Africans and attack. It rain never fa plateau is sy violence. O so that the foaming tor temporary s things, the from Matruh three miles i Opposing th with a van artillery, he The plan of British mou his left flank movement o the British being superi manœuvres execution, f trying marc defeated, wi to abandon destroying misfortune v with the Be

To comple campaign, it was re-occu General Sir taken over weighing the way of the o the enemy, Egypt by

SALONICA AND EGYPTIAN CAMPAIGNS, 1916

left under the command of Briscoe, the cavalry; right under the command of Gordon, the infantry, consisting of the 2/8th Middlesex, the New Zealanders, South Africans and Sikhs, who were to carry out the chief attack. It was now the rainy season, and although rain never falls in the Nile valley or in Sinai, this western plateau is swept in January by rainstorms of tropical violence. One of these had recently been experienced, so that the wadis and gullies had become the beds of foaming torrents, and great patches of the plateau temporary swamps. Taking advantage of this state of things, the enemy had occupied at Bir Shola, 16 miles from Matruh, a position having at a distance of some three miles in front of it a long tract of swampy land. Opposing the British advance round this bad patch with a vanguard supported by machine-guns and artillery, he gradually fell back upon his battle position. The plan of General Wallace was to hold him with the British mounted troops while Gordon's force fell upon his left flank. The enemy, however, had also a turning movement of his own on hand on the opposite wingthe British left—and he attempted at the same time, being superior in numbers, to outflank Gordon. Both manœuvres were skilful in design, but both failed in the execution, for although the British force had had a trying march over heavy country, these onsets were defeated, with the result that the Senussi was obliged to abandon his camp, which the British occupied, destroying a large accumulation of stores. Such a misfortune with the Senussi on the ground played havoc with the Bedouin moral.

To complete this brief sketch of the Western Egyptian campaign, it may be added that in March, 1916, Sollum was re-occupied by a British Expeditionary Force. General Sir John Maxwell, who had in the meantime taken over the command in Egypt, decided, after weighing the alternatives, to advance to that place byway of the oases. One reason for that decision was that the enemy, defeated in his attempts to break into Egypt by the northern route, had been spreading

ER EAST

action took

the enemy lateau and ch, leading ullies. An sition, was rs. In the den round se covering the coast lajid. The y's retreat, rest having ostile force ien, seeing oon broke nner most before the they lost amount of s of cattle,

The hostile ls Matruh, of German Senussi in ers and the them they pose of this e the cultidouin. No. the arrival th African enemy had of Matruh. rial recons of desert

ro columns,

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

eastward along the southern edge of the plateau. To assist aerial reconnaissance over the immense distances to be covered, a system of advanced air depots in the desert was established. The suggestion, originating with Captain van Rynfeld, R.F.C., and Mr. Jennings Bramley, of the Sudan Civil Service, proved of great

utility.

Owing no doubt to the smuggling that went on, the enemy, commanded by Gaafer, was better supplied with machine-guns and artillery than in the earlier part of the campaign, and his plan was evidently to fight from oasis to oasis, delivering counter-attacks and carrying out enveloping movements wherever possible. The British Expedition was under the command of General Peyton. Its advance was steady, but sure. On February 26 the enemy was defeated at Agagia by General Lukin. Two days later, Barrani (50 miles east of Sollum) was occupied. The hostile force, in retreat upon Sollum, had begun rapidly to melt owing to desertions.

From Barrani Sollum can be reached by the Khedivial road running north-east until it strikes the coast, or by a route across the plateau westwards. It was the latter route Gaafer and his men had taken, and, notwithstanding the water problem, it was decided to follow him up. With that view, the Expeditionary Force was disposed into two columns; one formed of the infantry and heavier transport; the other of the cavalry and camelry, with the mounted guns. The latter column was to push on to Augerin, where there was reported to be a supply of water; the former to make good a footing on the plateau towards Sollum. When, however, Augerin was reached, on March 12, the reports as to water proved to be exaggerated. At best the supply found was sufficient for a portion only of the troops. General Peyton therefore decided to move his infantry by way of the coast while General Lukin with the mounted men only pushed on by the inland road. On the morning of March 14, the two columns having reunited near Bagbag, within striking distance of

SALONICA

sollum, close enemy would town. No le he was disco his artillery. of Major the pursuit. The guns, and the Sollum was re-

From pris.
H.M.S. Tara off the coastaptivity 75 made prisone car detachment the country covered in captured sail completely sument and hidespatches.

Coincidents military auth the east.

After the il 1915—an en the formidal Turks in tha fighting. The the Suez Cabrushes with troops, but it serious attack supposed to a region, was effort would

In Januar Expeditionar John Maxwe duty of this 1 ER EAST

lateau. To se distances pots in the originating r. Jennings ed of great

ent on, the er supplied earlier part tly to fight ttacks and er possible.

but sure. at Agagia i (50 miles le force, in melt owing

e Khedivial the coast, It was the d, notwithi to follow nary Force ned of the the cavalry The latter there was er to make m. When, the reports t best the only of the o move his Lukin with land road. nns having istance of

Sollum, closed in. It had been expected that the enemy would offer battle on the heights before the town. No longer, however, in a situation to resist, he was discovered by the airmen retreating west with his artillery. The armoured cars, under the command of Major the Duke of Westminster, were sent off in pursuit. The result was the capture of all the hostile guns, and the whole of the machine-gun equipment. Sollum was reoccupied.

From prisoners it was learned that the crews of H.M.S. Tara, and H.M.T. Moorina, both torpedoed off the coast during November, 1915, were held in captivity 75 miles west of Sollum. They had been made prisoners on landing. Without delay the armoured car detachment were hurried to the rescue. Though the country was quite unknown the distance was covered in a few hours, the force guarding the captured sailors surprised and routed, and the rescue completely successful. The commander of the detachment and his men received a special mention in despatches.

Coincidentally with the campaign on the west, the military authorities in Egypt had to deal with that on

the east.

After the ill-success of the attack in Sinai in February, 1915—an enterprise which had incidentally revealed the formidable difficulties of the undertaking—the Turks in that region confined themselves to desultory fighting. They still ranged over the peninsula east of the Suez Canal, and from time to time there were brushes with the British mounted patrols and other troops, but it was not until July, 1916, that a second serious attack was undertaken. No doubt that season, supposed to be impracticable for campaigning, in such a region, was chosen because it was hoped that the effort would prove a surprise. It did not.

In January, 1916, the command of the Egyptian Expeditionary Force had been transferred from Sir John Maxwell to Sir Archibald Murray. The special duty of this Force at the time was the protection of the

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

Canal. Egypt was also a training ground for the

Overseas troops in passage there.

Probably now, looking back, it may be judged that too large a strength was kept immobilised for a merely defensive function, and beyond doubt this political nervousness hampered operations alike in Mesopotamia and in the Balkans. Sir Archibald Murray records that in January, 1916, "though his (the enemy's) new means of communication in Southern Syria and Sinai, commenced with a view to an attack upon the Suez Canal, were still in a backward state, he undoubtedly had at his disposal the troops, amounting to 250,000 men or more, necessary to such an attack." Most likely this intelligence was true, but in this instance communications were the core of the problem, not numbers. A quarter of a million men at Damascus were a very different proposition from a quarter of a million men on the Suez Canal, and the greater the number necessary the greater the enigma of their transport. It was not merely ten times more difficult to transport 25,000 than 250,000. Under the conditions it was a hundred times more difficult. In fact, without command of the sea it was impossible.

The Hedjaz railway from Damascus to Mecca having been laid down before the war, there was apparently a belief at Constantinople that the obstacles to the transit of a very large force across Sinai might be overcome by the laying down of light railways and the establishment of depots en route. And no doubt they could have been were the command of the sea ensured, or even had there been no risk of attack or diversion by sea, though in the latter case the scheme was the less easy. The Germans, however, could assure neither of these conditions. What they thought they might rely upon was British lack of military boldness and failure to exploit the advantages of sea supremacy. In any event, the scheme for a time hung fire, for after the fall of Erzerum the concentration of troops at Damascus had to be drawn upon until it was reported to have been reduced to a total of 60,000 men only. This

SALONICA

seems to have of the menace kind.

One of the f the occupation of a railway to at the norther and though lit wells for a con account adviwhen the rail miles of line 1 Quatia in stre Several Britis out, Quatia v The Turks w only a squadr Wiggin, in cor advanced to enough to pr cident of this British post a Royal Scots Roberts. Ha against the he heavy attacl determination form of the 4t The Turks. and pursued had come up service was, Royal Flyin camps at Bireffect. Quat

During Ma from reports 1 forces in Sin resolved to (Wadi um M

for the

R EAST

ged that a merely political opotamia records ly's) new nd Sinai. the Suez oubtedly 250,000 ost likely ice comnumbers. e a very n men on necessary was not 000 than ed times

a having parently s to the be overand the ubt they ensured, ersion by the less either of ight rely failure to In any r the fall)amascus to have ly. This

the sea

seems to have been considered a proportional reduction of the menace to Egypt. In truth it was nothing of the kind.

One of the first steps taken by the British in 1916 was the occupation of the district Quatia and the construction of a railway to that place. Geographically this district, at the northern end of the Canal, is part of the Nile delta, and though little cultivated, affords sufficient water from wells for a considerable body of troops. It was on that account advisable to occupy it in force. In April, when the railway was nearing completion, only seven miles of line not being yet laid down, the Turks raided Quatia in strength, and there was some severe fighting. Several British posts having been driven in or wiped out, Quatia was attacked by the enemy on April 22. The Turks were some 2,500 strong, and the garrison only a squadron of the Gloucester Yeomanry. General Wiggin, in command of a column of yeomanry, forthwith advanced to its relief, but, unfortunately, not in time enough to prevent the capture of the place. An incident of this fighting was the gallant defence of the British post at Dueidar, held by 100 men of the 5th Royal Scots Fusiliers under the command of Captain Roberts. Handling his men with conspicuous skill against the heaviest odds, Captain Roberts beat off two heavy attacks, though delivered with the utmost determination, and held out until relief arrived in the form of the 4th Royal Scots Fusiliers (Major Thompson). The Turks, counter-attacked, were totally defeated and pursued by the 5th Australian Light Horse, who had come up during the engagement. Very brilliant service was, during this fighting, rendered by the Royal Flying Corps. They attacked the Turkish camps at Bir-el-Abd and Bir-el-Bayud with conspicuous Quatia was reoccupied. effect.

During May there were minor operations only, but from reports received the enemy was again concentrating forces in Sinai. As a precautionary measure, it was resolved to drain the pools and rock cisterns in the Wadi um Muksheib, 40 miles to the south-east of

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

Ismailia. The work was carried out by detachments of engineers, covered by a column of Australian Light Horse, and the Bikanir Camel Corps. It occupied from June 10 to June 14. The force, under the direction of Lieut.-Colonel T. J. Todd, worked night and day.

For a considerable time the British railhead east of the canal had been at Oghratina, seven miles from Quatia, and there was no Turkish force nearer than Bir-el-Mazor. 18 miles to the east. But on the 18th and 19th July apparently a Turkish force some 9,000 strong moved westward from El Arish, and was ascertained by an air reconnaissance on the evening of July 19 to be occupying a front from Bir-el-Abd to Bir-el-Bayud. Next day this force advanced to Oghratina, which the British were compelled to evacuate. The hostile column was discovered to be the 3rd Turkish Division, provided with mountain guns, special machine-gun companies, and heavy artillery; the heavy guns manned by Germans and Austrians, and the machine-gun companies under German officers. According to the information given by prisoners, the 3rd Division was only the advance guard of a larger body of troops one day's march behind them. The 3rd Division was accompanied by a body of Arab camelry commanded by Colonel Kress von Kressenstein. The equipment, including wireless sections and field hospitals, had, it was afterwards found, been schemed out in Germany for desert campaigning.

This Turkish Expedition hugged the coast, and the British measures were a bombardment by monitors of the hostile trenches and camps and a harrying by mobile and mounted troops of the enemy's left flank and rear.

For some days the expected attack failed to develop, but on August 3 it had become apparent that there would be a thrust between Romani and Mahemdia on the coast. To check this a line of British outposts had been established. On August 4 the outpost line was attacked. Although the first assault was beaten off, the line was driven in. By now the hostile plan was clear; it was to shell with the heavy guns from the east

SALONICA

the fortified l time to assaul The total e

General La had determin by the main b stroke against the impetus against the fe from amid the backing of m pletely succe In the pursui enemy were included a he guns, with a for camel tra rifle and mad horses and r stores, and to in the action second attem fortunate ente

SALONICA AND EGYPTIAN CAMPAIGNS, 1916

the fortified line defending the Canal and at the same time to assault it in flank from the south.

The total enemy strength engaged was some 18,000 men.

General Lawrence, commandant of the British troops, had determined to meet the southern attack, delivered by the main body of the Turkish infantry, with a counterstroke against their left flank and rear. Held back until the impetus of the Turkish assault had spent itself against the fortified line, and then suddenly launched from amid the screen of the sand dunes with a powerful backing of mounted men, the counter-thrust was completely successful, and the Turkish defeat decisive. In the pursuit, continued for three days, 4,000 of the enemy were rounded up. Captures of equipment included a heavy Krupp gun, a battery of mountain guns, with accessories, machine-guns with mountings for camel transport, 2,300 rifles, a million rounds of rifle and machine-gun ammunition, 500 camels, 100 horses and mules, a large amount of miscellaneous stores, and two field hospitals. The enemy casualties in the action were some 5,000 men. Thus ended the second attempt upon the Canal, an even more unfortunate enterprise than the first.

develop, at there emdia on osts had line was aten off, plan was the east

R EAST

ments of

n Light

occupied direction

l east of

n Quatia.

el-Mazor,

9th July

g moved

d by an

9 to be

l-Bayud.

hich the

e column

provided

mpanies,

ned by

ompanies

ormation

advance

h behind

body of

n Kresssections nd, been ning. and the monitors rying by eft flank

d day.

CHAPTER XIV

THE RECAPTURE OF KUT AND THE TAKING OF BAGDAD

Sir Stanley Maude appointed to the Mesopotamia Command—Decides upon an offensive—Reasons for it—The preparations—British Staff and Administrative work—Improvement of the River Transport and other Services—Movement of Reinforcements up the Tigris—Enemy's counter-measures—Strength of the defences round Kut—Maude's strategy—British cross the Shatt-el-Hai—Threat to the Turkish right-rear—Bombardment at Sanna-i-yat—Enemy defences east of the Hai captured—Defences astride of the Hai stormed—Assault on the Dahri bend defences—British attacks at Sanna-i-yat—Enemy's dilemma—Capture of the Shumran bend, the key of Kut—Turks evacuate the town—The British pursuit—Destruction of the enemy's river flotilla—British advance to Zana—Advance to Ctesiphon—The Diala reached, March 7, 1917—Change in British tactics—The defence outmanœuvred—Bagdad railway terminus occupied—Crossing of the Diala—Turkish retreat—British entry into Bagdad (March 11)—Turkish defensive crippled.

SIR PERCY LAKE remained in command of the Expeditionary Force in Mesopotamia until August, 1916. From the fall of Kut until that date operations were both of a minor character and in the main defensive. Neither the numerical strength nor the health of the troops allowed of much beyond the work or regularising the occupation of the wide territory now under British control. In addition to the vilayet of Basra it embraced the region of the lower Euphrates.

In August the command was transferred to Sir Stanley Maude. At the outbreak of the War Maude was on the Staff of the 5th Division. Joining the Army in 1884 with a commission in the Coldstream Guards, he had

seen service
where he won
Staff appoin
Brigade in
France in Se
the retreat, w
recovered. 1
General he w
and with the
It was the
efforts to relimander of ge
Surveying

responsibility perceived the to contain t cidentally to reduce that two courses (circumstances owing alike to the conflicting meant such a be passive. (The true sol attack. A re centrated for threaten Bag which the en Persia and in I

But if the as undoubtedl it to ensure t parations for three and a l long. The heatheir training precarious, ha

react both on

region of the

THE RECAPTURE OF KUT

seen service in the Soudan, and also in the Boer War, where he won the D.S.O. From 1901 he had filled various Staff appointments. In command of the 14th Infantry Brigade in the British Expeditionary Force sent to France in September, 1914, he fought at Mons, and in the retreat, was sent home severely wounded, but happily recovered. Promoted on recovery to the rank of Major-General he was given the command of the 18th Division, and with them took part in the operations in Gallipoli. It was the work and efficiency of his division in the efforts to relieve Kut which marked him out as a com-

mander of genius.

Surveying the situation in Mesopotamia when the responsibility for it devolved upon him, General Maude perceived that the enemy's plan was for the time being to contain the British forces on the Tigris and coincidentally to develop in Persia an offensive designed to reduce that country to a dependency. Between the two courses of defence and attack which might in the circumstances be followed on the British side, the first, owing alike to the extent of territory to be covered and the conflicting interests which demanded protection, meant such a dispersal of forces that the resistance must be passive. On that ground General Maude rejected it. The true solution of the problem, he decided, was attack. A resolute offensive entered upon with concentrated, forces and carried on with energy would threaten Bagdad, and Bagdad was the centre from which the enemy's operations were conducted alike in Persia and in Mesopotamia. Successful, this stroke would react both on the hostile activities in Persia and in the region of the Euphrates.

But if the true solution of the problem was attack, as undoubtedly it was, then all the more necessary was it to ensure that attack should not fail. To his preparations for the offensive General Maude devoted three and a half months. Nor was the interval too long. The health of the troops had to be improved, and their training taken in hand. Communications, still precarious, had to be made efficient, and the transport

Stanley s on the in 1884 he had

-Decides

s-British

he River ements up

e defences

t-el-Hai-

anna-i-yat

astride of s-British

of the own—The

a-British

reached,

ence out-

ossing of March 11)

the Ex-

st, 1916.

ns were

of the

larising

British

nbraced

fensive.

its effects are

soundness of

issues was his

spare himself.

inspection and

himself that tl

good working

one side to Al

the Tigris fro

equipment and

Force which v

had been conc

in Mesopotamia

appears, howev

British offensi

of Kut, been inc

with the cam;

on the Tigris

perfectly just v

Persian campa

could not be d

successful in th

that means a

Farther East,

resources upon

anticipatory ble

way of wreckin

the defences of

of the British &

April had dem

while, the posit

only were there

between the Tis

defences had be

itself, a distance

maze. And on

bend, held also

On two grou

On his side t

In Novembe

question dealt with, Sufficient reserves of supplies and munitions also had to be massed and got up to the front. Among other organisation work, Sir Percy Lake, with results now to prove of the highest value, had given his attention to the conversion of Basra into a suitable military port and base. Railways had been laid down; steps taken to check the effects of the inundations which in the spring of every year spread over the lowlands bordering the Shatt-el-Arab; river transport was placed under a permanent directorate; and other directorates created for Port Administration and Conservancy, Works, Railways, Supply, and Ordnance. For these experienced men had been sent out, and at the same time additional river-craft. The foundation laid had been solid. Yet another directorate created had been that of Local Resources. Under a just administration and with a properly guided distribution Mesopotamia was capable of furnishing not inconsiderable supplies and of thus relieving overseas transport. The means of distribution, an advantage alike to the inhabitants and the army, had been wanting. They were now organised. At the same time the Medical Service was strengthened and the hospital accommodation enlarged. Coincidentally the Remount and Veterinary Services were overhauled and improved.

The revision extended to the Army. General Maude regrouped his formations, saw that each unit had its proper establishment, and tuned up the Staff. With characteristic thoroughness he went into the question of communications, knowing their primary importance. The defences of lines already existent were recast and further lines for administrative purposes opened up so that they might not interfere with those of the strictly Expeditionary operations. As supplemental also to the river service, the land transport attendant upon the Force was made more complete by the provision alike of animals and of vehicles. In brief, the three and a half months taken up were a period of incessant activity. It is not work which bulks largely in the public eye, and seldom receives mention in debates or newspapers, but

258

lies and to the ev Lake, ad given suitable down; ns which lowlands ort was d other nd Conrdnance. nd at the tion laid ted had adminison Mesosiderable ransport. e to the . They Medical

al Maude
t had its
f. With
testion of
portance.
cast and
ed up so
e strictly
so to the
upon the
ion alike
nd a half
activity.
eye; and
pers, but

modation

eterinary

its effects are enduring. Not more remarkable than the soundness of General Maude's judgment on the main issues was his grasp of detail. Personally he did not spare himself. He visited every point where direct inspection and inquiry were advisable, and assured himself that the machinery was both completed and in good working order. Taking no risks, he toured on the one side to Ahwaz, and on the other to Nazariyeh.

In November reinforcements had begun to move up the Tigris from Basra, accompanied by the needed equipment and stores. At the end of that month the Force which was to strike the intended blow at Kut had been concentrated above Sheik Saad. The Army

in Mesopotamia was at the top of its form.

On his side the enemy had not wholly been idle. He appears, however, to have acted upon the belief that a British offensive in Mesopotamia had, after the loss of Kut, been indefinitely suspended, and, occupied chiefly with the campaign in Persia, had contented himself on the Tigris with stiffening his defences. It was a perfectly just view that his aim, pending the issue of the Persian campaign, was to contain the British, and it could not be doubted, accepting these premisses, that, successful in the Persian campaign, and opening up by that means a menace to the British positions in the Farther East, he intended then to turn with all his resources upon Mesopotamia. A powerfully delivered anticipatory blow was at once the surest and quickest way of wrecking that scheme.

On two grounds the Germans and Turks considered the defences of Kut to be impregnable. The failure of the British attacks upon the Sanna-i-yat position in April had demonstrated its strength. In the meanwhile, the position had been further elaborated. Not only were there six successive lines of entrenchments between the Tigris and the Suweikiya Marsh, but other defences had been made extending back as far as Kut itself, a distance of fifteen miles. It was an extraordinary maze. And on the other side of Kut was the Shumran bend, held also to be uncapturable, covered as it was by

a bridgehead position on the right (or southern) bank of the river. This bridgehead had been strengthened. in the first instance by a line of outer defences extending north-east to south-west from the Tigris to the Shatt-el-Hai, cutting off the Khadairi bend. Crossing the Shatt-el-Hai two miles from its confluence with the Tigris, the outer line struck then north-west, reaching the great river again opposite the end of the Shumran bend. It may here be observed that the several bends, taking them on the way upstream, were the Khadairi (right bank), the Kut peninsula (left bank), the Dahra (right bank) and the Shumran (left bank). But besides the outer defences there was on the south side of the Tigris an inner system, divided into three sections any one of which might be held independently of the others, or any two independently of the third. They were, east of the Hai, the works in the Khadairi bend; a central position astride of the Hai; and the works west of the Hai in the Dahra bend. The works on the right bank of the river and those on the left bank were linked up by two pontoon bridges, one near the mouth of the Shatt-el-Hai, the other on the east side of the Shumran peninsula. It is not surprising that the enemy thought himself secure.

On weighing up the situation, however, General Maude saw that strategically its advantages were in his favour. To begin with, if he attacked the position at Sanna-i-yat he could do so without being in turn exposed to any counter-assault on his right flank, for the great extent of the Suweikiya Marsh imposed a long détour. It was open to him therefore to demonstrate against those defences with perfect safety on his own side. Next he seized upon the fact that if he struck on the right bank of the river and could establish himself on the Shatt-el-Hai, the enemy would be obliged to fight front to flank, that is, with his battle line and his communications parallel, a position which in the event of defeat would render retreat difficult, and in any event disorderly. Thirdly, the enemy could not turn the British left, so that, secure also on that flank, the British might strike at the Turkish communications

from across the In short, the kei-yat, but the feasible to ope and that also

The main T concentration Kut side of t that Sanna-i-v attempt. The strategy indee altogether. N any event hav was its best c liance, entirel flanks of the security made the line along the weak spo point for cross the Turkish fo time, so-that have to be ev striking across munications. Turkish comm design was tl British operat Sanna-i-vat d strength had b of the offensive covering the S

For the pu formed his trougeneral Sir A. yat; that un move against t

This march before Es Sinn At six the fol

THE RECAPTURE OF KUT

ER EAST

nern) bank

engthened.

extending

e Shatt-el-

Tigris, the

the great

bend. It

ds, taking

dairi (right

ahra (right

besides the

f the Tigris

any one of

ners, or any

east of the

ral position

Hai in the

of the river

re Shatt-el-

n peninsula.

nself secure.

er, General

ges were in

the position

ing in turn

right flank,

sh imposed

e to demon-

afety on his

if he struck

ld establish

would be

h his battle

sition which

difficult, and

y could not

n that flank,

munications

up by two

e Shatt-el-

from across the Tigris as far west as was practicable. In short, the key to Kut and its defences was not Sannai-yat, but the bridgehead. That taken, it would be feasible to open an attack upon the Shumran position,

and that also taken Kut was won. The main Turkish forces had, in view of the British concentration at Sheik Saad, been withdrawn to the Kut side of the river, the anticipation evidently being that Sanna-i-yat would again be the terrain of the chief The real point of the British commander's strategy indeed at first escaped the enemy's attention altogether. Nor was the real point one which would in any event have been easy to divine, for its very boldness was its best disguise. And its boldness lay in the reliance, entirely justified, upon the security of both flanks of the British line against counter-attack. That security made it possible with little risk to stretch out the line along the right bank of the river in feelers for the weak spot of the defence and the most effective point for crossing. Obliged to hold on at Sanna-i-yat, the Turkish forces would be stretched out at the same time, so that either the position at Sanna-i-yat would have to be evacuated, or the peril faced of the British striking across the Tigris westward and cutting communications. In short, the design was to impede the Turkish commander on the horns of a dilemma, and this design was the less apparent because seemingly the British operations did open with an assault upon the Sanna-i-yat defences. Nor was it until the enemy's strength had been massed in that quarter that the weight of the offensive was seen to be swung against the defences. covering the Shatt-el-Hai.

For the purpose of the British operations Maude formed his troops into two columns. That under Lieut.-General Sir A. S. Cobbe, V.C., was to attack at Sannaiyat; that under Lieut.-General Sir W. R. Marshall to move against the Hai defences by a surprise march.

This march, the column having been concentrated before Es Sinn, took place on the night of December 13. At six the following morning, the Hai was crossed at

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST.

two points—Basrugiyeh and Atah. Pivoting on its right, the column then moved north, the infantry on the east side of the Hai, the cavalry on the west side. Enemy advanced posts were thus driven in. The move had proved a surprise because on the preceding day (December 13) General Cobbe had opened a bombard-

ment of the Sanna-i-yat defences.

Having launched his stroke, General Maude acted Pontoons and other materials being already pushed across the country in the rear of Marshall's column, the Hai was on December 14 bridged at Atah. But the enemy had been quick to appreciate the threat these operations implied, for his first proceeding was the removal of his own pontoon bridge east of Shumran to a point higher up stream, though that work on the night of December 14 was seriously interfered with by British airmen, who, flying by moonlight, bombed the pontoons, causing some of them to break adrift. The enemy bridge over the Tigris near the mouth of the Hai was broken up by gunfire, and pontoon rafts, used as ferries, sunk. This done, General Marshall extended his grip upon the Turkish defences, and by December 18 had succeeded in cutting in opposite Kut between the outer Turkish defences east of the Hai and those west of it. The position at its apex was at once most difficult to defend, and most exposed to cross fire.

This beginning had been good, and despite the heavy rains which fell in the latter part of December, 1916, and the first week of January, 1917, converting large tracts of the country into swamps, and causing a rapid rise of the Tigris, activities were not suspended. The light railway was pushed forward as far as the Shattel-Hai; additional bridges were thrown over that waterway, and new roads made. Raids carried out against the Turkish communications resulted in captures of stock and grain. But although the bombardment of the Sanna-i-yat defences by Cobbe's force continued, the enemy had now become well awake to the threat against his right rear. He had accordingly rebuilt his pontoon

bridge to the west of the Shumran bend.

in the high cutting the Some 2,600 of the Hai of Fort to near closing a rousides by the from the outfor covereda formidable was a second in width, als

On Dece

at Sanna a

as Kut, an

to bridge

attempt die

side was f

gallantly es

be given ur

on the Wo

severed, th

east and v

open the c

Kut by me

hold them a

clear them

dealt with.

things the

Notwiths

The defen expanse both along the riv sequently to unceasing rai the hostile d

right of the

the Tigris w

tered the fern

fantry on west side. The move ding day bombard-

ide acted galready Marshall's at Atah. he threat g was the mran to a on the red with mbed the rift. The f the Hai , used as ended his ember 18 ween the lose west t difficult

he heavy er, 1916, ing large g a rapid ded. The ne Shattver that it against s of stock t of the ued, the t against pontoon On December 20, under cover of a bombardment both at Sanna and from that position along the Tigris as far as Kut, an attempt had been made by a British column to bridge the river four miles above Shumran. The attempt did not succeed. The bank on the farther (left) side was found to be strongly entrenched. Though gallantly essayed, the launching of the pontoons had to be given up owing to the severity of the hostile fire.

Notwithstanding that their lateral communications on the Woolpress village side of the river had been severed, the Turks, clinging to their footholds both east and west of and astride the Shatt-el-Hai, kept open the communications between these positions and Kut by means of ferries, and appeared determined to hold them at all costs. It became necessary therefore to clear them out. The position east of the Hai was first dealt with. Time was not to be lost, for among other things the enemy had control of the river bunds, and in the high flood season, now approaching, might, by cutting these embankments, swamp the British lines. Some 2,600 yards in length, the Turkish inner line east of the Hai extended from the Tigris above the Megasis Fort to near the mouth of the Shatt-el-Hai, thus enclosing a roughly quadrangular tract, bounded on three sides by the river. A double row of sandhills 200 yards from the outfall of the Shatt-el-Hai had been utilised for covered-in machine-gun emplacements, and formed a formidable point of support. Behind this first line was a second, the intervening ground, 500 to 1,000 yards in width, also entrenched. Finally, linked up with the right of the second line and immediately adjacent to the Tigris was another group of sandhills, which sheltered the ferries from direct fire. The sandhills formed a last position.

The defences commanded a field of fire across an expanse both flat and, save for a fringe of brushwood along the river bank, bare. The fortified line had consequently to be approached by sapping. Amid almost unceasing rain, and exposed to persistent fire both from the hostile defences in front and from enemy batteries

on the farther side of the river, the troops of General Cobbe's column, who had been told off for the work, dug, between January 5 and January 7, some 25,000 yards of saps and trenches, and advanced to within

200 yards.

Opened on January 7, the bombardment was continued throughout January 8. On January 9 the first assault was launched. The point selected was the section of the defences, 600 yards long, nearest the Shatt-el-Hai. It happened, unfortunately, that the morning was This helped the attacking marked by a thick mist. troops in the first rush, but hampered the artillery support, and it enabled the enemy to prepare and launch a counter-attack. Fierce hand-to-hand fighting ensued. On the left of the British attack were the Gurkhas and Receiving and throwing back the weight Mahrattas. of the hostile onset, and pressing on, they reached the The enemy now found his own right exposed, and his next move was to throw his weight against the British right and try to press them back against the Shatt-el-Hai. The British right, formed of the Manchesters and an Indian brigade, could not, however, be dislodged from the footing they had gained. The ground won was consolidated.

Next day the British attack was renewed. Foot by foot the Turks resisted, but they were cleared out of one trench after another, and at nightfall held only the last

position among the second group of sandhills.

The third day opened with an assault on this foothold. The thrust got home, but had to give way before a counter-attack. Encouraged by his success, the enemy, unfortunately for himself, tried to push farther forward. His movement resulted in a heavy reverse. The Sikhs here fought magnificently. In view of the cost of attempting openly to rush the enemy's final position, it was deemed advisable to complete trenches enabling the assaulting troops to assemble under cover. This labour occupied five days. On its completion a Turkish redoubt so constructed as to enfilade the British assault—this work had already given trouble—was stormed in a

night operat driven out. Next mornin time. The g 19. During kept up a ver day broke it sandhills had

The fightin the most part that it had al was heavy figures was no

The next state mouth of those in the bend. Ingenithought Kut a south side. If the river the fortified Shum so far as field the place had class, and was

The central altogether an c one maze of instance litera though the art inadequate-G theless the pro service had bee witnessed in o really hung up It happened, of the Exped his usual goo inclined to be habitual coolne spirit and subs General e work, 25,000 within

ntinued assault n of the -el-Hai. ng was tacking ery suplaunch ensued. has and weight hed the xposed, nst the nst the e Manver, be ground

oot by of one the last

othold.
efore a
enemy,
rward.
e Sikhs
sost of
tion, it
nabling
This
'urkish

assault

ed in a

night operation. The British who had taken it were driven out. They took it again, and were again ejected. Next morning they seized the work a third—and last—time. The general attack had been fixed for January 19. During part of the night of the 18th the Turks kept up a very active rifle and machine-gun fire. When day broke it was found that their whole position on the sandhills had been evacuated.

The fighting since January 7 had been severe, and for the most part hand to hand. Events proved, however, that it had already vitally damaged the defence. There was heavy fighting still ahead, but from this time the

issue was no longer in any doubt.

The next step was the capture of the defences astride the mouth of the Hai—the connecting link between those in the Khadairi bend and those in the Dahra bend. Ingeniously designed as they had been, the enemy thought Kut could not be successfully assaulted from this south side. Since, too, there were on the north side of the river the Sanna-i-yat maze below and the strongly fortified Shumran bend above Kut, it will be seen that, so far as field works and engineering skill could do it, the place had been converted into a fortress of the first class, and was intended to remain on that footing.

The central hostile position astride the Hai presented altogether an outer face, 3,800 yards in length, and formed one maze of works and diggings, and maze is in this instance literally the exact term to employ. Further, though the artillery support on the British side was not inadequate—General Maude had seen to that—nevertheless the problem of transport, improved as the river service had been, did not admit of the phenomenal gunfire witnessed in operations in Europe. The task of capture really hung upon the valour and skill of the infantry. It happened, however, that the Commander-in-Chief of the Expedition had chosen his lieutenants with his usual good judgment. General Marshall, while inclined to bold methods, qualified that trait with habitual coolness. He was decisive, quick to seize the spirit and substance of an order, never lost time, and

was legitimately confident, because clear-minded. General Cobbe, with a far from common knowledge of the co-operation of infantry, artillery and horse, and of what they could and what they could not do, was always to be depended upon to employ his force with the maximum of effect. Such practical qualities were invaluable. There were no risks of hitches and breakdowns; no essentials overlooked. Admirable troops, so led, might confidently be asked to undertake difficult tasks.

The assault on the central position, opened on January 25 by General Marshall's column, carried the whole of the first line. While making good, the British were repeatedly counter-attacked. These efforts were marked by desperation. More than once it came to bayonet fighting. But in that the Turks lost heavily. On the western side of the Hai more particularly there were during the 25th four of these enemy onsets. The first failed completely; the second, pressed with determination as far as the captured line, was finally beaten by a charge of the Warwicks, who with admirable gallantry advanced across the open to where the mêlée was fiercest, and turned the scale. The third reaction was smashed by the British batteries. The enemy, nevertheless, made yet another effort, prefaced by a concentration of his guns and trench mortars. Under cover of that fire he on this western sector won his defences back.

It was a Pyrrhic triumph all the same, and temporary at that, for not only had the cost been excessive, but when two Punjabi battalions were sent forward to renew the assault on the morning of the 26th they cleared the battered trenches with a rush and put on this part of the business what proved the finishing touch.

From January 26 until February 1 there were repeated assaults and bombing attacks on both faces of the salient. But on the latter date the hostile third line east of the Hai was carried by the Cheshires, who bombed along its entire length. On the west side the struggle went on until February 3. By that time nothing was left of the salient it had taken the enemy months to fortify, save

the Liquori
the line cov
severe. T
dead, for t
both in er
batteries h
words of G
shown dur
and not le
his tenacity
and resolut
which was

Alike by by the casu by this have But apart f there is no last at all the Turk is desperate be back of it. the other e the Turkish that in any a British ad military wis became mor the relief o available.

The third that upon to February 6 of fire at ir days, and a posts. One and the ho rather broad lateral triang to assault to extreme right

THE RECAPTURE OF KUT

the Liquorice Factory at its north-west corner, adjoining the line covering the Dahra bend. The fighting had been Trenches were found crowded with Turkish dead, for the British gunners had excelled themselves do, was both in energy and in the boldness with which their with the batteries had been pushed forward. To quote also the were inwords of General Maude on the qualities of the infantry shown during the operations in the Khadairi bend. and not less applicable here, "the enemy, in spite of difficult his tenacity, had more than met his match in the dash and resolution of our troops, and had learned a lesson January

which was to become more deeply engrained." Alike by the now yawning breach in his works, and by the casualties inflicted on his force, the enemy must by this have realised that he was waging a losing battle. But apart from the belief in the impregnability of Kut, there is no doubt that the orders were to hold out to the last at all costs. In the defence of fortified positions the Turk is at his best, and the resistance had been desperate because there was nothing immediately at the back of it. Thrown on the one hand into Persia, or on the other ear-marked for the project against Egypt, the Turkish forces had been scattered in the confidence that in any event Kut would prove an absolute bar to a British advance. Every day the political as well as the military wisdom of General Maude's decision to attack became more evident. No enemy troops advanced to the relief of the hard-pressed garrison. None were available.

The third phase of the attack on the right bankthat upon the defences in the Dahra bend-opened on February 6 with a bombardment continued by bursts of fire at irregular intervals during the two following days, and accompanied by enterprises against advance posts. One by one these were cleared off the ground, and the hostile front exposed. The Dahra bend is rather broad than narrow, in shape almost an equilateral triangle. It was determined in the first instance to assault the Turkish line in the centre and on its extreme right. In the centre the King's Own broke in:

267

R EAST

-minded. vledge of e, and of d breake troops,

whole of ish were e marked bayonet On the ere were The first terminaten by a gallantry fiercest, smashed ertheless, entration of that ack. mporary ive, but

to renew ared the his part repeated salient.

st of the along its went on ft of the fy, save

on the right the Worcesters. Working towards Yssufiyah, the Worcesters reached the Tigris opposite the southern end of the Shumran peninsula and entrenched.

Then on February 10 a grip was taken on the enemy's left, adjacent to the Liquorice Factory. Steps were now set afoot to connect up the breaches there and in the centre. Though enfiladed by fire from across the river at Kut, replied to on the British side with a sustained bombardment, the Buffs and Gurkhas cleared the intermediate section of the defences, joined up with the King's Own, and in company with them pushed forward. There had thus been torn in the position a gap 2,000 yards wide and 300 yards deep. The Liquorice Factory, no longer defensible, was abandoned. By February 13 the Turkish defences in the bend had been isolated. Communications across the Tigris were kept

under continuous bombardment.

A final assault delivered on February 15 against the extreme left of the hostile position as it now existed the front as driven in ran diagonally across the Dahra bend from south-west to north-east—by unmasking the enemy's batteries, revealed his expectation that the weight of the renewed British attack would fall on his left. As a fact, the sector picked out for the real assault was the right centre. In view, however, alike of his own expectations and of the feint the enemy had massed his main force on his left, and a British barrage was put down to keep it there. At the same time, the Welsh Fusiliers and the South Wales Borderers, launched against the sector marked out, went forward with irresistible dash, broke through on a front of 700 yards, bombed along the defences over another 1,000 yards, and pushed the Turks back nearly a third of a mile. Counter-attacks, when they developed, had none of the elan of those in the fighting for the central position astride the Hai. Immediately after the Welshmen, and on their right, the Buffs and Dogras went in, and wheeling to north cut off the enemy's left. Rushed back to the banks of the Tigris, his surviving troops there laid down their arms. They numbered about 1,000. All

that now is section of it to the river intended the but two composite the more active own initiation the intended into the intended intended into the intended into the intended into the intended into the intended intended into the intended into the intended into the intended into the intended intended into the intended intend

Now beg position in as the key operations. intention a the capture Cobbe oper when the g rain, seem took the T of Turkish once recov gathered hi full weight the Turkis failed to ho April were impression For three Then the a of the line. for a blow once more t first and se counter-att The British battle had more brillis had at one s Yssusite the enched. enemy's ere now l in the ne river stained ed the p with ned fora gap quorice By d been re kept

nst the isted— Dahra nasking nat the on his assault of his massed ras put Welsh inched h irreyards, yards, mile. one of osition n, and and d back re laid . All

that now remained of the Dahra bend position was a section of rear trenches on the Turkish right, contiguous to the river and about a mile in extent, and it had been intended to attack these on the morning of the 16th, but two companies of a Gurkha battalion in the line opposite this point, disappointed at not having been more actively employed, essayed a night raid on their own initiative; crept over in the darkness; broke into the position, and before daylight had seized it from end to end, adding 264 to the total of 2,005

prisoners.

Now began another phase of the operations

Now began another phase of the operations. position in the Shumran bend had been uncovered, and as the key of Kut, it was the point of the main impending operations. But it remained advisable to disguise that intention as far as possible. On the day therefore after the capture of the Dahra bend defences (February 16), Cobbe opened his assault at Sanna-i-yat. Delivered when the ground, owing to a day and a night of soaking rain, seemed impracticable, the opening movement took the Turks by surprise. The first and second lines of Turkish trenches were taken with little loss. But once recovered from his astonishment the enemy gathered his strength for a counterblow, backed by the full weight of his guns and trench mortars, and though the Turkish counter-attacks were costly the British failed to hold. It looked, indeed, as if the experiences of April were to be repeated. Of course that was the impression that the enemy had been intending to form. For three days Cobbe's force was seemingly inactive. Then the assault was repeated, and at the same point of the line. Again the enemy was surprised, not looking for a blow in the same place, and for the second time, once more too with but slight British losses, the Turkish first and second lines were broken through. Six enemy counter-attacks resulted. On this occasion they failed. The British were not to be dislodged. Rarely in any battle had tenacity been either more sharply tried or more brilliantly displayed. Where the line swayed it had at once been restored. On the right, held by the

Seaforths, it had refused even to sway. The Highlanders stood like the granite of their native mountains.

Nor was this stratagem the only resource. A bombardment of Kut had been opened from across the river, and preparations made for throwing a bridge over from the Liquorice Factory. While pains were apparently taken to conceal them, the preparations were pushed on during daylight, as if time were precious. The device had the effect intended. Occupied with the defence of Sanna, and watching his position at Shumran, the Turkish commander now became concerned for his centre. It was weak. To stiffen it he moved more of his force from Shumran into the Kut peninsula. To move them back to Shumran meant a détour of ten miles. nearly a day's march. Lest, however, there should be any mistake a detachment of Punjabis, accompanied by Sappers and Miners and Sikh Pioneers, carried out

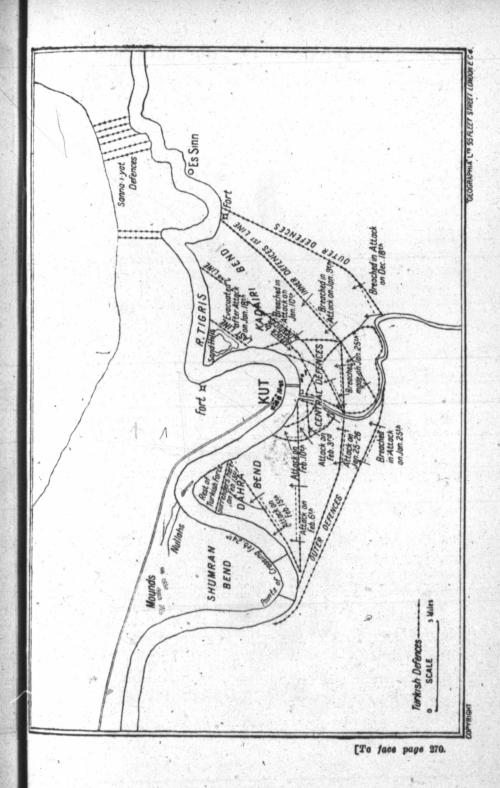
a raid across the river from the Megasis Fort.

This change in the enemy dispositions accomplished, the point picked out for crossing was the south end of the Shumran bend. The covering troops, the Norfolks and two battalions of Gurkhas, were silently ferried over before daybreak (February 23). The Norfolks caught the Turks literally napping, rounded up 200 prisoners, and took five machine-guns. But the Gurkhas, lower downstream, were less fortunate. While still afloat, their pontoon rafts were swept by a machine-gun fusillade. It would have been legitimate in the circumstances to give up the attempt. Notwithstanding their serious losses, however, the Gurkhas declined to go back, landed, and joined up on the right of the Norfolks. Supported by a fourth battalion ferried over where the Norfolks had landed, the covering troops then advanced on a west and east line, and by the afternoon had cleared the southern end of the peninsula to the depth of a mile. Meanwhile, the rest of the bend had been laid under a British cross fire over the river from the West, and meanwhile too the bridging had gone on. By half-past four in the afternoon the bridge was ready for traffic, and by EAST

Highmoun-

bomss the
ge over
appars were
ecious.
ith the
imran,
for his
of his
move
miles,
uld be
panied
ed out

lished, of the cs and lover caught coners, lower, their illade, ces to erious back, folks. The the anced leared mile. der a nean-rifour and by



nightfall the Already the attacks, had on this day further into t fourth lines.

By dawn o were on the bend in their outlet. Here north-east va lines of wall c tage of; to ruins. The reconnaissanc that his mai that the opp were driven loss of 1,650 sands of rifle equipment and 24) broke the Sanna, and t from Falahiye

During the guard at Shu of the 25th, t to the north following him

To check the taken up an e of the Shumran river, held our attack, pressed another 400 sunk in gunpothe rearguard force.

Nothing not alacrity. With

THE RECAPTURE OF KUT

nightfall the infantry of one division had passed over. Already the covering troops, defeating enemy counterattacks, had taken 700 prisoners. It may be added that on this day (February 23) General Cobbe had eaten further into the Sanna position by seizing the third and fourth lines. The defence of Kut was breaking up.

By dawn on the 24th the whole of Marshall's column were on the north side of the river, and the Shumran bend in their possession. The stiff fighting was at its outlet. Here the chief Turkish defences lay. To the north-east various nullahs, traces of ancient ditches or lines of wall covered with earth had been taken advantage of; to the north-west an expanse of mounds and The enemy fought stubbornly, but aeroplane reconnaissances while the battle was in progress showed that his main columns were already in retreat and that the opposing force was a rearguard. The latter were driven back with heavy casualties and a further loss of 1,650 prisoners, besides four guns, some thousands of rifles, and a great quantity of ammunition, equipment and stores. Coincidentally, Cobbe (February 24) broke through the sixth and last trench lines at Sanna, and the British gunboats, ordered upstream from Falahiyeh, had reached Kut.

During the night of February 24 the enemy's rearguard at Shumran decamped. Early on the morning of the 25th, therefore, the pursuit began, the cavalry to the north on the enemy's right rear, the gunboats

following him upstream on his left.

To check this movement the hostile rearguard had taken up an entrenched position two miles to the west of the Shumran bend, and again, though shelled from the river, held out during the day. The British infantry attack, pressed home into the Turkish trenches, took another 400 prisoners. Well supported by artillery sunk in gunpits, the resistance had been brave, but the rearguard had been sacrificed to save the main force.

Nothing now remained for the retiring army save alacrity. With the object of intercepting them, a column

of the British troops made a forced march of eighteen miles across the desert plain. On the other hand, to quicken their own movement the Turks cast aside guns, rifles, equipment, munitions, vehicles and stores of all kinds, and these strewed their track for mile after mile. Despite such abandonments the gunboat flotilla on the one side and the British cavalry on the other gradually caught up. The flotilla had to fight a duel with the enemy's artillery covering his rear and, overtaking the hostile steamers, an action in which four of the Turkish vessels, Sumana, Basra, Firefly and Pioneer, were taken. The loss of these steamers, crippling their river communications, was for the Turks a heavy blow. Basra was crowded with men who had fallen out on the march or had been wounded.

So rapid had been the enemy's flight that on the evening of February 27 his troops reached Aziziya, 50 miles from Kut. They had covered that distance in two days. Nevertheless, all through the 27th the British gunboats had hung on to and shelled them from the river, while the British cavalry harried their outer flank, and when the retreating army reached Aziziya and streamed through that place it was as a broken, demoralised and, in part,

unarmed mob.

At Aziziva the pursuit paused. Before a further advance could be made from that point, midway between Kut and Bagdad, the line of communication, thus lengthened, had to be reorganised. To have gone at once would have been the haste which in the end loses time. In no small measure it had been the improvement in communications which in the attack upon Kut had rendered General Maude's penetrating and skilful strategy at once practicable and telling. while Aziziya had to be converted into a suitable jumping off place, it was equally urgent that time should not How efficient by comparison transport be wasted. had become was proved by the transfer of the necessary munitions and stores from below Kut in less than seven days. Six months before it could hardly have been done in as many weeks. In the operations now

immediately difference be certain failui

During the closed to the Turkish retre

Turkish retre Communic March 5 mo long march. screened by seven miles to holding the 1 like a netwo reached Lai Denuded, who vast level pla obscured as by the blast like impeded the mystified the and its move forward, actu position. Fe insecure, the 1 drew, guiding

On the succestill blowing, he the British caves as Ctesiphon, on both sides deserted. Not dently the appear had decided the Ctesiphon involuted After all the duther most seriou Diala. Besides had afforded the ceive reinforcentained from Tu

CR EAST

f eighteen hand, to east aside and stores mile after pat flotilla the other that a duel and, overch four of d Pioneer, pling their avy blow. ut on the

the even-, 50 miles two days. gunboats while the when the 1 through 1, in part,

a further v between ion, thus gone at end loses improveick upon ting and ng. But ole jumpnould not transport necessary ess than dly have ions now

THE RECAPTURE OF KUT

immediately to follow, this acceleration made the difference between assured success and almost equally certain failure.

During the same interval General Cobbe's column had closed to the front, clearing up on the way the line of the Turkish retreat.

Communications readjusted, Marshall's column on March 5 moved forward 18 miles to Zeur. It was a long march, but the troops were again fit. They were screened by the cavalry, which pushing on a further seven miles to Laj, there came upon an enemy rearguard holding the nullahs, which here intersect the country like a network. It happened that the British horse reached Laj in the midst of an intense dust storm. Denuded, where arid, of vegetation, the surface of the vast level plain, when swept by dry winds, becomes obscured as by an impenetrable dust cloud driven before the blast like a monstrous rolling bank of smoke. This impeded the cavalry, but on the other hand it equally mystified the enemy both as to the strength of the force and its movements. A regiment of hussars, charging forward, actually found themselves in the Turkish Feeling themselves in the circumstances insecure, the rearguard, as soon as darkness fell, withdrew, guiding themselves by following the river.

On the succeeding day (March 6) the dust storm was still blowing, but once more taking the river as a guide, the British cavalry again pushed on. They rode as far as Ctesiphon, and found there an entrenched position on both sides of the river elaborately prepared, but deserted. Not a Turk was anywhere met with. Evidently the apparition of the pursuing cavalry at Laj had decided the Turkish commander that to stand at Ctesiphon involved under the conditions too great a risk. After all the dust storm, though an ill-wind, had cleared the most serious military obstacle between Kut and the Diala. Besides, the rapidity of the British movements had afforded the enemy neither time to refit nor to receive reinforcements. This state of affairs was ascertained from Turkish prisoners picked up in a dashing

reconnaissance extended nine miles beyond Ctesiphon, and to within three of the Diala position.

Behind the cavalry Marshall's column had on this day (March 6) marched seventeen miles to Bustan, and Cobbe's column had moved up from Aziziya to Zeur.

In movement early on the 7th, the British advance guard in the afternoon reached the Diala, eight miles from Bagdad. In its lower course the Diala flows into the Tigris across a perfectly flat expanse. On the farther, or Bagdad, side were gardens, groves, and cultivated country; on the nearer side, the bare and open plain. Having, while his own batteries were concealed, this advantageous field of fire, the enemy, it was evident, meant seriously to dispute the crossing. To attempt that operation in daylight was in fact impracticable. All that could be done, therefore, was to wait for darkness, and in the interval to search the hostile gun positions both from in front and with the armament of the flotilla on the Tigris.

Along the farther bank of the Diala, hidden among the bushes and groves, the enemy had posted machine-guns. The night of March 7, it chanced, was one of bright moonlight, the weather having now again become settled. Accordingly, when the pontoons were moved up they came under a withering rifle and machine-gun fusillade. The first that got into the water was forthwith riddled with shot. Five others were floated. None, however, could be ferried over. All the men on them were either killed or disabled. Out of control, they drifted with the current, were carried down to the Tigris, and there recovered with the surviving wounded

wounded.

For the time being the attempt had to be given up. So far, however, from being embarrassed by these difficulties, General Maude had determined upon a diversion which, as it proved, succeeded completely. Kut had been taken by an attack from the south, and it was now evident that the enemy feared a repetition of that manœuvre, for aeroplane reconnaissance dis-

closed that of Bagdad taken meas from the s masterly ha these appre way was in and the line Further a li shallow lake both with tl waterway sin besides here gether the p bilities for de to launch his was an impo hardly fail, design.

To begin very from Marshall to open from the fire upon the Turkish manœuvre, but bridge across day, and the Cobbe's column also is eut upon enough to be earth. Such very nightfall had outposts.

Coincidental resumed. It we divided between the positions of hammered by troops tried to

tesiphon,

on this Bustan, ziziya to

advance ght miles ows into e farther, ultivated en plain. led, this evident, attempt acticable. for darkstile gun ament of

> mong the ine-guns. of bright become e moved hine-gun as forth-1. None, on them rol, they n to the surviving

> > riven up. by these upon a mpletely. uth, and epetition ance dis

closed that he had thrown up defences round the suburb of Bagdad on the opposite bank of the Tigris, and taken measures to guard himself against being turned from the south-west. With the ready resource of a masterly hand General Maude resolved to play up to these apprehensions. The terminus of the Bagdad railway was in this suburb on the farther side of the river. and the line was carried up to Samarra on that bank. Further a little to the north-west of the suburb was a shallow lake of considerable area, the Akarkuf, connected both with the Tigris and with the Euphrates by a cross waterway similar to the Shatt-el-Hai. Some undulations besides here broke the dead level of the country. Altogether the position on that bank offered obvious possibilities for defence. On that account Maude had decided to launch his main assault across the Diala, but if there was an important diversion on the farther bank it could hardly fail, skilfully managed, to promote the chief design.

To begin with, therefore, a small column, detached from Marshall's force, was ferried over the Tigris in order to open from the other side of the main stream an enfilade fire upon the enemy's posts and batteries along the Diala; and half a mile below Bawi, that is, out of the range of the Turkish guns, the engineers, veiled by the first manœuvre, began (March 8) on the Tigris to throw a bridge across. The bridge was completed during the day, and the cavalry passed over followed by part of Cobbe's column. As at Ctesiphon, the country here also is cut up by nullahs and ancient ditches, some deep enough to be impassable until vamped by gangways of earth. Such work impeded progress, but the troops by nightfall had established contact with the enemy's outposts.

Coincidentally the efforts to cross the Diala were resumed. It was necessary to keep the Turks' attention divided between the two points. All day on March 8 the positions on the farther side of the tributary had been hammered by the British artillery. Then in the night troops tried to cross at four points. At three these

attempts were defeated, but at the fourth, that farthest upstream and most distant from Bagdad, the ferry was worked for an hour before the enemy mustered in strength enough to stop it. By that time, however, a party of the Loyal North Lancashires had gained a footing in a bend of the bund on the farther bank, and though heavily counter-attacked, isolated for the time being, and sniped perpetually from adjacent gardens and buildings, held on during the next twenty-two hours.

The operations now proceeded simultaneously on both sides of the Tigris, and to follow their effect it is advisable to relate them as far as possible in the order

of time.

On March 9 the cavalry with part of Cobbe's force drove the Turks out of the village of Shawa Khan and advanced to and attacked an entrenched position covering Bagdad from the south. The position, some six miles from the city, was strongly held and stubbornly de-Under cover of darkness, however, the enemy retired from it to another entrenched line three miles to the rear. But on this day again a stiff wind arose, accompanied by a dust storm of unusual density. It tried the endurance of the British troops severely, but it appears to have tried the enemy to an equal degree, for learning that the British cavalry had worked round on his right flank, and had reached a point two miles west of Bagdad railway station, his troops again withdrew. This time they retreated north, not to Bagdad but beyond it. While the British cavalry went in pursuit, following the Turks four miles beyond Bagdad upstream, the infantry, having struck the single track railway from Bagdad to Feludia on the Euphrates, followed it until they reached the Bagdad terminus, and occupied the suburb on that bank.

This was just after daybreak on the morning of March 10. About an hour previously the crossing of the Diala had begun. To begin with, a stiff opposition appeared probable. Evidently, however, the news of the breakdown of the defence on the other side of the Tigris had filtered out and shook the resistance. By seven in

the morning ferried acr North Lar entered up pleted.

The host Diala were the last ha out of all t 300 prison equipment

There n Bagdad or still held, But at ha the enemy wards the position we dust storm well as on

Advancin Marshall an 11. The i of satisfac capital of t the Turks. Holy Place portance a between In languished. materially already not project. H built up on of governm

For the the populat by the anar to be sup beginning in

THE RECAPTURE OF KUT

t farthest ferry was stered in owever, a la footing d though ne being, lens and hours.

R EAST

ously on ffect it is the order

be's force Khan and on coversix miles ornly dehe enemy ree miles ind arose, nsity. It erely, but al degree, ced round two miles gain witho Bagdad nt in pur-1 Bagdad ngle track Suphrates, terminus,

orning of sing of the opposition ews of the the Tigris y seven in the morning the East Lancashires and Wiltshires had been ferried across, and enlarging the bridgehead held by the North Lancashires, enabled the work of bridging to be entered upon. By midday the bridge had been completed.

The hostile points of support on the farther side of the Diala were the villages of Saidah, Dibaiyi and Qaruarah, the last half-way between the Diala and Bagdad. Driven out of all three with heavy losses, the Turks lost, besides 300 prisoners, a large quantity of arms, munitions and

equipment.

There now remained between the British force and Bagdad only the ridge of Tel-el-Mohammad. It was still held, and the intention was to assault it at dawn. But at half-past one in the morning patrols reported the enemy to be in retreat. A movement forward towards the ridge was accordingly at once made. The position was occupied with but slight resistance. The dust storm which covered the country on this side as well as on the other favoured the enemy's withdrawal.

Advancing nevertheless as rapidly as possible, General Marshall and his troops entered Bagdad early on March The inhabitants welcomed them with every sign For two hundred years the ancient of satisfaction. capital of the Arabian Caliphs had been in the hands of the Turks. While its prestige remained as one of the Holy Places of the Moslem-faith, and it was still of importance as an entrepôt on the overland trade route between India and the Levant by way of Persia, it had languished. Nor had the as yet incompleted railway materially aided the city's prosperity, for the line, as already noted, was a military rather than a commercial project. How, besides, was any solid prosperity to be built up on such a foundation as the Turkish system of government?

For the moment, however, the manifest pleasure of the population at the sight of the British was stimulated by the anarchy that prevailed, but now certain at once to be suppressed. During the preceding fortnight, beginning indeed forthwith on intelligence of the fall of

security-tl

the standing

buildings o

the gunboat

the offensive

off the Briti

The Brit

Kut, the enemy had begun in Bagdad to remove his stores. The city formed his main advanced base, and the mass of material, having regard to the length and character of the Turkish communications, was too great to allow of transport, crippled besides now by the loss of his steamer flotilla. As much of it as could be was destroyed. But the process had been interrupted, with the result that much machinery, the plant of the railway workshops, materials for railway construction and repairs, rolling stock, cranes and winches, signal and telegraphic equipment, pipes and pumps, ice-making plant, soda water plant and hospital outfit had had, though in part damaged, to be left behind. Besides this were arms and munitions. Among the guns in the arsenal, in addition to cannon old and modern, were found those taken by the enemy at the surrender of Kut nearly a year before. These guns General Townshend had rendered useless. The reserve of small arms seized was very large. It was not merely the mass of the booty which signified, but the loss it represented to the enemy—a loss he could ill afford, and one that must in any event take no little time to repair. The blow had indeed been fatal to any successful prosecution of his campaign.

Clearly this destruction, entered upon when it was seen that owing to the rapidity of the British movements further removals had become impracticable, had incited the appetite for plunder among the irregulars who formed the camp following of the Turkish troops. No sooner therefore had the latter departed, if not before, than the hangers-on turned to sack habitations, despoil the residents, and loot the shops in the bazaars. At various points already they had started fires. With the arrival of the British troops they were caught redhanded. Guards had been formed to put down disorder and looting, and these sweeping through the several quarters of the city speedily rounded up the miscreants. Swift and summary, though even-handed, justice soon. made every part of Bagdad at once tranquil and safe, and its normal life was resumed under a novel sense of

THE RECAPTURE OF KUT

security—that security of the British raj which is still the standing wonder of the East.

the standing wonder of the East.

The British flag was hoisted over the Serail, the buildings of the Turkish provincial administration; the gunboat flotilla, steaming up line ahead, anchored off the British Residency. Well planned, ably executed, the offensive had proved a brilliant success.

it was moveticable. regulars troops. before, despoil rs. At ith the ht redlisorder several reants. e soon . d safe, ense of

EAST

love his

ase, and gth and

oo great e loss of be was ed, with railway on and nal and making ad had. des this in the n, were nder of Townsll arms s of the to the must in ow had of his

TO THE STATE OF THE STATE OF

from Dama Yemin was claimed his While, h contrast b Expedition which had

presumed to Steps had to render the

The thre

necessary

upon the

Tigris for a to secure 1 Euphrates.

the most u melting of

highlands, v Mesopotami

annual rise

the Nile use

far over tl

ancient fert

brought une

irrigation th

part of the

which not

neglect har

among the

Since, howe

places, the

to these h

where the w

subject to p

Since also of

shorter cou

to violent s

course of a

control of th

CHAPTER XV

MESOPOTAMIA CAMPAIGN AFTER THE CAPTURE OF BAGDAD

Effects of the Turkish reverses—Arab rising in the Yemen—General Maude's energetic measures—Advance up the Tigris—Cobbe's victory at Mushadiya—Advance along the Diala—Bakuba occupied—Marshall's operations on the Euphrates and capture of Feludja—Action on the Jebel Hamrin ridge—Turkish reaction—Combined movement against Deltawa—Maude's successful stratagem—Turks defeated—British victory at Istabulat—Capture of Samarra—The health and efficiency of the army—First operations against Ramadie—Why indecisive—Second Expedition—Battle of Ramadie—Capture of the Turkish force—Cavalry dash to Mendali—Results of British administration in Mesopotamia—Maude's death at Bagdad.

WITH the capture of Bagdad the aspect of affairs in Mesopotamia entirely changed, and the change, as it proved, was enduring. Not alone had Turkish prestige received a severe blow. The extent to which the resources of the Turks had been damaged became more apparent as time went on. When, threats apart, it was seen that the power effectually to react against the British did not in fact exist, opposition to German-Turkish schemes in Persia on the one side and among the Arabs of the Hedjaz on the other hardened. The Russian activities in Persia, resistant of the German-Turkish invasion, reached their high-water mark in the early part of 1917. But though from that time, owing to political troubles at home, they declined, and continued to decline, nevertheless, the earlier Turkish foothold in Persia, lost through the combined Russian and British pressure, could not be regained, and notwithstanding the completion of the strategical railway

AFTER THE CAPTURE OF BAGDAD

from Damascus to Mecca, the Turkish hold upon the Yemin was jeopardised. The Sheerif of Mecca pro-

claimed his independence.

While, however, there could hardly be a stronger contrast between the rational boldness of Maude's Expedition and the hesitation, alternating with haste, which had led to preceding failures, it had still to be presumed that the enemy remained capable of reacting. Steps had therefore to be taken, and without delay, to

render the British hold upon Bagdad secure.

The three measures immediately and coincidentally necessary were first to make safe the British right upon the Diala, secondly to obtain control of the Tigris for a sufficient distance to the north, and thirdly to secure the British left by a move towards the Euphrates. Of these measures the second was perhaps the most urgent. The season marked by the annual melting of the snows in the Caucasian and Persian highlands, was close at hand. Both the great rivers of Mesopotamia then reach their highest level. In this annual rise and fall they resemble the Nile, and like the Nile used in ancient times to spread their waters far over the plain. The secret of the wonderful ancient fertility of Mesopotamia, these floods had been brought under control by the most extensive system of part of the world. All that remains of it are the traces which not even a thousand years of desolation and neglect have been able to efface. Most important among them are the bunds along the river banks. Since, however, the bunds have been worn down in places, the flood waters pour over, so that contiguous to these half-ruined bunds there are vast marshes, where the waters stagnate, while the rest of the country, subject to periodical and prolonged drought, is a desert. Since also of the two great rivers the Tigris, owing to its shorter course, is the more subject in the flood season to violent spates, often rising many feet in level in the course of a night, it was open to the enemy, having control of the bunds, to cut them. That, while immobi-

en—General
ris—Cobbe's
a—Bakuba
and capture
ish reaction
successful
at—Capture
First operaxpedition—
avalry dash
opotamia—

affairs in ge, as it prestige hich the became its apart. t against Germand among ed. The Germanmark in at time, ned, and Turkish Russian notwith-

railway

lising the British force, to say nothing of the incidental consequences upon the health of the troops, would more than any other proceeding have assisted a hostile reaction.

On that account General Maude decided to act at once. Accordingly, having occupied Yahudie, 20 miles above Bagdad on the same bank, he pushed an advance guard of adequate strength as far as Kasirin, eight miles farther on. The Turks were given no time to rally, for the British appeared at Kasirin on April 14, three days after the entry into Bagdad. It was on the opposite side of the river, on the railway line to Samarra, that the enemy had taken up a position. Some five miles south of Mushadiya the railway ceases to follow the river, and for some 30 miles or more cuts across country, avoiding an extensive bend. This was the point where the Turks had elected to entrench. With the object primarily of protecting the bunds, General Cobbe was assigned the task of dislodging them. The manœuvre chosen was a night march, and it was coincident with the British advance on the Bagdad side, an advance with which it was reasonable to conclude the enemy's attention would be occupied.

Cobbe's march proved to be unopposed, and at day-break on April 14 his column came within sight of the Turkish entrenchments. The position had been selected by the enemy with skill. Just here the otherwise dead level of the country is broken by a range of sandhills. The highest are near the river, and the space between them and the great waterway cut up by canals and ditches. Entrenchment had added to the difficulty of those obstacles. The railway cuts through the sandhills, which farthest from the Tigris form a succession of undulations, one ridge behind another. The entire front of the Turkish position was seven miles in extent. Not least among the features which gave it military value was the field of fire it commanded. Before it lay nothing save

the bare plain.

Cobbe undoubtedly had before him a ticklish proposition. As usual, however, he made the best use of his

resources. H
against that p
Operating on
round upon t
positions was
the opposite
owing to the
side of the '
slight. On t
ened to push
parallel with
successful th
force into the

Well supp movement wa round upon effect was ad bombardmen gunboats. A was put dow the railway. up a brisk Despite the t infantry car in the aftern enemy's right The Black W tion, were brilliant. As at close quar kukri. The Turkish casu a clean cut. of the defe towards Mus had meanwl light of a m clouds the whipped up

sandhills; h

EAST

ld more hostile

act at 20 miles advance a, eight time to pril 14. s on the amarra. me five o follow s across was the . With General m. The ras coinad side. conclude

at daynt of the
selected
rise dead
nills. The
en them
ditches.
hose obls, which
lulations,
t of the
Not least
was the
ning save

proposi-

resources. His decision was to throw the whole column against that part of the hostile line farthest from the river. Operating on the British left the cavalry were to work round upon the Turkish rear. The risk of these dispositions was that the enemy might counter-attack on the opposite wing, but Cobbe very properly judged that, owing to the coincident British advance on the Bagdad side of the Tigris, the risk in the circumstances was slight. On the other hand, his own movement threatened to push the Turkish right in the first instance parallel with the railway, and next off it, so that if successful the manœuvre would shepherd the hostile force into the bend and cut off their retreat.

Well supported by machine-gun fire, the cavalry movement was completely successful. The force worked round upon the enemy's rear as designed, and the effect was added to in no small measure by an enfilade bombardment of the Turkish defences by the river gunboats. At the same time a stiff artillery barrage was put down on the Turkish trenches on both sides of the railway. Notwithstanding this, the enemy kept up a brisk reply, fluctuating, but at times intense. Despite the tenacity of the resistance, however, Cobbe's infantry carried one ridge after another. Finally, in the afternoon all the defences had been won on the enemy's right, and there remained only his main position. The Black Watch and the Gurkhas, working in combination, were launched against it. The charge was brilliant. As the enemy stood to it and put up a fight at close quarters there was a grapple with bayonet and The struggle, though fierce, was brief. Turkish casualties were heavy, and the position won by a clean cut. Fighting almost yard by yard, the remnant of the defending force fell back along the railway towards Mushadiya station. There, though darkness had meanwhile fallen, they rallied, and in the fitful light of a moon veiled every now and then by ragged clouds the battle went on. The British batteries, whipped up in all haste, had galloped forward over the sandhills; here and there some enemy guns still boomed

in reply. The station buildings, loopholed for defence, formed a strong point of support. But the main body of the Black Watch and Gurkhas having come up and recovered their second wind, at midnight closed in. The station was rushed. This time the Turkish retirement was a flight. The chase was kept up for half a mile north of the station, and then called off. but the hostile force had been so completely broken that next day nothing was seen of them. They were re-discovered by the airmen the day after that (April 16) retreating north in a straggling rout spread from front to rear over twenty miles of country. Even the rearmost stragglers were 25 miles north of Mushadiya. The van was nearly 45 miles away, and more than 50 from the site of the main battle. General Maude records that in these operations his troops displayed fine endurance and determination, and the praise, which from such a commander was praise indeed, was well deserved. They had marched and fought up to midnight on April 14 for thirty-six hours without a break, in that climate a rare feat of endurance. Nothing could better attest their magnificent moral.

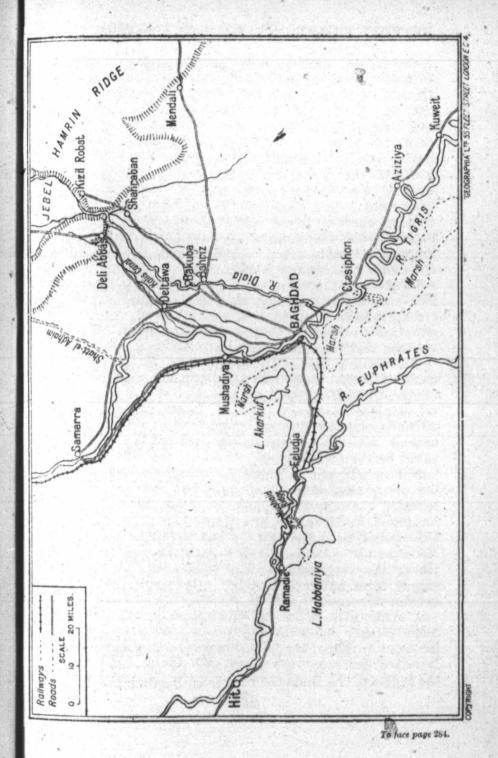
The Tigris for a sufficient distance above Bagdad having been secured, it became easier to solidify the position on the Diala. Here the enemy still held Bakuba, 30 miles north-east of Bagdad and the centre of a cultivated area. The town, too, marked the junction of the roads from Samarra and Bagdad, with the route running north to Khanikin, and to seize the place meant severing the enemy's chief communications with Persia. Bakuba lies on the eastern bank of the Diala. A British post was established opposite the town on the western bank. While the garrison of Bakuba, not a large force, were thus expecting a direct attack, a British column, crossing the Diala five miles downstream at Bahriz, took Bakuba from the reverse direction, and no other way being open the Turks retreated north towards Khanikin. At this date the Russians under the command of General Baratoff, who had defeated the Turkish 13th

SCALE

ER EAST

r defence, nain body come up ght closed e Turkish pt up for called off, ly broken They were (April 16) rom front the rear-Iushadiya. e than 50 de records d fine enwhich from deserved. on April 14 at climate tter attest

re Bagdad blidify the still held and the so, marked d Bagdad, n, and to chief comhe eastern established While the were thus n, crossing took Baother way Khanikin. nmand of rkish 13th



runs to the

on the cara

enclosed p

Diala, fallir

this plain

the ridge

vast tracts

ridge, calle

in consider

bar the roa

jumping-of

bunds nortl

at Bakuba.

Moving ou

drove the I

there large

provision fo

(March 24)

on the Jebe

the foot of t

by ditches a

but in a ni

foothills. 1

the foothills

two miles, b

mocks, rises

lower crest

the lower ci

thousand ya

rise. In the

to press tl

retiring, the

same time t

Diala, tried

was held h

charged in t

with exemp

with volleys

close quarter

No soone

BRITISH CAMPAIGNS IN THE NEARER EAST

Army Corps, were pushing on towards Kasr-i-Shirin with the intention at Khanikin of linking up with the British. Retreat upon Mosul, by way of Bakuba cut off, the Turkish 13th Corps would be obliged to retire from Kasr-i-Shirin over the difficult mountain road to Kifri. The Turkish military organisation

based upon Bagdad had gone to pieces.

While the move upon Bakuba was being made, another was taking place towards Feludja on the Euphrates. As a glance at the map will show, near to Bagdad the two great rivers of Mesopotamia swerve together, and the distance here separating them is not more than twenty miles. Since to command them is to command the communications of the country, it was evident that the occupation of Feludja was insistent. Nor can it be supposed that the enemy would not strongly have opposed this move had he been in a situation to do so. That it met with little opposition was the best possible proof of his difficulties.

The remarkable feature of the three movements just outlined is that they were all completed within a week of the British entry into Bagdad. That event had taken place on March 11; the occupation of Feludja, which completed General Maude's immediate threefold scheme, was effected on March 19. Bakuba had been

taken on the preceding day.

Not merely was this display of energy, rounding off the occupation of Bagdad, noteworthy in itself, but it revealed the extent to which river transport had been improved, for though local supplies had been organised, the operations were still in the main dependent on Basra as the chief base and upon the traffic with that place. Any weakness at the base or on the line of supply must have led to delay, and time was here the essence of success.

A striking proof of the fact was speedily afforded. Some twenty miles to the north-east of Bakuba on the road to Khanikin is the little town of Shahraban. It was still occupied by the Turks. Following roughly the course of the Diala the road from Bagdad into Persia

AFTER THE CAPTURE OF BAGDAD

asr-i-Shirin p with the of Bakuba obliged to mountain rganisation

ER EAST

ing made. ia on the w, near to nia swerve hem is not them is to ry, it was s insistent. would not been in a opposition

ments just in a week event had f Feludja, threefold had been

inding off elf, but it had been organised, endent on with that ne line of here the

afforded. akuba on hahraban. g roughly to Persia

runs to the larger town of Kizil Robat, the first stage on the caravan journey. Kizil Robat lies in a kind of enclosed plain, an enclave in the highlands, and the Diala, falling from the higher mountains, after traversing this plain issues from it through a gorge or breach in the ridge which divides the enclosed level from the vast tracts of Mesopotamia to the south. The dividing ridge, called the Jebel Hamrin, was held by the enemy in considerable strength. Not alone did the position bar the road to Khanikin; it formed a very convenient

jumping-off place in the event of a reaction.

No sooner, therefore, had Feludja been secured, and the bunds north of Bagdad, when a column was concentrated at Bakuba, for further operations in that direction. Moving out on March 20, this force three days later drove the Turks out of Shahraban. The British found there large supplies of grain, part no doubt of the provision for the enemy's troops in Persia. Next day (March 24) they moved against the hostile position on the Jebel Hamrin ridge. The country just here at the foot of the higher levels, still cut up in all directions by ditches and canals, was by no means easy to cross, but in a night attack a hold was established on the foothills. The ridge of Jebel Hamrin is rugged. Beyond the foothills is the first crest, then at a distance of some two miles, but two miles seamed by ravines and hummocks, rises a second and higher crest. The first and lower crest was also gained. Behind the enemy line the lower crest ran across the broken country about a thousand yards to the north and at the foot of the higher rise. In the circumstances it was not judged advisable to press the advance further. Seeing the British retiring, the Turks came out into the open, and at the same time their cavalry, riding through the gorge of the Diala, tried to envelop the British right. That wing was held by the Manchesters. The Turkish horse charged in the hope of breaking them up, but standing with exemplary steadiness, they withered the onset with volleys of rifle and machine-gun fire poured in at close quarters.

Since the enemy's 13th Corps were in difficulties, the 18th was sent to their aid, and the British having fallen back upon Shahraban, there appeared to be some prospect of avoiding the long and toilsome détour through Kifri by getting out through Kizil Robat and Deltawa, the latter place being on the route to Samarra. By this time, however, Deltawa had been taken by a British detachment. An attempt by part of the 13th Corps to advance from Kizil Robat to Deltawa was made, but it was beaten, and the enemy fell back upon Deli Abbas, followed up by the British cavalry.

To assist the proposed retirement of the 18th Corps from Persia by way of the Tigris, the 18th was drawn up behind the Shatt-el-Adhaim, a tributary of the Tigris flowing in across the flats from the north-east.

A converging movement against the British at Deltawa was evidently the intention. As usual, General Maude resolved to strike first. His plan was, while containing the Deli Abbas force with his cavalry, to attack with a sufficiently strong mobile column the 18th Turkish Corps, who by this time had crossed the Shatt-el-Adhaim. That the hostile intention had been rightly interpreted was shown on March 27 by a determined effort to open the road to Deltawa from Deli Abbas. Harassed by the British cavalry, skilfully handled, the movement was checked, and the Turks, having sustained severe losses, finally fell back, the British cavalry in pursuit.

On the receipt apparently of intelligence that a column was on the march against him, the commander of the 18th Corps deemed it prudent to entrench and await the onset near Himma on the main road to Deltawa from the north-west. His position had been well chosen. On the British side a night assault was determined upon, and took place after darkness on March 28. The fighting proved stubborn. At noon on the following day the action was still undecided. Hostilities had then to be suspended because of a mirage. The phenomenon, fasifying the whole aspect of the country, left

artillery su however, th attack carrie attacks wer Turkish loss what were a and the 18th

Owing to on the upper retreat throu evacuated by with the troc

General M his operation banks. The Corps had ea to move alo April 9 the a But meanwh Turkish Divi They came Kalis canal, links up the keeping their formation wa to resist attac mounted troo but though Artillery, wh close masses. were not able the manœuv April 9 thes seven miles. that the Brit that the mai Shatt-el-Adha from the nort cavalry, can upon Deltawa

AFTER THE CAPTURE OF BAGDAD

be some ne détour izil Robat route to had been at by part Robat to the enemy

ne British

ER EAST

3th Corps ras drawn y of the east. British at l, General ras, while avalry, to lumn the ossed the had been a deterrom Deli skilfully e Turks, back, the

a column er of the nd await Deltawa I chosen. termined arch 28. following ties had e phenotry, left

artillery support out of the question. At sunset, however, the mirage passed off. The renewed British attack carried most of the hostile positions. Counterattacks were fierce. They added so heavily to the Turkish losses that during the night (March 29-30) what were still left of the defences were abandoned, and the 18th Corps retired across the Shatt-el-Adhaim.

Owing to this defeat of the 18th Corps, the Turks on the upper Diala had now no alternative left save to retreat through Kifri, and on April 2 at Kizil Robat, evacuated by the enemy, the British effected a junction

with the troops of General Baratoff.

General Maude now judged it advisable to push his operations yet farther along the Tigris on both The remains of the 13th and 18th Turkish Corps had each been reinforced. His first purpose was to move along the railway towards Samarra, and on April 9 the advance had been carried as far as Harbe. But meanwhile on the other bank the 2nd and 14th Turkish Divisions again made a move towards Deltawa. They came down from Deli Abbas along the Nahr Kalis canal, which, running diagonally across country, links up the Tigris with the Diala. On this occasion, keeping their left flank close to the canal, the Turkish formation was in dense columns, a manœuvre designed to resist attack by cavalry. As before also, the British mounted troops appeared to oppose the enemy's progress, but though this opposition was supported by Horse Artillery, which inflicted rather heavy losses on the close masses, it could not arrest them, for the cavalry were not able to come to close quarters. In a word, the manœuvre looked like being a success, and on April 9 these Turkish troops had pushed forward seven miles. Whether or not the enemy presumed that the British dispositions would remain as before; that the main British force would continue on the Shatt-el-Adhaim, and the movement upon Deltawa from the north-east be resisted as hitherto merely by cavalry, can only be inferred, but clearly the attack upon Deltawa from the north-east was the serious thing, and the enemy force on the Shatt-el-Adhaim intended in the interim to keep the British there occupied. At all events General Maude concluded that these were the hostile intentions, and as events proved, his judgment was justified. He met stratagem with stratagem. Screening the movement with his cavalry, still offering an apparently futile opposition, he detached part of the supports of his troops on the Shatt-el-Adhaim, and marching them across country by night, had them the following morning on the exposed right of the Turks moving down by the Nahr Khalis canal. Looking, as they were, for nothing more than continued cavalry skirmishes, this assault by infantry and field guns took the Turks wholly by surprise. Obliged hastily to deploy in the open to meet it, they, lost heavily. In face of the casualties and confusion there was nothing for it save to retreat. The pursuit was continued as far as Deli Abbas, from which place the enemy was ejected.

Though on a small scale these operations afford an

instructive example of skill in manœuvre.

The thrust from Delhi Abbas disposed of, General Maude turned his attention once more to the 18th Corps. On April 18 the Shatt-el-Adhaim was bridged. When that had been accomplished and the British infantry had crossed the river the Turks began to fall back. But a composite brigade of cavalry was launched in chase, and the retreat rapidly became a rout. Losing 1,300 prisoners, in addition to killed and wounded, the 18th Corps was broken up. Only a small fraction of the troops composing it made good their escape.

There was now on the Bagdad side of the river no longer for the time being any Turkish force of any consequence. On the opposite side, however, towards Samarra, the enemy still had troops reported to consist of some 10,700 infantry, about 700 cavalry, and 46 guns, based upon Samarra with an advanced position among the ruins of Istabulat. Not the strength of the force was the problem, but the position chosen. The great bend in the course of the Tigris, avoided as it were by

the railway, shortened by Tigris not fa fairly straigh again some canal is carr railway is laid Extending fr junction at \$ the two is so triangle of g land side, for forty feet in h the river beca the enemy's l reaching the The position v

On the par been carried was first to at at the end whe end where it those old com Gurkhas, movi barrage, secur the river the which had for These breache line along the Seaforth Highl They had to a mile of expose gallantry, brok The resistance possible owing the position to time being wit. mander prepar these jumping-Possibly this

rel-Adhaim re occupied, that these proved, his igem with his cavalry, he detached el-Adhaim, had them the of the

Looking, ted cavalry field guns ted hastily st heavily. ras nothing nued as far ras ejected. afford an

the 18th is bridged. he British gan to fall s launched t. Losing wounded, mall fractood their

e river no ce of any to to consist d 46 guns, on among the force The great t were by

the railway, is also for the purposes of river transport shortened by the Dujail canal. That cut leaves the Tigris not far below Samarra at an acute angle, runs fairly straight across country, and strikes the river again some ten miles above Bagdad. In places the canal is carried between high embankments, and the railway is laid roughly parallel with it on the west side. Extending from the Tigris to the canal near their junction at Samarra and where the distance between the two is some three miles, the Turkish line cut off a triangle of ground fairly secure at all events on the land side, for the canal embankments were there some forty feet in height. And attack, too, was difficult from the river because of the hairpin turn at the point where the enemy's left rested on the waterway. His right, on reaching the canal embankment, was carried along it. The position was a strong one.

On the part of the British, when the advance had been carried as far as Istabulat (April 21) the plan was first to attack the Turkish line facing downstream at the end where it rested on the river, and at the opposite end where it adjoined the canal. At the latter point those old comrades in arms the Black Watch and the Gurkhas, moving forward together, covered by a creeping barrage, secured a firm footing in the defences. Near the river the Turks at the same time lost the redoubt which had formed one of their main points of support. These breaches having been made on that front, the line along the canal embankment was attacked by the Seaforth Highlanders and the 28th and 92nd Punjabis. They had to advance in the open across more than a mile of exposed ground, but, displaying the greatest gallantry, broke the hostile line over a width of 700 yards. The resistance had been tenacious, and it was still possible owing to the natural and artificial strength of the position to defend it. Content therefore for the time being with the breaches effected, the British commander prepared methodically to push the attack from these jumping-off points under the cover of darkness. Possibly this purpose was suspected, for soon after

AFTI

on the Eupl

and 2,000

Delaim trib

miles up tl

opposite bar

where on the

called Sinn-e

occupy, and

move and

Since it was

in the sumn provided to

might alter

provision wand of ice.

guard on J

made exact

miles farthe

to Ramadie

four the foll with the en

The operation

by a dust st

heat wave, a

In the circu

abandoned.

trary, prepa

a larger sca

put upon the

September

after all had

But the

darkness the Turks, whose losses had been even more

severe than supposed, began an evacuation.

At daybreak the whole British force was on the move in pursuit. The chase, continued as far as Samarra, resulted in the capture of 14 Krupp guns, 16 locomotives, 240 trucks, 2 barges, and besides numerous rifles, a large stock of ammunition and miscellaneous equipment. Samarra station was captured on April 28 and the town occupied on April 24.

Aerial reconnaissance now left it beyond doubt that the enemy retirement was general on both banks of the river. Into the details of the clearing up it is not necessary to enter. Suffice it to say that Sir Stanley Maude had not merely in taking Bagdad scored a political success; he had in breaking up the Turko-German power in Mesopotamia won a solid military

triumph.

But it had been a trying campaign for the British troops. The distances to be covered, the heat, the dust storms, the scarcity on occasions of water, called for physical exertion of no ordinary kind. Nevertheless, as their gallant General recorded, "the spirit of the troops seemed to rise as conditions became more trying, and to the end of this period they maintained the same high standard of discipline, gallantry in action and endurance."

There were now before them five months of hot weather during which active campaigning was impracticable. While no necessary precautions were neglected, most were withdrawn into reserve, and distributed along the river in camps "where a liberal supply of water for drinking, bathing and washing was obtainable." In camp manly sports were encouraged, training carried on in the early mornings and late evenings when the weather was cool enough, and to long service men periods of leave granted to India. Coincidentally the defensive arrangements and organisation securing the British occupation of the country were strengthened and completed.

The Turks still remained in occupation of Ramadie

beginning of Like that Ramadie le

of the Eupl to east. So

AFTER THE CAPTURE OF BAGDAD

was on the far as Samuns, 16 locoes numerous niscellaneous on April 23

RER EAST

i even more

l doubt that th banks of up it is not Sir Stanley ad scored a the Turkoolid military

the British ne heat, the water, called Nevertheless, spirit of the more trying, intained the ry in action

was impractive neglected, ributed along of water for inable." In ining carried gs when the service men identally the securing the ngthened and

of Ramadie

on the Euphrates. They had there some 1,500 regular and 2,000 irregular troops, the latter Arabs of the Delaim tribe. Ramadie is rather more than twenty miles up the Euphrates from Feludia, and on the opposite bank. Between the two places at the point where on the Feludja side the Saklawiya canal leaves the river, there are some hummocks of rising ground called Sinn-el-Zibban. These it was judged advisable to occupy, and it was determined to carry out both that move and an attack upon Ramadie early in July. Since it was out of the question to execute long marches in the summer heats, both motor vans and lorries were provided to carry a part of the Column, so that men might alternately march and ride, and very careful provision was made as regarded the supply of water and of ice. Setting out from Feludja, an advance guard on July 8 occupied Sinn-el-Zibban. While they made exact reconnaissances towards Ramadie, twelve miles farther on, the main Column was concentrated behind the mounds. The march from Sinn-el-Zibban to Ramadie took place on the night of July 10. By four the following morning contact had been established with the enemy's advance posts and these driven in. The operations, however, were at this point interrupted by a dust storm of unusual severity, accompanied by a heat wave, and those conditions continued until July 14. In the circumstances the contemplated attack had to be abandoned. The Column withdrew to Sinn-el-Zibban.

But the enterprise was not given up. On the contrary, preparations were made to carry it through on a larger scale, for it was now certain that the enemy, put upon the alert, would as speedily as possible reinforce his garrison. Preparations occupied the interval until September 26. Their effect showed that little time after all had been lost. The end of September was the

beginning of the campaigning season.

Like that at Istabulat on the Tigris, the position at Ramadie lent itself to effective defence. The reach of the Euphrates from Ramadie to Feludja runs west to east. South of the course of the river, and distant

9

from it between five and eight miles, there is an extensive salt lake, the Habbaniya. A mile or so west of Ramadie a canal, the Aziziya, leaves the Euphrates and follows a southerly direction until lost in the salt marsh at its western end. Near the eastern end of the marsh, and extending south to north from lake to river is the Mushaid ridge, some 60 feet in height. There were therefore three ways of arriving at the town; first by crossing the Euphrates at some point between the Mushaid ridge and the Aziziya canal; secondly by assaulting and capturing the ridge; thirdly by making a detour to the west and forcing a passage over the canal.

In view of these features of the area the Turkish commander held the Mushaid ridge with part of his force as an advance guard, but realising that from the west there might be delivered an attack which, if successful, would cut off his retreat he kept the main body of his troops on a front drawn closely round the east and south of the town. The ground there, between the Euphrates and the salt lake, was an expanse of bare sandy downs—the Aziziya canal on one side, and the Euphrates Valley canal, roughly parallel with the river, on the other.

The British plan was this. In the first place measures were taken for leading the Turkish General to believe that the chief attack was to take place from across the river. A road was laid down along the opposite bank, and supplies were collected at the most convenient point for crossing. Rather lower downstream a bridge of boats had been constructed, and over this part of the British column passed from the Ramadie side to the farther bank. Such were the preparations up to the evening of September 27.

During that night, however, these troops were withdrawn and recrossed the Euphrates. The real attack was to be delivered at the southern end of the Mushaid ridge where that hummock abutted on the lake. The cavalry were to move forward as far as the road from Ramadie to Hit and Aleppo, and cut the enemy's communications.

294

At dawn Mushaid ric part won. rise at this been constriboth troops body of Brit

The ridge that fact le back upon British infa shore of th Mushaid ric wing of the by the gun the souther horse, cross with the lal Aleppo road Quite possik deliver an a to make a d thirty miles occupied a v force too ex Thus there a the British lake, a dista only arrived further acti

And this complement from the Mon the left si which opened the ground same, the L consolidated all the troo the Dorsets

RER EAST

an extensive of Ramadie and follows marsh at its the marsh. river is the There were town; first between the secondly by by making er the canal. the Turkish part of his at from the k which, if ot the main osely round ound there, ke, was an iziya canal

tce measures
I to believe
from across
the opposite
t convenient
am a bridge
this part of
adie side to
tions up to

nal, roughly

were withreal attack the Mushaid lake. The e road from he enemy's

AFTER THE CAPTURE OF BAGDAD

At dawn on September 28 the southern end of the Mushaid ridge was attacked, and a foothold on that part won. The Euphrates Valley canal runs past the rise at this southern end. Across the canal a dam had been constructed broad enough for the passage of both troops and guns. The dam was secured, and a body of British infantry marched over.

The ridge had now been turned, as intended, and that fact led the enemy to evacuate the rise and fall back upon his defences among the sand dunes. British infantry followed him up along the northern shore of the lake. Their movement screened by the Mushaid ridge, the cavalry manœuvred to the left wing of the advance, and while the infantry, supported by the guns, approached and opened an attack upon the southern face of the enemy's main position, the horse, crossing the Aziziya canal near its junction with the lake, wheeled to the north and made for the Aleppo road. The effect of this move lav in its rapidity. Quite possibly the enemy may have supposed that to deliver an attack from the west it would be necessary to make a détour round the lake, a distance of at least thirty miles. Such a movement would not only have occupied a whole day, it would have left the mounted force too exhausted for further immediate operations. Thus there appeared to be a loophole, but when, instead, the British cavalry cut across the northern edge of the lake, a distance of not more than ten miles, they not only arrived west of the Aziziya canal fully fit for further activity, but saved a whole day.

And this manœuvre was accompanied by another complementary of it. The infantry had pushed on from the Mushaid ridge in two columns, the Column on the left slightly in advance. It was the Left Column which opened the assault. Aided by the character of the ground the enemy's opposition was stiff. All the same, the Left Column seized part of the defences and consolidated the position. In these operations, though all the troops engaged displayed admirable gallantry, the Dorsets and 5th Gurkhas particularly distinguished

themselves and earned a mention in despatches. By this time it was early evening, and as the action had begun at dawn, and the troops had been on foot during part of the preceding night, the assault was not further pressed. If the enemy was left under the impression that his resistance had been in the main successful, so much the better. When darkness came on the Right Column passing in rear was transferred to the left of the line, and at dawn delivered a renewed attack along the Aziziya embankment. They made good their footing.

As it stood on the evening of September 28 the situation was that the Turkish force occupied a triangle, the northern side of it the bank of the Euphrates; the south-eastern side his line across the sand dunes; the south-western what was still left of his defences along the Aziziya canal. His only possible way out, therefore, was through Ramadie, at the north-western corner, along the Aleppo road. The Aleppo road, however, was now obstructed by the British cavalry, while on the south-east face and part of the south-west of his main position he was held by the infantry.

It is not surprising in the circumstances that retreat had been resolved upon. Evidently it was believed that the Turkish troops could still break through the British cavalry. At three in the morning the Turks in massed formation debouched from Ramadie on the Aleppo road. The fight was hot, for the effort to break through was resolute. But the British horse, besides exhibiting great dash in attack, were strongly supported by Horse Artillery and batteries of Hotchkiss guns. The enemy's losses were severe. After the fighting had gone on for an hour and a half and it became plain that no retreat could be effected save as a rout, he withdrew again into the town.

While these events to the west were in progress the attack of the British infantry was resumed and delivered against the south-eastern face of the triangle and along the embankment of the canal. By half-past seven in the morning the 39th Garhwalis seized the

296

bridge carry Turks in Ra

The attactown. During posted to dilled or vice Punjabis erreached the commander, capitulation rounding undemoralised developmen made prison

More imp the captur material an arms and launches; captures we to prosecut equipment was both slo conditions enemy could

Simultane cavalry with the Tigris I Bakuba structure border. The lying at the been used a value in organism. The aride of much the most purised by the in the mortattempted But they have the structure of the str

ches. By

ction had

oot during

ot further

mpression

cessful, so

the Right

the left of

tack along

ood their

the situa-

angle, the

d dunes:

s defences

th-western

ppo road,

h cavalry,

south-west

s believed

rough the

die on the

effort to

tish horse.

re strongly

Hotchkiss After the

nalf and it

ed save as

rogress the

d delivered

iangle and half-past

seized the

try.

way out,

AFTER THE CAPTURE OF BAGDAD

bridge carrying the Aleppo route over the canal. The Turks in Ramadie were now sealed up.

The attack was pressed from this west side of the town. During the struggle for the bridge—the Turks posted to defend it fought to the last and those not killed or wounded were taken prisoners—the 90th Punjabis entered Ramadie, and, pushing eastwards, reached the Turkish headquarters. There the enemy commander, Ahmed Bey, surrendered. No formal capitulation occurred. It had become a question of rounding up the remnants of the Turkish force, demoralised alike by the rapidity of the onset and its developments. An hour before noon all had been made prisoners. There were 3,454.

More important, however, than the prisoners were the captures of material. These included railway material and supplies; engineering stores; reserves of arms and munitions; two barges and two armed launches; and 13 guns besides machine-guns. The captures were important because they crippled ability to prosecute the campaign. Transport of military equipment from Aleppo to places on the Euphrates was both slow and difficult. Under the most favourable conditions months would have to elapse before the enemy could make good this loss.

Simultaneously with the operations at Ramadie the cavalry with the British forces on the Bagdad side of the Tigris had by a bold move from Deltawa through Bakuba struck north-east to Mendali on the Persian border. This small town, a Turkish frontier post lying at the foot of the Pusht-i-Kuh mountains, had been used as a minor base of supplies, and had proved of value in organising raids on the Tigris line of communications. The British cavalry dash, though it meant a ride of more than sixty miles, was accomplished for the most part during the night of April 28–29. Surprised by the apparition of these mounted troops, early in the morning of April 29 the Turks holding Mendali attempted no resistance, and fled at once into the hills. But they had been given no time to make away with the

Keenly cor

the General

of the inha

at Bagdad

of the city "Hamlet"

arranged i

custom co

regard for

drank the

Next day

five days

considering

fifty-four-

his work w

the city h

had so we

who, havin

battle and

him as a gr

of the Brit

was placed

To earlier

the conduc

At the co

supplies the town contained. Among the most useful captures were 300 baggage camels. This stroke disposed of the last vestige of Turkish force in Mesopotamia between Ramadie on the one side and Kifri on the other.

Not alone, however, had Turkish power been abolished; British authority substituted for it had been steadily consolidated. The work of re-organisation initiated at Basra was beginning to show fruit, and was reflected alike in the health and efficiency of the army of occupation and in the regularity of the administration and resultant tranquillity.

Above all, the river transport had continued to improve. At the same time, additional lines of railway had been laid down. Extended though they had been, the facilities afforded by the port of Basra had become insufficient. They were accordingly further enlarged by the construction of a supplemental port on lines

advised by a Committee on the spot.

Looking at it as a whole, the work achieved by Sir Stanley Maude had been as thorough as it had been brilliant. On his arrival the Turkish power appeared to have entered upon a new lease of vitality. He had done more than destroy it; building upon the foundations of his predecessors Nixon and Lake, who, though their tasks had been left unfinished, had proceeded on sound principles, he had reared a solid structure. The army was efficient and in good health; the native population content. Diseases like cholera, enteric, scurvy and dysentery, which had taken a heavy toll of the troops during the earlier stages of the campaign, had been reduced to a minimum or stamped out. It is not alone fertility and brilliance of resource which mark out the commander of genius; it is the capacity incidentally of taking infinite pains as to details.

Maude had toiled hard; how hard few save his subordinates knew. It was his unfailing care which led to his untimely decease, a public calamity hardly to be estimated, for the needs of war had in him discovered a great soldier. Though in the camps cholera cases had become few, there were spots in the country

AFTER THE CAPTURE OF BAGDAD

where among the civil population the scourge lingered. Keenly concerned in the measures for dealing with it, the General made a tour of these districts. The gratitude of the inhabitants was marked.

At the conclusion of this tour General Maude attended at Bagdad a fête at which most of the influential residents of the city assisted. The function, a performance of "Hamlet" by scholars of the Jewish school, had been arranged in his honour. In accordance with native custom coffee was set before him, and as a sign of regard for English usages, sugar and milk. The General drank the coffee after having diluted it with the milk. Next day he had the symptoms of acute cholera. In five days he was dead. He had refused inoculation, considering it in his own case and at his age-he was fifty-four—unnecessary. Unwittingly he had sealed his work with his life. Outside the Old North Gate of the city he was buried with the military honours he had so well won, his burial place surrounded by men who, having shared with him the perils and fatigues of battle and rejoiced with him in victory, now mourned him as a great, fearless, and kindly spirit, the true type of the British soldier. The Command in Mesopotamia was placed in the capable hands of General Marshall. To earlier distinctions General Marshall had just added the conduct of the operations at Ramadie.

299

st useful disposed opotamia the other. bolished: steadily initiated reflected f occupation and

inued to f railway nad been, d become enlarged on lines

ed by Sir had been peared to He had e foundao, though eeded on ire. The ne native enteric, vy toll of ampaign, out. It ce which capacity ils.

save his re which ty hardly him diss cholera e country

CHAPTER XVI

THE CAMPAIGN IN SYRIA

Offensive in support of Mesopotamia operations—Battle of El Arish -British advance to Rafa-Physical features of southern Syria -Turkish defences in Palestine -Haste of the British preparations -First British attack upon Gaza-Reasons for its defeat-Plans of General Allenby-Their daring-Naval co-operation-Three months of preparation—Enemy's counter-moves—British attack on Beersheba—A successful surprise—Rapid developments—Feint assault upon Gaza—Seizure of the Tuweil Abu Jerwal ridge -Enemy defences at Ruweika and Rushdi carried-Turning of the Turks' fortified front-The action at Kuweilfe-Turks evacuate Gaza-Hostile forces divided-British advance to Jaffa -Turkish reverse at El Kubab-Capture of the Nebi Samwal ridge-Turning movement through Hebron-Turkish garrison in Jerusalem cut off-Surrender of the city-A brilliant campaign.

Following upon the repulse of the second Sinai enterprise in June and July, 1916, no further German-Turkish attempt took place against the Suez Canal defences. Nevertheless, the enemy remained in possession of El Arish on the coast, and therefore within easy striking distance should his affairs elsewhere warrant renewal of activity. His handicap, as always, was non-command of the sea. That handicap notwithstanding, the presence of the Turks in the Sinai peninsula formed an unpleasant menace.

In January, 1917, the operations against Kut, combined with the suppression of the movement of the Senussi on the west, influenced the British Government to pass in Sinai to the offensive. Assuming it to be successful, the movement would both assist the British attack in Mesopotamia and safeguard Egypt.

Towards the end of January the forces under the

command enemy at E Turkish ga and equipn

So rapid tions too ha as far as R of a light r north-east Egyptian b

Covered

the march force could to rely u Rafa was reinforce! British in 1 molestation into an ad

But the use of the Egypt, he possibility been urged failures.

To follo note the area of the contiguous plain. Ea with the c undulated. scored by rocky dec as they ar the dry s Roads pra plain to tl of that ch

East of

THE CAMPAIGN IN SYRIA

command of Sir Archibald Murray moved against the enemy at El Arish and gained a complete victory. The Turkish garrison there was destroyed and its stores

and equipment captured.

So rapid a stroke had not been looked for. Preparations too had been made for pushing the British advance as far as Rafa, and for supporting it by the construction of a light railway. Rafa is on the coast at the extreme north-east corner of Sinai, and just within the nominal

Egyptian boundary.

Covered by Australian Light Horse and by Camelry, the march along the coast route was swift. The British force could move comparatively light since it was able to rely upon accompanying shipping for supplies. Rafa was reached and seized before the enemy could reinforce! In possession of that important post the British in laying their line of railway were secure against molestation. They were thus able to convert Rafa into an advanced base.

But the enemy naturally had also made the best use of the interval. While contemplating attack upon Egypt, he had not neglected to provide against the possibility of counter-attack. All the more had he been urged towards those precautions because of past

failures.

To follow the operations in Syria it is necessary to note the leading physical features of the southern area of that great province. The district of Palestine contiguous to the Mediterranean is a long, narrow plain. East of this plain, inland and roughly parallel with the coast, is a broad ridge of tableland, its surface undulated. Its western face towards the plain is scored by defiles, for the most part with steep and rocky declivities. In the rainy season these wadis, as they are called, are the beds of roaring torrents; in the dry season tracks of broken rocks and stones. Roads practicable for wheeled traffic from the coastal plain to the highlands are few. The main cross route of that character runs from Jaffa to Jerusalem.

East of the Palestine ridge occurs the strange pro-

301

f El Arish hern Syria eparations eat—Plans ion—Three tish attack opments erwal ridge Turning of ilife—Turks ce to Jaffa bi Samwal garrison in

mpaign.

d Sinai Germanez Canal n possesthin easy warrant ays, was notwithpeninsula

t of the vernment it to be a British

nder the

found trough of Jordan, the Dead Soa, nearly 1,300 feet below sea level, marking its lowest depth. The abrupt drop from the Palestine ridge into this valley is in places 2,000 feet. On the farther side of the valley rises the western face of the great plateau of Moab. To the south the trough is continued towards the Red Sea, dividing the arid uplands of Arabia from those of Sinai.

At the southern end of the Palestine ridge the coastal plain broadens and extends inland. The depression, fertile and under cultivation, marks Palestine off from the desert of Sinai, to the south-west. This level expanse is also itself marked off from the Palestine ridge by the wadi or valley of the Ghuzze, a considerable river which skirts round the southern foot of the ridge. from Beersheba to the Mediterranean. From the valley of the Ghuzze at a point about ten miles from the coast branches off to north-east the Wadi es Sheria. Between the two valleys there is a triangle of rugged country. The peculiarity of these wadis is their perpen-They are less valleys in the ordinary dicular sides. sense of the word than broad cracks worn by the water in the stony soil, and form military obstacles of some difficulty.

Situated at the point of an outlying westerly spur of the Palestine ridge, and where the coastal plain is narrowest, Gaza forms a kind of gateway barring advance from Sinai to the north. Gaza had been converted into a fortress of the first class, surrounded by earthworks among the sand dunes lying between the town and the coast, and by works on the heights behind it. All these defences were heavily wired in. But along the spur extending inland, and in the triangle of country between the Wadi es Sheria and the Wadi Ghuzze, other defences had been laid out. They extended indeed as far as Beersheba, nearly thirty miles from the To Beersheba there is a mule track from Rafa, and then through the hills northwards to Hebron a mountain road, but too rugged for wheeled traffic, It is not until Hebron, twenty-five miles north of Beersheba, is re becomes p existence t

Formerly indifferent to link up the super Gaza-Beer well paved and expension, of a

An attac a range of was a seric in strength adequate r

The prepairst, not General Marather to effects that resources, ment at ho hension as The real contamia were yet realised in Mesopot advisable speed as o north.

Secondly up to this had done, caution.

Thus has took place far from tl Egypt prop plies, Sir A arly 1,300 pth. The his valley de of the plateau of 1 towards abia from

he coastal epression, off from this level Palestine asiderable the ridge, the valley from the es Sheria. of rugged ir perpenordinary the waters of some

erly spur l plain is g advance erted into arthworks and the l it. All along the f country Ghuzze, extended from the om Rafa, Hebron d traffic. of Beersheba, is reached that this road, continued to Jerusalem, becomes practicable for vehicles. Beersheba owes its existence to its wells.

Formerly the road from Gaza to Beersheba was as indifferent as that from Beersheba to Hebron, but to link up the various defences the Turks had, under the supervision of German engineers, converted the Gaza-Beersheba track into an excellent motor route, well paved and greatly straightened. It was a laborious and expensive piece of work, but, as a lateral communication, of great military utility.

An attack upon such a system of defences perched on a range of rugged hills and with a river in front of them, was a serious undertaking; doubly so if they were held in strength. Nor could attack hope to succeed without

adequate preparation.

The preparations were hurried, and from two causes. First, not yet understanding the thoroughness of General Maude's work in Mesopotamia, and looking rather to the occupation of Bagdad and its political effects than to the destruction of the enemy's military resources, there was on the part of the British Government at home what proved to be an unwarranted apprehension as to the possibilities of a Turkish reaction. The real conditions governing the campaign in Mesopotamia were even now not fully grasped. Nor was it yet realised that Maude was tearing up Turkish power in Mesopotamia by the roots. It was judged, therefore, advisable to push the operations in Syria with all speed as one preventive of a Turkish rebound in the north.

Secondly, the rapid success of the Syria operations up to this point had bred, just as those of Townshend had done, confidence where there ought to have been caution. The difficulties on the spot were under-rated.

Thus hastened, the attack on the Palestine defences took place in April. Not caring to hazard his force far from the coast, having regard to its distance from Egypt proper and its dependence upon seaborne supplies, Sir Archibald Murray formed the plan of directing

his main onset against Gaza, and of assisting it by a diversion along the Wadi Ghuzze, by that means covering his right flank. The enemy's tactics, it turned out, were at Gaza to stand upon the defensive, and to throw the chief weight of a Turkish counter-thrust against the British right. It mattered little even should the British get into Gaza; they could not remain there if the Turks on the British right succeeded in cutting in between the Expeditionary Force and the Rafa base. In fact, if the British could not fight their way out of Gaza they would be entrapped. These tactics

of the enemy were bold, but sound.

The assault upon Gaza met with what appeared to be complete success. The defences facing south-west were carried by storm, and the troops penetrated into the town. But the mobile column covering the British right, hopelessly outnumbered, could not resist the weight of the enemy force thrown against it. As the Turkish commander had shrewdly foreseen, Gaza had hastily to be evacuated. The British were compelled to fall back, attacked both in flank and rear. Nothing indeed but the valour of the troops saved the situation, and nothing but the Turks' heavy losses prevented the enemy from pressing his advantage right home. This was a British failure, however, and an expensive For three days, during which the British slowly fell back, the Turks spared no effort. It was the reckless character of their attacks which in the end frustrated their design. While obliged to retire upon the lines from which they had set out in this phase of the operations, and for the time being immobilised there, the British had so far punished the enemy that he too was forced to remain inactive. That state of things lasted throughout the next three months.

The Commandership-in-Chief of the Egyptian Expeditionary Force was transferred to General Sir E. H. H. Allenby, marked out by his achievements in the campaign in France. He had orders, on arriving in Egypt at the end of June, 1917, to report on the conditions under which offensive operations against the Turks in

Palestine mi or winter. submitted a examination

In the me grown more the enemy /1 in a comm each other b capable of 1 systems wer Rushdi and cations betwe all the defe increase inst interval linke presenting as force to nine a total of sor a line of fort looked on th

Separated whole width limited as r could be tra by the water was the more enemy had b where wells question to c were altogeth railway from that line exte had been link Another bran carried south Dead Sea an southern tern tively a com have been la

THE CAMPAIGN IN SYRIA

Palestine might be resumed during the ensuing autumn or winter. His proposals, which were approved, were submitted after a visit to the front and a personal

examination of the position.

In the meanwhile the obstacles to be overcome had grown more formidable. Between Gaza and Beersheba the enemy had constructed six groups of works, each in a commanding tactical position. Distant from each other by not more than 2,000 yards, and therefore capable of mutual support, the interlying groups or systems were at Sihan, Atawineh, Baha, Abu Hareira, Rushdi and Ruweika. The excellent lateral communications between Gaza and Beersheba appeared to render all the defences yet more secure. Nevertheless, to increase insurance the enemy had not only in the interval linked up the groups by lines of trenches, thus presenting an uninterrupted front, but had raised his force to nine divisions of infantry and one of cavalry, a total of some 180,000 men. Assuredly to attack such a line of fortifications with a numerically smaller force looked on the face of it an impossible undertaking.

Separated as they were from Egypt proper by the whole width of the Sinai desert, the British troops were limited as regards numbers by 'the supplies which could be transported, and they were not less limited by the water problem. Indeed the problem of water was the more difficult of the two. One object of the enemy had been to keep the British Force in a position where wells were few. He on his side had no water question to contend against. His communications too were altogether more adequate. There was the main railway from Damascus to rely upon. A branch of that line extended down to Jaffa, and the railhead there had been linked by a military light railway with Gaza. Another branch of the main railway was east of Jordan carried south along the plateau of Moab, past the Dead Sea and on to the Yemen, with Mecca as its southern terminus. Had it been presently or prospectively a commercial project this line would assuredly have been laid along the inhabited districts of the

n Expedi-E. H. H. the camin Egypt conditions Turks in

R EAST

g it by a

ans cover-

irned out. l to throw

gainst the

rould the

n there if

n cutting the Rafa

their way

ese tactics

ared to be west were

into the ne British

resist the

. As the

Gaza had

compelled

Nothing

situation,

prevented th home.

expensive ish slowly

was the

1 the end

e upon the

ase of the

sed there,

nat he too of things

plateau close by the ancient north and south road, some ten miles on an average east of the Dead Sea shores on that side. The line, however, had been constructed another twenty miles or more on the average farther east through desert solitudes, public utility being

sacrificed to security against attack.

A commander less resolute than General Allenby might well have been deterred by these prospects. But a study of the situation had revealed just one weak place in the hostile dispositions. Between the Ruweika defences and those round Beersheba there was a gap of some four and a half miles. This stretch of the country was lofty and rugged, so rugged that regular fortification would have been superfluous. Nevertheless the possibility at any rate existed, if the defences of Beersheba could be seized, of turning the enemy's left flank, and of delivering the real attack upon Gaza from the east and north-east; that is, of turning also the main defences of the fortress. ing success, followed up with sufficient rapidity, an advantage of this plan was that the Turkish forces holding the interlying systems of defences, if not cut off, would be forced to evacuate them. Further, the capture of the wells at Beersheba would go far towards easing the water difficulties.

To ensure success, however, the attack upon Beersheba would have to be carried out as a surprise, and to make it a surprise a feint assault had to be arranged against Gaza in the first instance, so that the enemy reserves might not be transferred to the opposite extreme of the

line.

The plan was daring, but this was a situation in which, above all, resource was called for. One advantage of the British over the enemy was the larger proportion of mobile and mounted troops. Uncovered by the capture of the Beersheba defences, the enemy's left flank would be exposed, and the attack might be developed with a speed affording the Turks no opportunity to rally. The defences at Beersheba were, too, not only easier to approach than any of the others, but

Cultivated Plain

COFYRIGHT

JAFFA

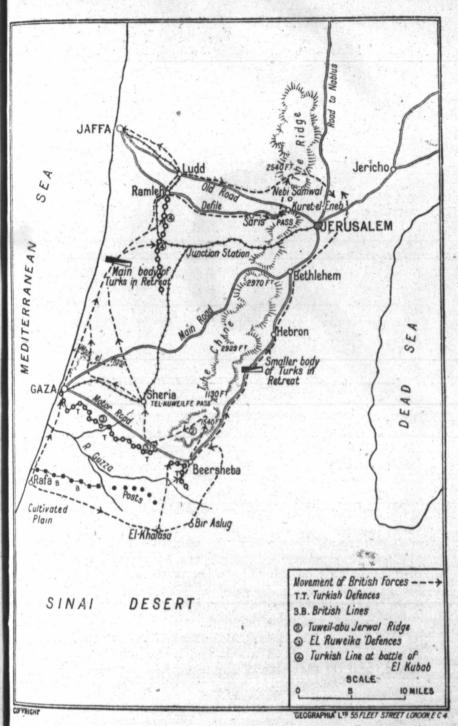
R EAST

uth road, Sea shores onstructed ge farther ity being

l Allenby prospects.
just one tween the eba there his stretch igged that perfluous. existed, if of turning real attack that is, of Assumpidity, an rish forces not cut off, rther, the ar towards

Beersheband to make ged against by reserves seme of the

on in which, vantage of proportion ed by the nemy's left might be s no opporwere, too, others, but



To face page 306.

less elaborate and formidable. Apparently it had been supposed that the British would not venture upon so wide a détour.

Another circumstance which contributed to mislead the hostile command was the support of the British Expedition by the Naval squadron under the orders of Rear-Admiral T. Jackson. That able and alert officer and his staff worked in the closest conjunction with the land forces. An assault upon Gaza, prepared for and backed by the guns of the warships, was not an operation the Turks could afford to take lightly.

In the meantime it was evident that the whole success or failure of the British scheme turned upon arrangements for transport and the supply of the main attacking force. On setting out the force would have to carry with it supplies for at least six days. The force having to operate over country without roads practicable for wheeled traffic, these supplies must be carried upon pack animals.

There were not with the Expedition more than enough

for such a purpose.

The preparations occupied the months of July, August, and September. They included the transport across Sinai of additional batteries of heavy and siege guns; the laying of branch military railways from Rafa to Karm-el-Adabi, some ten miles inland, and from Deir-el-Belah, a small coast town half-way between Rafa and Gaza, across country to the Wadi Ghuzze. Depots of

Supplies and munitions had be to formed at the railheads.

On the enemy's side there were counter-preparations.

New military railways from Gaza to the north-east and east were laid down; further munition depots formed north of Gaza along the coast; and more reinforcements drafted to this front. The work of elaborating the defences went steadily forward. Those round Beersheba were now strengthened and extended.

October 31 had been decided upon by General Allenby

as the date of the Beersheba attack. El Khalasa and Bir Asluj, two points about ten miles south of Beersheba, and on the edge of the Sinai uplands, were to be

the startin were wells improved. the mounte sheba to the rear of the

On Octo western de ascertain a portended, reconnaissa dispatched and three Karm. C laying of t of British offered wa taken, and another, th day, beatin 53rd (Wels ance the er

For the Gaza work fourth day ships joine

Did the gunfire on place on t It is extrefulfilled its tion for th

There w places to through w

In addi execute the the east, the and a brigat Imperial C

THE CAMPAIGN IN SYRIA

had been upon so

R EAST

o mislead ne British orders of ert officer ction with epared for as not an tly.

ole success n arrangeattacking e to carry rce having ticable for ried upon

ian enough

ly, August, ort across iege guns; n Rafa to om Deir-el-Rafa and Depots of e railheads. eparations. h-east and ots formed forcements ing the de-Beersheba

ral Allenby halasa and h of Beerwere to be

the starting places of the mounted troops. There were wells at both places. These were enlarged and improved. It was part of the scheme of attack that the mounted men were to make a détour round Beersheba to the east and north-east, and push in upon the

rear of the place from the hills.

On October 27 the land bombardment of the southwestern defences of Gaza was opened. Desiring to ascertain apparently what exactly this bombardment portended, the enemy on that day threw forward reconnaissance raids of the British line inland. He dispatched a mobile column, two regiments of cavalry, and three battalions of infantry with guns towards Karm. Covering Karm and El Girheir, where the laying of the railway was still in progress, was a line of British outposts held by yeomanry. The defence offered was obstinate. One of the line of posts was taken, and the detachment holding it destroyed; but another, though completely surrounded, held out all day, beating off attack after attack. This enabled the 53rd (Welsh) Division to be moved up. On their appearance the enemy retired.

For the next two days the bombardment of the Gaza works by the land batteries continued. On the fourth day of the bombardment (October 30) the war-

ships joined in.

Did the enemy as yet suspect, notwithstanding this gunfire on his right, that the real assault was to take place on the left of his line? Seemingly he did not. It is extremely probable that the bombardment fully fulfilled its purpose. During October 30 the concentration for the attack upon Beersheba was completed.

There was to be a night march from the jumping-off The concentration was carried places to the south.

through well up to time.

In addition to the Mounted Column detailed/to execute the turning movement through the hills to the east, the force told off for the attack was two divisions and a brigade (part of the 53rd Division) of infantry, the Imperial Camel Corps, and a regiment of cavalry.

Beersheba lies in a recess in the hills on the north side of the Wadi es Seba, a confluent of the Ghuzze. On the south side of the valley rises the Abu Shaar ridge, nearly 1,000 feet high. The ridge had been strongly fortified. It was the intention to assault

and carry it from the western end.

To reach Beersheba from the south or south-west it is necessary to cross a succession of smaller wadis. The night march was, notwithstanding, carried through without a hitch. On the right of the force were the cavalry; on the left the camelry supported by a brigade of the 53rd. These troops on the left were to demonstrate against the defences north of the Wadi es Seba.

By daybreak the advanced defences had been reached. They were after a short bombardment assaulted by London troops, and carried. This enabled the field guns to be brought within range of the hostile main line. Here the works had been strongly wired in, and the cutting of the wire with shrapnel occupied most of the forenoon. Just after midday the attack was thrown forward. In less than an hour the ridge, which formed the key of the defences, had been taken. Though exposed to a very accurate artillery fire the troops showed unshakable steadiness; once in the enemy positions they cleared them with an irresistible sweep. The losses were light.

It was now possible to attack from the south and end on the works, north of the Wadi es Seba, covering Beersheba on the west, and that was at once done. It occupied the afternoon. The back of the defence, however, had been broken. The resistance was patchy.

The attack upon Beersheba had in fact proved a surprise, and the surprise was completed when the same evening and coincidentally with the final clearance of the western defences the Australian Light Horse rode into the town from the east. To arrive at the rendezvous, Khasim Zanna, in the hills five miles to the east, part of the mounted column had ridden in the night 35 and another part 25 miles. A detachment of the force was sent north along the Hebron road to

from that main body which they near Beers is an isolate by the ener determinate column had

Of the 7 taken priso some 500 T that, as G almost con Turkish lef

while no at Beershe the enemy fronting to dunes in se The dunes the sand le labour to ment from about, and heavy. O wards asce placed.

The infa and that intended left of the many as I reserves in being move the substa

Having, reached a miles over the troops

THE CAMPAIGN IN SYRIA

he north Ghuzze. bu Shaar and been assault

R EAST

outh-west, er wadis. I through were the ed by a t were to Wadi es

reached, ulted by field guns ne. Here is cutting forenoon, ward. In the coa very is a very is hakable ared them light.

outh and covering ace done. defence, s patchy. proved a when the clearance ht Horse we at the miles to ridden in tachment a road to

secure Bir es Sakaty, and prevent a counter-surprise from that direction. Debouching from the hills, the main body found themselves in a stretch of flat country which they had to cross. Overlooking this flat expanse, near Beersheba, and at the junction of two valleys, is an isolated hill, called the Tel-el-Seba. It was held by the enemy in some strength, and the defence showed determination. By afternoon, however, the mounted column had seized the position.

Of the Turkish force holding Beersheba 2,000 were taken prisoners. The losses otherwise were so heavy—some 500 Turkish dead were buried on the battlefield—that, as General Allenby recorded, the force was put almost completely out of action. The loss left the

Turkish left flank exposed.

While no time was to be lost in developing the success at Beersheba, it formed part of that development that the enemy should be held at Gaza. The defences there fronting towards the coast extended across the sand dunes in several lines of redoubts linked up by trenches. The dunes are high, more like hills than hummocks, and the sand loose and deep. It had been a considerable labour to establish the fortifications. In the bombardment from sea and land they had been badly knocked about, and the losses of the Turks holding them were heavy. One division of enemy troops, it was afterwards ascertained, had had to be withdrawn and replaced.

The infantry attack had been fixed for November 2, and that date had been decided upon because it was intended to launch the renewed assault against the left of the Turkish line on November 8. To draw as many as possible of the immediately available Turkish reserves into Gaza, and to prevent enemy forces from being moved from that point towards Beersheba, was

the substantial object.

Having, before the hostile lines at Gaza could be reached, a distance to go of from one to nearly two miles over heavy sandy ground with stiff declivities, the troops set out early, and while it was yet dark.

The front of the attack, some 6,000 yards in breadth, extended from Sheik Hasan on the coast transversely across the dunes south-east to Umbrella Hill. This last position formed a kind of bastion jutting out from the hostile main line and therefore enfilading any attack. Assault upon it was made a preliminary, and it had, shortly before midnight, been stormed and taken by part of the 52nd (Lowland) Division. That procedure simplified the larger operation.

Timed for three in the morning the latter proved successful. Sheik Hasan was captured, and the defences over the whole of the front attacked with the exception of some last line positions which still held out in the centre. This meant that if the enemy was now to keep the British out of Gaza, he must reinforce there and

without delay.

Operations at the Beersheba end of the line had not meanwhile been suspended. Though some further preparations had to be carried out, and the water question dealt with, a move had been made on November 1. The Mountain Column was sent north-east to secure El-Dhaheriyeh, half way on the road to Hebron, and a junction of secondary routes of some importance. At the same time, the 53rd Division and the Camel Corps pushed from Beersheba due north into the hills. The purpose of this move was, as it were, to keep open the door for the impending flanking pressure. Just north of Beersheba begins the backbone of the Palestine ridge. The chine runs nearly south to north. The southern apex, Tuweil Abu Jerwal, 1,505 feet in height, had become a tactical position of, in the circumstances, no slight consequence. In the enemy's hands this summit and the chine might prove, if not an impregnable, at any rate a formidable barrier. To seize it forthwith before it could be occupied by him was essential. The surprise at Beersheba, followed by the rapidity of this next move, enabled the seizure to be made.

There is at Tel Kuweilfe, some miles farther to the north, a break in the chine forming a pass from east to west. Mounted troops had been pushed forward to

secure the was alread the tables, his availab 5, several a though the eastern ou succeed.

Notwiths reserves wh parts of the

It was t concentrati point was operations. enemy's mo no change Tuweil Abu assault for defences lyi running sou the motor Kuweilfe at

Both att by the yeo outlying wo by London of the def So rapid in next group i also capture

From Ru covering Gamiles. Whi the yeoman the valley a as possible. their hands.

Beyond d

ER EAST

n breadth, cansversely Hill. This y out from ading any inary, and rmed and on. That

er proved e defences exception out in the w to keep there and

e had not further ater quesrember 1. to secure oron, and portance. ne Camel the hills. eep open re. Just Palestine th. The n height, astances. nds this egnable, orthwith al. The of this

to the om east ward to

THE CAMPAIGN IN SYRIA

secure the position. But the enemy, now on the alert, was already there in force. Indeed he essayed to turn the tables, and pass to the offensive. Bringing up all his available reserves, he made, during November 4 and 5, several attempts to dislodge the mounted troops who, though they could not get through it, had barred the eastern outlet of the pass. These attacks did not succeed.

Notwithstanding the pressure at Gaza the Turkish reserves which had been thrown into this fighting were

parts of the 19th, 27th, and 16th Divisions.

It was the opinion of General Allenby that hostile concentration at Tel Kuweilfe and to the north of that point was intended to confuse and delay his plan of operations. Possibly enough it was, but whatever the enemy's motive the British commander decided to make no change in his procedure. Having secured the Tuweil Abu Jerwal part of the chine, his intention was to assault forthwith and in flank the Ruweika group of defences lying just to the west of it along a lower rise, running south-east to north-west, and commanding the motor route. He intended to attack towards Tel Kuweilfe at the same time.

Both attacks succeeded. That at Ruweika opened by the yeomanry, who with great dash assaulted the outlying works on the east of the system, was developed by London and Irish battalions, who, taking the rest of the defences in enfilade, speedily cleared them. So rapid indeed was the progress of the attack that the next group farther to the west, the Rushdi system, was

also captured.

From Ruweika across country to Sheria, the position covering Gaza from the east, was not more than five miles. While the operations at Rushdi were going on, the yeomanry struck towards Sheria, and reached the valley at that place. The infantry followed as soon as possible. By nightfall Sheria railway station was in their hands.

Beyond doubt this succession of attacks constituted a fine feat of arms. The defences wrested from the

enemy on this day had covered altogether a front of seven miles. Some 600 Turks were taken prisoners

and guns and machine-guns captured.

The attack turned the Kuweilfe position. To the 53rd Division, told off for the operations there, the enemy offered a stubborn opposition. The Welshmen stormed a hill commanding the pass, lost it in a counterattack, retook it, and another hill behind it at the same time, and made good their footing. They had kept a good part of the enemy's reserves here engaged just as another part of his force was held at Gaza. In between at Sheria, the point that mattered, he was left weak. While the way was open General Allenby made the most of the chance by striking in and cutting the Turkish army into two parts. His mounted troops, kept in readiness for the purpose, were launched in pursuit towards Huj and Jemmamah to the north-west, closing the roads from Gaza to Jerusalem. Divided from the force at and to the north of Kuweilfe, nothing was now left for the Turks still holding Gaza and the defensive groups at Atawineh and Baha save to retire along the coast, while the remainder of the Turkish force was driven inland to the north-east.

The Turks in Gaza and in these more westerly defences had, however, already realised that it was time to be gone. A second British "holding" attack on the remaining Gaza defences had been fixed for the night of November 6-7, for since November 3 the bombardment had been kept up. The opposition proved to be slight, and in fact no more than a blind to screen evacuation. That had taken place during the night. The assault fixed for dawn found most of the defences

deserted.

Meanwhile the operations against the remains of the hostile front to the east of Gaza were being pressed. At daybreak on November 7 the Hareira group of works was taken, and Sheria at the same time.

Thus in the course of one week was swept away what had appeared to be one of the most formidable and extensive mazes of fortifications ever elaborated, and judged by
a signal exthe attacki
two. But
enemy give
months of
fortified fro
Another

that of the For the t railway and had been cu could not re this strikin was now a

The near the enemy where anot close to the river. A B forthwith. rearguard, l British cross north bank. At the sam north along junction of another Tur ing lasted those of the and Baha gr the night of through Gaz Huj. Their resistance w Worcester a twelve of the make good t and much of doned.

ER EAST

a front of prisoners

To the there, the Welshmen a counterit at the They had e engaged at Gaza. d, he was d Allenby ad cutting ed troops, inched in orth-west,

Divided , nothing a and the to retire e Turkish

y defences ime to be on the the night bombardved to be en evacught. The defences

ns of the pressed. of works

way what able and ated, and

THE CAMPAIGN IN SYRIA

judged by the enemy to be impregnable. The feat was a signal example of military skill and audacity, for the attacking force was numerically the smaller of the two. But the weak spot had been discovered, and the enemy given no time to recover. Laid out after many months of labour and at enormous cost, these miles of fortified front had literally been crumpled up.

Another phase of the operations was entered upon—

that of the pursuit.

For the time being it was certain that, since both the railway and road routes between Gaza and Jerusalem had been cut, the divided fragments of the enemy forces could not reunite save well to the north. To emphasise this striking military advantage to the British force

was now a primary aim.

The nearest point at which possibly, north of Gaza, the enemy might attempt a stand was the Wadi Hesi, where another western spur of the main ridge came close to the coast, broken besides by the inlet of the river. A British force was pushed on to the Wadi Hesi forthwith. They found the position held by a Turkish rearguard, but though the defence was resolute, the British crossed the river, established themselves on the north bank, and held it against several counter-attacks. At the same time British mounted troops advanced north along the Jaffa road. At Beit Hanun, the junction of the Jaffa route with that to Jerusalem, another Turkish rearguard had been posted. The fighting lasted here throughout the day. Coincidentally those of the enemy who had been holding the Atawineh and Baha groups of defences, evacuating them during the night of November 7, and finding the main route through Gaza cut, had retreated across country through Their rearguard stood there, and though this resistance was broken by an intrepid charge of the Worcester and Warwick Yeomanry who rounded up twelve of the enemy's guns, the main body were able to make good their escape. A mass of munitions, stores, and much of their artillery, however, had to be abandoned.

From Huj the British pursuit was pressed towards El Meidel, Julis and Beit Duras; it swerved, that is to say, laterally towards the coast so as to take the Turks retreating north in flank. On the other wing, in the meantime, the enemy had fallen back from Tel Kuweilfe by cross routes towards Hebron. The difficulties in the way of the British movements were now less the strength of the opposition encountered than the problems of supplies and of water. Already the British troops were most of them a good many miles from railhead, and in a country little favourable for transport. Water there was and enough, but it had to be drawn up from wells, and even where the means for drawing it had not been destroyed, as was frequently the case, rapid distribution was not easy. To neglect these problems would in the end have meant loss of time, and it was important, if the enemy was not to rally, that time should be saved.

Even on November 9 evidences were not lacking of a The larger part of the broken Turkish army was that retiring north. To relieve the pressure upon it the enemy was hurrying what reinforcements he could raise towards Hebron, and he made a counterdemonstration from that place. But General Allenby advisedly treated this apparent threat for what it was worth. He was aware that in the fighting round Tel Kuweilfe this smaller part of the Turkish army had suffered severely. He knew it to be short alike of supplies and of ammunition, and its hasty retirement over indifferent roads and through difficult country had contributed further to its disorganisation. Effective counter-attack from that quarter was therefore not immediately to be looked for. He contented himself accordingly on that side and for the present with blocking the outlets, and pressed the main pursuit.

The effort of the enemy was now to form a new line extending from Hebron north-west through Beit Jibrin on the main road from Gaza to Jerusalem, and by that

means to link up with the coastal force.

This opposition rapidly stiffened. Indeed it soon

became ap make a st hitherto n but becaus the southe fatiguing.

At once and to cov had from along the Kubab on position, fo

But as troops mo press nort reached Na thirty mile the farther

It was th right of the a bold dec and puzzle force to res a rupture o the peril of therefore, t

The attac on their ri November advance a villages su of support Lowlanders with consp reached and and El Mus The horse p numerous n

This succ to the nort

ER EAST

ed towards that is to the Turks ng, in the el Kuweilfe lties in the ne strength roblems of ish troops n railhead, rt. Water n up from it had not apid distriproblems and it was

acking of a kish army sure upon ements he a counteral Allenby hat it was round Tel army had t alike of retirement t country Effective refore not ed himself

that time

a new line Beit Jibrin and by that

vith block-

d it soon

THE CAMPAIGN IN SYRIA

became apparent that the enemy had determined to make a stand. British movements were slower than hitherto not merely because of the supplies problem, but because of the temperature. There had set in from the southern deserts a hot wind which rendered marches fatiguing.

At once to flank the British movement along the coast, and to cover the routes inland to Jerusalem, the enemy had from Beit Jibrin northwards taken up a position along the western edge of the highlands as far as El Kubab on the Jaffa-Jerusalem road. It was a strong position, for it barred the defiles.

But as a menace it failed. The British mounted troops moving along the coastal plain continued to press north. Already on November 11 they had reached Nahr Sukeirer at the outlet of the Mema river, thirty miles north of Gaza, and secured a bridgehead on the farther side, the Murreh hill.

It was the intention of General Allenby to attack the right of the hostile front near the Jaffa-Jerusalem road; a bold decision, but one best calculated to embarrass and puzzle the enemy. If he moved the weight of his force to resist assault there, the Turkish General risked a rupture of his centre, and he had already experienced the peril of that manœuvre. It was not probable, therefore, that he would run the risk a second time.

The attack, entrusted to the 52nd Division, supported on their right by the mounted troops, took place on November 13. Both infantry and cavalry had to advance across a rolling plain. Walled, flat-roofed villages surrounded by plantations afforded points of support for the defence. But the advance of the Lowlanders was intrepid, and the cavalry rode forward with conspicuous dash. The enemy's positions were reached and cleared, two of the villages he held, Katrah and El Mughar, wrested from him, and his front broken. The horse pushed in, took 1,100 prisoners, 3 guns, and numerous machine-guns.

This success enabled the British, while the pursuit to the north went on, to push the remainder of the

Turks east and frustrated their attempted conjunction. So far the effort to arrest the pursuit had broken down. The Turkish losses alike in artillery, munitions and other equipment and stores had been heavy. The 9,000 prisoners taken up to this time, and the enemy's casualties, though severe, might conceivably and possibly be made up. The disorganisation of equipment would take time, and much time, to repair. For the same reason as in Mesopotamia, even though it might not be to the same extent, the Turkish campaign in southern Syria had been seriously crippled.

One result of the victory of November 13 followed at once. On November 14 the British troops reached and captured the railway junction where the line from Gaza joined that from Jaffa. This was a vital link in

the enemy's communications.

The pursuit north was pressed as well as the advance east. The cavalry reached Ramleh and Ludd, the former on the main road, the latter on the railway to Jaffa, and occupied both towns by the evening of November 15. By this move Jaffa had become undefendable. The port was occupied on November 16 without opposition.

This capture was important. In possession of Jaffa the British Expeditionary Force had a new and excellently situated base for oversea supplies. The main

handicap of the campaign had been overcome.

No feature of the operations up to this time had been more remarkable than their rapidity. A fortnight only had elapsed since the attack upon Beersheba, but in that fortnight, besides the destruction of the enemy's fortified front, there had taken place, reckoning from the British lines before Gaza to Jaffa, an advance covering 75 miles of country. Farther inland the advance had covered forty miles, and that in spite of the trying conditions of the climate and some stiff fighting.

All the southern part of the coastal plain had been cleared. Save, however, its southern extremity, the enemy still kept his footing on the highland ridge; the

question now was to wrest it from him.

318

Advance facing wes importance Jaffa-Jerus and the en

Between uplands ris
There is a
Jaffa to Je
pass, but h
attaining a
2,900 feet.
Nebi Samy
Nablus ros
that road a
to ensure
ridge had

the hills eading second a track frozend in covered the defile. The covered by

A move

On Nov tion met end of tha east as Sar elevation is some obsti point, read The enemy summit is which he h

Early of their attack along a section the north. the Turks

THE CAMPAIGN IN SYRIA

njunction.
ken down.
tions and
tyy. The
e enemy's
d possibly
ent would
the same
night not

R EAST

followed s reached line from cal link in

southern

e advance add, the ailway to vening of me undeember 16

of Jaffa and excel-The main

had been night only heba, but the enemy's ning from a dvance hand the pite of the fighting. had been mity the

mity, the

Advance from the plain through the minor defiles facing west was impracticable. The one break of any importance was that through which was carried the Jaffa-Jerusalem road, but even that defile was narrow and the enemy had not neglected to obstruct it.

Between Hebron and Jerusalem the backbone of the uplands rises to more than 3,000 feet above sea level. There is a fall to 2,363 feet where the main road from Jaffa to Jerusalem crosses what is to all intents a broad pass, but beyond this again to the north the chine rises, attaining at its highest point an elevation of nearly 2,900 feet. As this part of the chine, known as the Nebi Samwal ridge, ran parallel with the Jerusalem-Nablus road, and as it appeared necessary to strike that road at some point north of the Holy City in order to ensure evacuation of the country to the south, the ridge had to be seized.

A movement by the yeomanry from Ramleh through the hills eastward was begun on November 17. Following secondary routes, they reached Shilta. There is a track from that place over the mountains, but it proved impassable for wheeled traffic. The move covered the flank of the advance through the main defile. The opposite flank to the south was similarly covered by an advance of the Australian Light Horse.

On November 19 the infantry set out. The opposition met with was from Turkish rearguards. By the end of that day the main defile had been cleared as far east as Saris, at the western foot of the pass, where the elevation is 2,000 feet. Saris had been defended with some obstinacy. To the summit of the pass from that point, reached by a zigzag road, is about two miles. The enemy was prepared to dispute the passage. The summit is marked by the village of Kuryet-el-Enab, which he had organised for defence.

Early on November 20 the British troops resumed their attack. It was aided by an offensive movement along a secondary and nearly parallel road some miles to the north. Working up the declivity the troops drove the Turks out of Kuryet-el-Enab with the bayonet.

The attack to the north carried the village of Beit Dukka, and gained there a footing on the chine. To clear it the troops moved from Kuryet-el-Enab along the line of the backbone northwards. By nightfall the

whole Nebi Samwal ridge had been won.

The yeomanry were now thrown forward to the east of the rise, but the enemy was plainly determined to keep the Nablus road open. He had received reinforcements, was well provided with artillery, and strong in machine-guns, and it was evident that a powerful-effort would have to be made to dislodge him. Indeed, the first use made of his reinforcements had been to launch two counter-attacks with the object of recovering the chine. Owing to difficulties of transport, the British had at this time only a very limited artillery support. The counter-attacks were beaten, but until the guns could be brought forward, a further advance, it was manifest, could not be essayed. All that could be done in the meantime was to consolidate the positions gained.

Nevertheless, the rapidity of the British movements had realised results which General Allenby justly described as invaluable. They had penetrated the defiles before the enemy had had the opportunity to render them impassable. "The narrow passes from the plain to the plateau of the Judean range," General Allenby observed, "have seldom been forced, and have been fatal to many invading armies. Had the attempt not been made at once, or had it been pressed with less determination, the enemy would have had time to organise his defence in the passes, and the conquest of the plateau would then have been slow, costly, and precarious. As it was, positions had been won from which the final attack could be prepared and

delivered with good prospects of success."

The enemy now resorted to the tactic of harassing local counter-attacks, carried out as far as possible by surprise. His chief efforts were still directed against the Nebi Samwal ridge. In these he incurred serious losses. The attacks proved consistently unsuccessful.

During the first improving supplies a The pla

the attack south threenemy the ment, had character

The co (Welsh) I out from December rugged ar Hebron, a The gener 8th, and Bethlehen positions

On Dec Rain fell mist, and and espec to and in southern

But the considerab were the four miles, Jerusalem front forw western was

Next m
London to
north of a
same time
city to the
The Turki
At noon a

ER EAST

ge of Beit chine. To hab along ghtfall the

ed to the letermined eived reinand strong powerful. Indeed, d been to recovering port, the d artillery but until advance, that could positions

ovements by justly rated the tunity to from the General ced, and Had the in pressed have had and the een slow, had been pared and

harassing ossible by d against d serious uccessful.

THE CAMPAIGN IN SYRIA

During this interval—the later part of November and the first days of December—the British were busy improving roads and tracks, and in moving forward supplies and guns.

The plan of the renewed operations was to combine the attack west of Jerusalem with an advance from the south through Hebron. Apparently on the part of the enemy the latter development, in effect a turning movement, had not been looked for on account of the rugged

character of the country.

The column detailed for the purpose—the 58rd (Welsh) Division, and a regiment of cavalry—moved out from Beersheba on December 4. By nightfall on December 6 their vanguard, after an extraordinarily rugged and toilsome march, was ten miles north of Hebron, and some six miles distant from Jerusalem. The general combined attack had been fixed for the 8th, and the column from the south, having passed Bethlehem on the 7th, was intended to co-operate from positions three miles south of Jerusalem.

On December 7, however, the weather had broken. Rain fell heavily, veiling the whole of the uplands in mist, and so far obscuring the roads that movement, and especially the movement of supplies, became next to and in some instances quite impracticable. The

southern column was in consequence delayed.

But the western attack had achieved results of considerable importance. Difficult as the conditions were the troops advanced over hilly country some four miles, captured the Turkish defences both west of Jerusalem and north of the city, and carried the front forward to within one and a half miles of its western walls.

Next morning (December 9) continuing the attack, London troops and the yeomanry fought their way north of Jerusalem across the Nablus road. At the same time the southern column moving round the city to the east, got astride the main road to Jericho. The Turkish garrison in Jerusalem was thus isolated. At noon a parlementaire appeared with a white flag.

The garrison laid down their arms. General Allenby

made his official entry on December 11.

From the political viewpoint the British occupation of Jerusalem was an event of first class importance. But from a military point of view it should not be forgotten that the prestige of the Turks throughout the Near East has always been essentially that of arms. By the events of this signally brilliant campaign that prestige had been brought to a point beyond precedent low. Through defeat the vitality of a military dominion is irreparably impaired. Here was revealed the radical mistake of German "penetration." It had left the Turkish Empire unable to stand alone, yet had afforded no substitute efficient to sustain the Empire against attack.

EAST

Allenby

cupation ortance. t be formout the of arms. ign that recedent cominion e radical left the afforded against

INDEX

Y 2

Abbas Hilmi, flight and dabdul Aziz, Sment, 4
Abdul Hamidhis dethron Achi Baba, sj. Adriatic, Ausing the, 16
Agagia, action Ahmed Bey, Ramadie, 2
Alexander II proposed R. Ali-el-Gharbi, Allanson, Maattack by Bair, 196
Allenby, Gerappointed t Expedition, attack, 300 operations, 320
Amara, plan Anatolia, effer Anglo-French Anglo-Persian Governmen Anzacs, rdle a Turkish pla 156-7
Armenian masthe, 10
Athens, intrig 236; Natio Australians in of the, 101

Abbas Hilmi, Khedive, 13; his flight and deposition, 41 Abdul Aziz, Sultan, his dethronement, 4 Abdul Hamid, accession of, 4; his dethronement, 13 Achi Baba, spurs of, 92-93 Adriatic, Austrian policy regarding the, 16

Agagia, action at, 250
Ahmed Bey, his surrender at
Ramadie, 297
Alexander II of Russia, and the proposed Russo-German pact, 1

Ali-el-Gharbi, action at, 140 Allanson, Major C. G. L., leads attack by Gurkhas at Sari

Bair, 196 Allenby, Gen. Sir E. H. H., appointed to command of Syria Expedition, 304; his plan of attack, 306; rapidity of his operations, 318; their results,

Amara, plan for advance to, 107 Anatolia, effect of the War on, 25 Anglo-French Entente, 1904, 13 Anglo-Persian oil-fields, Turkish Government and the, 22

Anzacs, rôle assigned to the, 153; Turkish plan for walling in the,

Armenian massacres, policy behind the, 10

Athens, intrigues of the Court at, 236; National Clubs at, 238 Australians in Gallipoli, tactics of the, 101

Austro-German alliance, conclusion of, 1879, 5

Aylmer, Gen. Sir F., appointed to command "Tigris Corps," 135; his Expedition for the relief of Kut, 137; his plans disapproved, 138

Bagdad, railway to, from Constantinople, 8; project of an advance to, 115-118; Maude's plan of operations against, 274-5; British entry into, 277 Bakuba, British capture of, 284

Baldwin, Brig.-Gen. A. H., his advance upon Chanuk Bair, 196; defeat of his force, 198 Balkan League, formation of, 11

Balkan War, the first, 13

Baratoff, Gen., his operations in Persia, 137; junction of the British with, 289

Barrett, Gen. Sir A. A., arrival at Saniyeh, 36; disposition of forces, 104

Barrow, Sir Edmund, report on occupation of Basra, 34; opinion on Badgad plan, 115, 117 Basra, Turkish advance upon, 35;

British capture of, 38
Beauchamp, Col. Sir H., his disappearance, 213

Beersheba, German-Turkish de-fences of, 303; British attack upon, 309-311

Behera province, population of,

Beit Hussein, battle of, 247

Bengal lights, Turkish use of, 95 Bir Shola, Battle of, 249 Birdwood, Gen. Sir W. R., his command of the Anzacs, 84;

defeats the Turks, May 18, 1916, 160; his plan of opera-tions against Sari Bair, 181; his scheme of evacuation, 226

Bismarck, his plan for a renewed war with France, 2; his Eastern policy, 10

Bosnia and Herzegovina, revolt of,

Bouvet, loss of, 58 Braithwaite, Gen. Sir W. P., 208 Bramley, Mr. Jennings, 249 Bridges, Major-Gen. W. T., his death in action, 158

Briggs, Lt.-Gen. C. J., his operations on the Struma, 244 Briscoe, Brig.-Gen. T., 246, 249

Carden, Vice-Admiral, his retirement, 57

Casson, Lt.-Col., his landing at Eski Hissarlik Point, 68, 92

Caucasus, physical characteristics of the, 30; Turkish plan of operations in the, 31

Chanuk Bair, assault upon, 194 Cobbe, Gen. Sir A. S., V.C., 261; his attack at Sanna-i-yat, 261; his turning movement at Bagdad, 276; his operations at Mushadiya, 283

Connaught Rangers, the 5th, their gallantry at Suvla, 221

Constantine, King of Greece, his accession, 15; his policy, 17, 46, 239; abdication of, 242

Costeker, Captain, his death in action, 80 Cowley, Lt.-Commander, R. N. V.R.,

his gallantry on Julnar, 150 Cox, Major-Gen. H. V., his seizure of the Gurkha Bluffs position, 163-164; his command at Sari Bair, 187; his operations at

Suvla, 220-222

Cox, Sir Percy, political officer with Basra forces, 34 Crisis of 1875, the, 3 Ctesiphon, battle of, 121-122

Dahra Bend, operations in the, 267

D'Amade, Gen., 89, 99 Dardanelles, character of the operations in the, 48; strength of the Allied Fleet engaged against the, 50, 52; first bombardment of defences of, 52; second bombardment,

Delamain, Gen. W. S., his landing at Saniyeh, 34

Derby, Earl of, declaration on the Crisis of 1875, 3

Deutsche Bank and the Bagdad railway scheme, 9; and reequipment of Turkish army, 24

Diala, passage of the, 274-6 Divan, the Turkish, decision to join Germany, 21 javid Bey, Turkish Finance

Djavid Bey, Turkish Finance Minister, 21 Djemal Pasha, his forces at Damascus, 28; his military

abilities, 43

Doughty-Wylie, Lt.-Col., takes command at V Beach, 81, 90 Dublins, their gallantry at Beach, 90

Duff, Gen. Sir Besuchamp, and the Bagdad project, 114, 116, 117

Egypt, conditions governing the invasion of, 42; effects British administration in, 47; fears of attack upon, 237

Egyptian National Party, 12 El Arish, Turkish advance from, 254; battle of, 301

El Kubab, battle of, 317 Enver Pasha, Turkish Minister, 13; his war policy, 20; his military measures, 26; his attack on the Anzacs,

Erzerum, Rus Es Sinn, batt

Fas, bombard

Feludja, occu Ferdinand, Ts Firman, Lt., of Julnar, Flotilla duel o Fourth Austra attack on E Frankfort, Tr Frazer, Lt.-C sance to Ku French Corps drawal of th Fry, General Mezera and

Gaafer Pasha Sollum, 24 Gebel Medw Gallipoli, meth 50; natura British losse tions on, 96 233

Gaza, fortifica British attac British att capture of, Gebel Medwa, George, King o tion of, 15 Gillespie, Lt.-

Borderers), end, 199 Gloucesters, Sari Bair, 1 Godley, Major.

184 Goeben and Bre duel with the Goltz, Gen. vo at Bagdad,

Gontaut-Biron at Berlin, 3

Erzerum, Russian capture of, 137 Es Sinn, battle at, 144-145

fficer with

is in the,

of the

52;

strength

engaged

fences of, dment, 53

is landing

tion on the

ne Bagdad

n army, 24

lecision to

Finance

forces at

s military

ol., tak

try at V

namp, and 114, 116,

erning the

effects of

on in, 47;

ance from,

Minister,

his

20;

170

237 ty, 12

174-6

and re-

first

1-122

W

Fas. bombardment of, 34
Feludia, occupation of, 286
Ferdinand, Tsar, his policy, 235
Firman, Lt., R.N., commander of Julnar, 150
Flotilla duel on the Tigris, 272
Fourth Australian Brigade, their attack on Hill 305, 194
Frankfort, Treaty of, 2
Frazer, Lt.-Col., his reconnaissance to Kurna, 38
French Corps in Gallipoli, withdrawal of the, 230
Fry, General, his capture of Mezera and Kurna, 39

Gaafer Pasha, his intrigues at Sollum, 246; defeat of, at Gebel Medwa, 248 Gallipoli, methods of attack upon, 50; natural features of, 61; British losses in landing operations on, 96; Turkish losses in, Gaza, fortifications of, 302; first British attack upon, 304; second British attack upon, 308; capture of, 314 Gebel Medwa, action at, 248 George, King of Greece, assassination of, 15 Gillespie, Lt.-Col. (South Wales Borderers), his gallantry and end, 199 Gloucesters, gallantry of the, at Sari Bair, 195 Godley, Major-Gen. Sir A. J., 171, 184 Goeben and Breslau, escape of, 20; duel with the, 85

Goltz, Gen. von der, in command

Gontaut-Biron, M. de, his mission

at Bagdad, 128

at Berlin, 3

Gordon, Lt.-Col. J. R., his success against the Arabs, 247, 249
Gorringe, Gen., his capture of Ahwaz, 107; his expedition to Nazariyeh, 111; his attack at Beit Aiessa, 149
Gouraud, Gen., appointed to command of French Corps in Gallipoli, 165
Greek army, condition of, in 1916, 238; demobilisation of the, 242
Gun-running to North Africa, 245

H

Hamilton, Gen. Sir Ian, his arrival at Tenedos, 60; his plan of Gallipoli landings, 61, 65; his recall, 223
Hammersley, Major-Gen., his operations at Suvla, 202-203, 209
Hanna, British attack at, 140-141
Hassin Izzet Pasha, Gen., 27
Hill 10, attack upon, at Suvla, 191
Hill, Major-Gen., his landing at Suvla, 191
Himma, action at, 288
Holbrook, Lt., R.N., V.C., 51
Hunter-Weston, Gen., his qualities as a tactician, 96; his plans of attack on Krithia, 169
Hussein Kamel, Sultan of Egypt, 41

I

Ignatieff, Count, protests at Constantinople, 4
India, military contributions of, towards the war, 33
Indian Army, reduction of the, 104; Medical Service, 112
Inniskilling Fusiliers, their advance to Krithia, 93; in battle of May 5, 100
Irresistible, battleship, rescue of the crew of, 58
Ismail Oglu Tepe, first British attack upon, 210-211; action at, Aug. 21, 1916, 214-216
Ismailia, battle of Feb. 3, 1915, 45
Istabulat, battle of, 291

Maude, Ger capture of

at Hanna,

his plans i

his strate

his work,

command

Maxwell, G

Mecca, Sheer

Melliss, Gene

Mendali, cal

Mesopotamia

at Barjisiy

tions on th

35; Britis

108; clim

gation syst

Salonica, 2

Messoudieh,

Milne, Gen. G

Moltke, Cour

policy, 9

Monastir, ope

Moorind, sur

Mudros, Briti

Imbros, 22

Munro, Gen.

Munsters, tl Beach, 79 Murad V, his

Murray, Ge

251-252;

Mushadiya, a

Mushaid Rid

Nahr Kalis co

Narrows, forti

Napier, Brig.

Nearer East,

in the, 47

Nebi Samwal

New Zealande

against the,

May 6, 1915

battle at Su

action, 80

naval attac

294-5

290

Gaza, 303-3

244

Jackson, Rear-Admiral T., 308
Jago, W., Herr von, and the German-Turkish alliance, 19
Jebel Hamrin ridge, battle of the, 287
Jerusalem, operations for the capture of, 321; British entry into, 322
Johnson, Brig.-Gen. F. E., his capture of, Rhododendron Spur, 187; his attack on Chanuk Bair, 197
Julnar, episode of, 150

Kaba Tepe, naval rendezvous off, 81; tactical value of, 87, 89 Kamakchalan, capture of, 244 Kari Arga, battle of, 32 Kemball, Gen., his communications with Townshend, 114, 117; leads attack on Es Sinn, 145 Keyes, Admiral Sir Roger, 209 Khadairi bend, capture of the defences in the, 263-4 Khalil Pasha, Turkish commander at siege of Kut, 138 Kilid Bahr, bombardment of, 56 King, Message of the, to garrison of Kut, 144 King's Own Borderers in battle of July 12, 1916, 178 Koe, Col., his landing at Gurkha Bluffs, 68 Kressenstein, Col. von, 43, 254 Krithia, battle before, May 5, 97; disposition of British forces before, 165; battle before, June 4-6, 1916, 166; key to the defences of, 172 Kum Kale, British landing at, 56 Kut, project for the occupation of, 112; Turkish bombardment of, 131; Turks try to storm, 132; Turkish blockade works at, 137; air raids upon, 143; Turkish fortifications at, 259; recapture of, 271 Kutunie, cavalry skirmish at, 127

Laj, Turkish defeat at, 120 Lake, Gen. Sir Percy, his opinion on Bagdad expedition, 114; takes up Mesopotamia command, 135; his message to garrison of Kut, 151; his work at Basra, 258 Lala Baba, capture of, 191 Lancashire Fusiliers, their conduct in action, May 5, 1915, 99
"Lancashire" landing, defences
of, 72; operations at, 76
Lawrence, Gen., his defeat of the Turks at Mahemdia, 255 Liman von Sandars, Gen., arrival at Constantinople, 11; commands Turkish attack on Anzac lines, 159
Lindley, Gen., his attack against the Anafarta ridge, 212 Lisle, Major-Gen. H. B. de, appointed to the command at Suvla, 214 Lone Pine works, attack upon the, 182 Lowland (52nd) Division, sent to Gallipoli, 171; leads attack of July 12, 1916, 172 Lucan, Gen. Lord, 247 Lukin, Gen., his victory at Agagia, 250

м

Macedonia, Greek revolt in, 242
Maclagan, Col. Sinclair, D.S.O.,
83
Mahemdia, battle at, 254
Mahmud Pasha, 21
Mahon, Gen. Sir B., his capture
of the Keretch Tepe Sirt, 204,
213; his work at Salonica, 239
Malone, Lt.-Col. W. G., 194, 195
Manchester Brigade, gallantry of
the, 168
Marshall, Gen. Sir W. R., 76, 101;
his tactics at Kut, 261-2, 266;
his advance to Zeur, 273;
his victory at Ramadie, 297
Matthews, Lt. A. B., R.E., 131

his opinion lition, 114; tamia comage to garrihis work at

f, 191
heir conduct
915, 99
ng, defences
at, 76
lefeat of the
1, 255
1, Gen., his
1tinople, 11;
h attack on

tack against , 212 H. B. de, command at

sion, sent to ds attack of

7 victory at

evolt in, 242 dair, D.S.O.,

254

his capture ope Sirt, 204, Salonica, 239 3., 194, 195 gallantry of

R., 76, 101; , 261-2, 266; Zeur, 273; adie, 297 , R.E., 131 Maude, Gen. Sir Stanley, his capture of the Turkish defences at Hanna, 148; his career, 256; his plans in Mesopotamia, 257; his strategy at Kut, 260; his work, 298; his death, 299 Maxwell, Gen. Sir John, his command in Egypt, 45, 249 Mecca, Sheerif of, 281
Melliss, General, defeats the Turks

Melliss, General, deteats the Turks at Barjisiyeh, 106; his operations on the road to Kut, 127
Mendali, calvary dash to, 297
Mesopotamia, physical features of, 35; British policy regarding, 108; climate of, 111; irrigation system of, 281
Messoudieh, incident of, 51

Milne, Gen. G. F., his command at Salonica, 242 Moltke, Count von, and Eastern policy, 9

Monastir, operations against, 243-244

Mooring, survivors of, 251
Mudros, British base at, 64
Munro, Gen. Sir C. C., journey to
Imbros, 224

Munsters, the, landing at V
Beach, 79
Murad V, his brief reign, 4
Murray Gen Sin Archibeld

Murray, Gen. Sir Archibald, his command in Egypt, 251-252; his operations at Gaza, 303-304

Mushadiya, action at, 282 Mushaid Ridge, capture of the, 294-5

N

Nahr Kalis canal, action on the, 290
Narrows, fortifications of the, 54; naval attack upon the, 57
Napier, Brig.-Gen., his death in action, 80
Nearer East, British war policy in the, 47
Nebi Samwal Ridge, operations against the, 319-320

against the, 319-320 New Zealanders, lead in attack of May 6, 1915, at Krithia, 100; in battle at Suvla, 222 Ninth Army Corps, landing at Suvla of the, 189 Nixon, Gen. Sir John, his arrival at Basra, 106; his demands, 107; his report on Bagdad scheme, 113; his resignation, 135 Nuri Bey, 246

0

Oceana, battleship, loss of, 58 Old No. 3 Post, capture of, 184

P

Palestine, physical features of, 301-2
Persia, Turkish policy in, 259
Peyton, Gen., his advance to Sollum, 250
Portsmouth (Naval) Battalion, 178
Prince George, H.M.S., torpedo attack upon, 232

Q

Quatia, British occupation of, 253 Quinn, Major, hero of Quinn's Post, 157; his death, 161 Quinn's Post, Turkish attack upon, 158

R

Radowitz, Herr von, his mission to St. Petersburg, 1875, 1
Ramadie, British operations against, 292 et seq.
Right Assaulting Column, operations of the, at Sari Bair, 186-7
River Clyde, collier, episode of, 78
Robeck, Vice-Admiral Sir J. de, 57
Roberts, Capt. (Royal Scots), his defence of Dueidar, 253

Royal Naval Division, their work at Anzac Cove. 87 Royal Scots, the 5th, in action of

May 5, 99 ussell, Brig-Gen. A. H., his operations in Sari Bair battle, 184; his attack on Hill 60 at Suvla, 221 Ruweika defences, taking of the,

313

Rynfeld, Captain Van, R.F.C., 250

Sahil, action at, Nov. 15, 1914, 36 Salonica, political importance of,

Samarra, British advance to, 291 Sanna-i-yat, British attacks at,

Sari Bair, features of, 154; effects of the attack upon, 192; crisis of the battle of, 193 Sarrail, Gen., his operations at

Salonica, 234

Scottish Borderers in Krithia

operations, the, 100 Second Mounted Division, their gallantry in action at Suvla, 219-220

Sedd-el-Bahr, capture of, 90 Serbian Army in 1916, the, 236 Serbo-Greek alliance, 15

Shatt-el-Arab, Turkish authority on the, 35

Shatt-el-Hai, operations on the, 262, 265 Sheik Saad, battle of, 140

Ships versus Forts, controversy on, 50

Shumran bend, operations against the, 270

Sinai, British forces in, 44; British advance across, 301

Smith-Carrington, Col., of Hampshires, his loss, 81 Smyth, Brig.-Gen. N. M.,

the Lone Pine capture of defences, 182

Sollum, Senussi of, 245; defeat of, 249; situation of, 246; reoccupation of, 250

Sophia, Princess, her marriage to King of Greece, 16 Soukomlinoff, Gen., 235 South African Infantry Brigade

in Egypt, the, 248 South Wales Borderers, their de-

fence of Damajelik Bair, 199; at Kut, 268

Staveley, Capt. C. M., R.N., 231 Stopford, Lt.-Gen. Sir F., his experience, 189; his dispositions at Suvla, 201, 206

Street, Staff-Capt., his gallantry at Sari Bair, 199

Streit, Dr., confidential adviser at Athens, 17

Struma Pass, surrender of the, 242 Strumnitza Valley, Bulgarian attack through the, 241

Suvla Bay area, features of the, 189; landing operations at, 190 Swadashi movement in Bengal, the, 26

Sweet, Lt. R. T., 131 Syria, strategical importance of,

Talaat Bey, Grand Vizier, 13 Tara, rescue of the crew of, 251 Tekke Burnu, capture of, 77 Tel Kuweilfe, battle at, 314 Theodosia, naval attack on, 20 Theotokis, M., Greek Minister at Berlin, 18 Thompson, Major (Royal Scots), Thursby, Rear-Admiral C. F., 81 Todd, Lt.-Col. T. J., 254 Townshend, Gen., his "regatta," 109; his capture of Amara, 110; his capture of Kut, 113; his advance on Bagdad, 119;

his retreat to Kut, 128; preparations for defence, 129-130; his Army Order of March 10, 1916, 146 Transport problem in Mesopotamia, the, 108, 136

Travers, Brig.-Gen., his capture of Damajelik Bair, 186

Trebizond, ma Corps from, Turkey, Const Turkish army reforms, 11 24; mobilis Turkish Empir Tuweil abu Jer Twenty-ninth leads attack

Umm al Tubal Unwin, Comn gallantry, 79

V Beach, defen Vardar, Frenc up the, 236 Venizelos, M., 1914, 17;

Wadi, action o 140 Wadi Shaifa, b Wadi um Mul the pools at, Walford, Capt. action, 90 Walker, Major of operation

5 ry Brigade

narriage to

Bair, 199;

R.N., 231 ir F., his dispositions

s gallantry

ial adviser

Bulgarian 241 ures of the, tions at, 190 in Bengal,

portance of,

zier, 13 w of, 251 o of, 77 at, 314 ock on, 20 Minister at

toyal Scots),

ral C. F., 81
254
s "regatta,"
of Amara,
of Kut, 113;
Bagdad, 119;
t, 128; prence, 129-130;
of March 10,

in Mesopo-6 his capture , 186 Trebizond, march of 1st Turkish Corps from, 32
Turkey, Constitution of, 5
Turkish army before 1876, 7; reforms, 11; strength of 1914, 24; mobilisation of, 27
Turkish Empire, races of the, 23
Tuweil abu Jerwal, capture of, 312
Twenty-ninth Division, the, 64; leads attack of April 28, 92

U

Umm al Tubal, battle at, 127-128 Unwin, Commander, R.N., his gallantry, 79

V

V Beach, defences of, 74
Vardar, French advance in 1916
up the, 236
Venizelos, M., his advice in Aug.,
1914, 17; his resignation, 18

W

Wadi, action on the, Jan. 9, 1916, 140
Wadi Shaifa, battle at, 247
Wadi um Muksheib, draining of the pools at, 253
Walford, Capt., R.A., his death in action, 90

Walker, Major-Gen., his scheme of operations at Anzac, 182 Wallace, Major-Gen. A., his operations in Egypt, 247 Water problem at Anzac and

Suvla, 178, 204-205 Wemyss, Rear-Admiral R. E., 68, 90, 227

Westminster, Major the Duke of, his exploit at Sollum, 251

Wiggin, Gen., his defeat of the Turks at Quatia, 253

William II, Kaiser, his visit to Constantinople, 8 Williams, Lt.-Col. his gallantry.

Williams, Lt.-Col. his gallantry,

Wozonoff, Gen., his forces in the Caucasus, 30; his movements, 31

X

X Beach, landing at, 75

Y

Y Beach, British withdrawal from, 71
Yalagaschamski Pass, Turkish march over the, 31
Young Turk movement, origin of, 12; revolt, 13

Z

Zouaves, capture of Turkish redoubts at Krithia by, 101
Zowernstern, Gen. von, his Army Order, 95

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN BY
RICHARD CLAY AND SONS, LIMITED,
BRUNSWICK STREET, STRAFFORD STREET, S.E. 1,
AND BUNGAY, SUFFOLK.